THE TUDOR
TRANSLATIONS
EDITED BY
W. E. HENLEY
XXVII
THE CHRONICLE OF FROISSART

TRANSLATED OUT OF FRENCH BY

SIR JOHN BOURCHIER
LORD BERNERS

ANNIS 1523–25

With an Introduction by
WILLIAM PATON KER

VOLUME I

LONDON
Published by DAVID NUTT
At the Sign of the Phoenix
LONG ACRE
1901
ALFREDO MILNER
AFRICANO
INTRODUCTION

The Chronicles of Froissart have received the fullest share of honour of all kinds, from their own day to the present, without any grudging voice being raised against their triumph, or any sensible diminution of their renown. Froissart is still the name that stands for chivalrous adventure in the minds of all readers of history; he is accepted without question as the author from whom the portraiture of that age is to be sought. The signs of his fame are everywhere: in the great libraries, in glorious manuscripts like the Harleian one, in the old printed copy that Lord Hunsdon used as a family Bible to record on its fly-leaf the births of his children, in a thousand testimonies from writers of all sorts, among which chiefly those of Gray and of Scott are memorable. Gray has called him 'the Herodotus of a barbarous age,' and recommended him to his correspondents. Scott, whose French visitors found that he talked the language of the old chronicles when he was at a loss for modern words in speaking to them, has put the praise of Froissart in the mouth of Claverhouse, and has expressed it in this indirect way, in Old Mortality, more vividly than in a review or an historical essay. Lord Berners was happily led in his undertaking to translate the Chronicles, though indeed one may believe that with his tastes it was hardly possible for him to do otherwise. This book of Lord Berners is one that put the English tongue in possession of something on which the whole Western world, for generations past, had relied for
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

information about itself and its manners. That Froissart should be turned into English before the last reflection of the age of Froissart had died away in the new era of the Sixteenth Century, that the courtly poet and historian of the times of Edward III. should be brought by translation into a closer partnership with Chaucer, was a thing to be desired more than most of the literary things provided under the reign of Henry VIII.; and it was fortunately accomplished by the man whose mission it might seem to have been to rescue as much as he could of the treasures of the Middle Ages before they were overwhelmed by new learning. He translated Froissart, he translated Huon of Bordeaux.

I

The Weakness of English Medieval Literature

Lord Berners is a follower of Chaucer and Malory as an interpreter in English of some of the courtly French literature which was for the most part so imperfectly understood, though so generously admired, in the island of Britain. What the English had been deprived of by the accidents of their history was the peculiar glory of the Middle Ages; they had no proper courtly romance, no chivalrous stories in their own language of the same temper as those of France. Many things are attainable in a literature like that of England between the Norman Conquest and the Revival of Learning; but what was not attainable before Chaucer, and very feebly remembered after him, was precisely that sort of grace which belongs to a Court, to a refined affected mode of sentiment, like that of the Romaunt of the Rose. Before Chaucer and Gower acquired it, the English had not the right of entry to that world; and in most of their persevering studies of the way to be gentle, they are little better than the ambitious gallants in Elizabethan comedy whose education has been neglected, the Gullios who learn manners by the book of compliments. Nothing in history is more desperate than the attempts of English writers under the
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Plantagenets to master the secret of French courtliness. Sometimes the failure is ludicrous, as in the 'rime doggerel' of the ordinary minstrels; sometimes there is success of another sort, as in the great alliterative poems, which are not courtly in the French manner, though they are magnificent. Meantime, the days go by and the fashion changes, and but for Chaucer and a few others there might have been nothing left in English with the character most distinctive of those times—the singular quality of beauty found in the medieval literature of France. Later, when the medieval forms were still nearer their vanishing, at the hour 'when Sir Thomas Malory all the lights grow dim,' the most notable work of French romance, in which all the graces, and not those of the Courts only, are included, the stories of Lancelot, Tristram, the Quest of the Grail and the Mort Artus, were rendered by Sir Thomas Malory in language that remains among the most wonderful things of the world. The reproach of England was taken away, though late and with difficulty. Nothing could give to England of the time of Henry III. such poems and stories as were written in other lands in those days; but under Edward IV. it was not yet impossible to recover from the past, out of 'the French book,' a version of the stories that had been too high for the landward-bred and simple-minded English authors to copy fairly, in the bygone times when 'the French book' was still new. What happened with Froissart was something of the same kind. There was not enough of the Fourteenth Century represented in English literature. Even after all that Chaucer had done, there was something left to do. Chaucer had gone beyond his age in many Chaucer respects; he is greater than Froissart; but in the same and measure that he surpasses him in imagination and in art he leaves room for the other man with his other mode of regarding and rendering the world. Froissart's mode is more peculiarly and thoroughly the property of the Fourteenth Century than Chaucer's, through his very want of those
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCE

affinities with Shakespeare and Cervantes that are found in
the variety of Chaucer’s workmanship and in his more liberal
genius. Just as England, so long impeded and depressed
by the historical accidents of its language, obtained from
Malory some of the riches of the Thirteenth Century, which
at the time when they were first produced it had no skill to
make its own, so from Lord Berners it received back Froissart,
not too late to make amends for the loss it had suffered
through the want of such a chronicler in the native tongue.
It was by an injustice of fortune that England had been
refused in the Middle Ages an historian writing English as
other tongues were written by the French, Italian, and Spanish
authors, by Villehardouin, Joinville, Froissart, by Villani,
by Ayala, by Ramon Muntaner, by the Provençal biographers
of the poets. What could be done to redress this grievance
was done by Lord Berners for history, as by Malory for
romance; and the Fourteenth Century, illustrious in the
English language by so many things of a different kind,
by Troilus and the Canterbury Tales, by the poems of Sir
Gawain and of Piers Plowman, to name no more, was now
presented with a new author, who belonged even more
closely and intimately to the reign of Edward iii. than
Chaucer himself: an author whose whole business, it might
be said, was to live in the Fourteenth Century and tell what
he saw there.

Lord Berners is not among the greatest of translators—
his rank is nearer Caxton than Malory—but his version of
Froissart is a true version: it is really Froissart in English,
and in English that sounds like Froissart. As Malory gives
in English (with much of his own besides) the tone of
the old French language of the Queste del St. Graal, so the
sentences of Lord Berners’ translation are of the Fourteenth
Century and not of the Sixteenth. He tried occasionally
to write a style of his own, and was proud of it, no doubt:
it appears in his prefaces, a style rhetorical and cultivated.

xii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

He also translated, besides these Chronicles and the stories of Sir Huon and Arthur of Little Britain, two modern works, one of which, the Golden Book of Marcus Aurelius, The Spanish written in Spanish by Guevara, has a reputation as the Euphuists parent of Euphues, while the other, also Spanish, of an earlier generation, the Prison of Love, by Diego de San Pedro, has the same Euphuistic syntax, and probably did a great deal to establish the new fashion of prose that was taken up long afterwards by Lyly and his contemporaries. Two opposite kinds of prose are represented in the works translated by Lord Berners. On the one hand are the writers who write because they have something to say, whether it be the story of the wars of England, France, Scotland, and Spain, or the wanderings of Sir Huon in Fairyland. On the other are the Spanish Euphuists explaining, to a world that runs its clauses into one another, endlessly, the counter doctrine of precise constructions and elegant phrases. Rhetoric flourished under the Tudors, along with religious controversy, in the silence of the poets; it put many honest people out of conceit with their old-fashioned romances. Lord Berners does not allow it to vitiate his Froissart. His Euphuist translations came later than his Froissart for one thing, and he does not seem to have had any particular affection for that variety of prose, though his preface to Froissart shows that other kinds of rhetorical display had an occasional attraction for him. Such things are kept out of his translation of the history: the body of his Froissart bears hardly a trace of the rhetoric that illuminates the Prologue. The good taste of Lord Berners, which is not conspicuous in his few original paragraphs, is shown in his devotion to his author, and in his refusal to let the original style be misrepresented. His very want of literary ambition saves him: he trusts in the matter of the story, and the right words find themselves translating the right words of the French. It is not always the case
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

that a writer is saved by his subject: there are many historians, from Ammianus Marcellinus to Saxo Grammaticus, who have told good stories in extravagant words, with a dictionary broken loose and rampant over their pages. But it happens sometimes that the matter prescribes the form, and this was the case with Lord Berners, as it may have been with Froissart himself. The history has no grammar or forms of sentence that in any way interrupt the narrative. It is in the old style—the style of the French mediæval historian. The Fourteenth Century is not defrauded in this translation by the imposition of any Tudor order of rhetoric on the clear outlines of the structure. It is with Lord Berners as with King James’s translators of the Bible: in the Preface they indulge themselves, but their main work is different and contains nothing the least resembling ‘that bright occidental star’ which shines in the Dedication to the King.

II

Lord Berners  Sir John Bourchier;¹ second Lord Berners, was born about 1467, and succeeded his grandfather, the first Baron, in 1474. ‘A martial man, well seen in all military discipline,’ is the phrase in which Fuller describes him among the Worthies of Hertfordshire; and the record of his life, which is not full, is that of a loyal servant of the king.

Soldier

He took part in the discomfiture of the Cornish rebels at Blackheath in 1496 and in other warfare later, as at the capture of Terouenne in 1513. He went in an embassy to Spain in 1518, and suffered from want of money through the winter that followed; he borrowed afterwards from King Henry VIII., and left the king his creditor at the end of his

Ambassador

¹ The life of Lord Berners has been written by Mr. Sidney Lee in his Introduction to the Boke of Duke Huan of Burdeux (Early English Text Society, 1882-1887) and in the Dictionary of National Biography, and by Mr. G. C. Macaulay in his Introduction to Berners' Froissart in the Globe Edition.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

life. His career is a good deal like that of Sir Thomas Wyatt, with less adventure in it, and nothing comparable to Wyatt's heroic encounter with the Emperor Charles, but showing the same devotion to the service in which he was engaged.

In December 1520 Lord Berners was made deputy of Calais, and held the office till his death in March 1533. It Governor was at Calais, probably, that all his writing was done, and his writing for those years must have been a chief part of his occupation. The public interest was not neglected by him, but one may judge from the bulk of his writings—the Chronicles of Froissart, Huon of Bordeaux, Arthur of Little Britain—how large an amount of time must have been spent at the desk in matters not belonging to the office of governor. The Chronicles of Froissart was published in Froissart 1523 and 1525—two volumes, 'imprinted at London in Fletestrete by Richard Pynson, printer to the kinges moost noble grace.' From this work Lord Berners went on to his translation of romances. It is not known whether or not the Boke of Duke Huon of Burdeux was published in his lifetime—that is, before March of 1533. The earliest extant copy of Huon of Burdeux, according to Mr. Lee's judgment in his edition of the romance, was printed about 1584, probably by Wynkyn de Worde. The hystory of the moost noble and valyaunt knyght Arthur of lytell brytayne, translated out of frenshe in to englishe by the noble Johan Bourghcher knyght lorde Barners was printed by Robert Redborne, without date. Whatever the order in which these works were translated, they probably came after Froissart and before the smaller books taken (indirectly) from the Spanish: the Castell of Love and San Pedro the Golden Boke of Marcus Aurelius Emperor and eloquent oratour. The colophon of the latter gives its date of composition; in the uncertainty of Lord Berners' literary history the dates of Froissart and of the Golden Book are
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION fairly well determined:—"Thus endeth the volume of Marke
Aurelie emperour, otherwise called the golden boke, translated out of Frenche into englyshe by John Bourchier
knyghte lorde Barners, deputie generall of the kynes
toune of Caleis and marches of the same, at the instant
desire of his neewe syr Francis Bryan knyghte, ended
at Caleys the tenth day of Marche in the yere of the
Reygne of our souerayn lorde kynge HENRY the vii.
the XXIII." So in the Edition of 1586 and most others;
the First Edition of 1584 is said to read xxiii. The
twenty-third year of King Henry is 1582, the twenty-
fourth is 1583; and according to this the Golden Book was
finished by Lord Barners six days before his death, for he
died on the 16th of March in 1583, and the book was
finished on the 10th.

It is probably vain to suppose that the transition from
romance to courtly rhetoric, shown in the selection of
Guevara after Huon of Bordeaux, is significant of any
progress or change of taste in the translator. Lord Barners,
with all his literary skill, is careless about distinctions of
kinds: he is not critical nor scrupulous. His choice of the
Golden Book does not mean that he was tired of history or
romance; it does not mean that he had been convinced of
the laxity of old-fashioned syntax, and was bent on living
cleanly according to the rules of the point-device gram-
marians. It means only that the Golden Book was in favour,
as Huon had been and continued to be, and that Lord
Barners, with his love of stories undiminished, was yet
willing to take up another kind of book in which gentle-
folk found pleasure and entertainment. That Lord Barners
is not to be trusted for critical appreciation is shown in his
attention to Arthur of Little Britain. For the story of
Huon of Bordeaux, at least for the earlier part, there is
nearly as much to be said as for the adventures of the Morte
D’Arthur itself, considered as a specimen of authentic
xvi
SYR JOHN FROISSART

romance, such as was current in the best ages, and was fitted to be read by the author of the Faery Queene. But Arthur of Little Britain is a different story, not among the best, but one of the mechanical rearrangements of the common matter that repeated the old stock incidents and sentiments wearily, a book that one would save, indeed, from the judgment of the Curate and the Barber, but more for the honour of its ancestry and for the noble language, than for any merit in the author’s imagination. The translation may be reckoned among the fine achievements of Lord Berners: its style is that of his Froissart, and is enough to make one repent of having spoken harshly about the story of the Petit Artus de Bretaigne. The preface of the translator reveals the mind of Lord Berners more clearly than anything else in the scanty sum of his personal utterances. He is not an acute, discreet rhetorician: he is immersed in the matter of old chronicles so that he cannot tell the waking from the dreaming vision; so much absorbed in the charm of narrative that any narrative has power to draw him. He plunges into the story of Arthur of Little Britain before he knows where he is or what it is about; only when he has gone some way there comes a shock of misgiving, and he repents that he has engaged upon ‘a fayned mater wherin semeth to be so many unpossybylytees.’ However, he is in it and may as well go on; urcus exit; if it will not do for a sober chronicle, it is a story, at any rate; and there are others, much respected, in which there are equally wonderful things. But the whole Preface must be quoted, and it hardly needs a commentary to explain what was in the mind of Lord Berners when he wrote it; his good faith, his perfectly sincere delight in narrative, his secondary regard, by an afterthought, for the author’s ‘vertuous entent;’ his admiration, without the heat of a competitor, for proficiency in ‘fresh ornate polished English’ and ‘the facundious art of rhetoric.’
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

His Prologue to the Petit Artus

Here folowmeth the Translatour's Prologue: For as moche as it is delectable to all humayne nature to rede and to here these auncient noble hystoires of the chyvalrous feates and marciall prowesses of the victorous knyghtes of ymes paste, whose triumphant dedes, yf wrytynge were not, sholde he had clene oute of remembrancce; and also bycause that ydlenesse is reputed to be the moder of al vices; wherfore somewhat in eschewynge therof, and in the waye of lowi erudycyon and learnyngge, I John Bourghschere knyghte lorde Berners have enterprysed to translate out of Frenshe in to our maternall tonge a noble hystoire, makynge meneyon of the famous dedes of the ryght valyaunt knyght Arthur sonne and heyre to the noble duke of Brytayne, and of the fayre lady Florence, daughter and heyre to the myghty Emendus, kynge of the noble realme of Soroloy, and of the grete trouble that they endured, or they attayned to the perfourmance of theyr vertuous amorous desyers; for fyrste they overcame many harde and straungue adventures, the whiche as to our humayne reason sholde seme to be incredible. Wherfore after that I had begon this sayd processe I had determined to have left and gyven up my laboure, for I thoughte it sholde have ben reputed but a folye in me to translate be seming suche a fayned mater, wherin semeth to be so many unposseybylytes. How be it than I called agayne to my remembrancce that I had redde and seen many a sondrye volume of dyverse noble hystoires wherin were contained the redoubted dedes of the auncyent invynsable conquerours and of other ryght famous knyghtes who acheived many a straungue and wonderfull adventure, the whych by playne letter as to our understandynge sholde seme in a maner to be supernaturall: wherfore I thought that this present treatysse myght as well be reputed for trouth as some of those, and also I doubted not but that the first auctour of this boke devyseyd it not with out some maner of truoth or vertuous entent. The whych consideracyons, and other, gave me agayne audacyte to contynue forth my fyrste purpose tyll I had fynysshed this sayd boke, not presumyngge that I have reduced it in to fresshe ornate polysshed xviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Englysshe, for I know myself insufficient in the faccondous arte of rethoryke, nor also I am but a lerner of the language of Frensshe. How be it, I truste my symple reason hath ledde to the understandynge of the true sentence of the mater, accoridinge to the whiche I have folowed as nere as I coude, desyrynge all the reders and herers thereof to take this my rude translacon in gre, and yf any faute be, to laye it to myn unconnynge and derke ignoraunce, and to mynysshe, addde or augment as they shall fynde cause requysyte. And in theyr so doyne I shall praye to God that after this vayne and transytorly lyfe he may brynge them unto the perdurable joye of heven. Amen.

‘Thus endeth the Translatour’s Prologue.’

Lord Berners is a fortunate writer, whatever mistakes he Berners his may have made about Arthur of Little Britain. He was not turned aside by vanities: ‘the facundious art of rhetoric’ did not corrupt him beyond a few innocent traces of ornamental language in his preliminary discourses. It was not his genius to do ‘any eclipsing thing,’ like Euphuus, while he had the instinct for sound language in continuous narration, of the kind that does not glare or flash, and may easily escape notice for its goodness till some occasion comes to test it. How well the ordinary sentences of Berners will come through examination has been shown by Sir Henry Craik in his comparison of Berners’ Froissart with Johnes’s. The Berners and excellence of Lord Berners is nothing dazzling or astound- Johnes ing; it comes from a secure command of the right words, in plenty sufficient for all his purposes, with an easy syntax, easily corresponding to his French originals, and turning them into English without any grammatical heaviness or sign of labour. As compared to Malory there is a want Berners and of volume and variety in Lord Berners, due no doubt in Malory part to the character of the text he was translating; for Froissart, with all his glory, is not like Malory’s ‘French

1 English Prose Selections, i. 123 sq.
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

book' in opportunities for splendid diction, and Huon's ally, Oberon, is too substantial and sensible a personage for the enchanted twilight of the Morte D'Arthur. But, failing the greatest qualities of Malory's prose, there is nothing wanting to Lord Berners in the kind of literature he has chosen. He comes at the end of the Middle Ages in a reign not distinguished by much good writing, when poetry in England is nearly dead, and when prose is threatened by a recurrence of the old ornamental pedantries of 'facondyous rethoryke,' with the alternative of a rather prim correctness under the rule of classical scholars. His success consists in his steady following of the old fashion, the mediæval fashion, of composition, with a regard for just such excellences of form as are convenient in such a mode of writing. Lord Berners used the mediæval syntax so as to give few openings for censure, even from exacting critics; and before the confused Elizabethan time, when prose seemed capable of most things except self-command, he showed how clearness, simplicity, an even and continuous discourse, might be obtained without departing ostensibly from the syntax of the Fourteenth Century. Any sentences from his Froissart will exhibit this plain, straightforward style in its simplicity and security:—

'Thus at the beginnynge the Frenchmen and they of Aragon fought valiantly, so that the good knightes of Englande endured moche payne. That day Sir Johan Chandos was a good knight, and dyde under his baner many a noble feat of armes; he adventured himselfe so farre that he was closed in amonge his enemies, and so sore overpressed that he was felled downe to the erthe. And on him there felle a great and a bigge man of Castell, called Martyne Ferrant, who was gretyly renomed of hardynesse amonge the Spanyrdes, and he dyde his entent to have slayne Sir Johan Chandos, who lay under him in great danger. Than Sir Johan Chandos remembred of a knyfe that he had in his bosome, and drewe it out, and strake this Martyne

xx
SYR JOHN FROISSART

so in the backe and in the sydes that he wounded him to dethe as he lay on him. Than Sir Johan Chandos tourned hym over, and rose quickely on his fete; and his men were there aboute hym, who had with moche payne broken the prease to come to hym, wher as they saw him felled.'

There is nothing remarkable about this sort of English except that it cannot be bettered. There is no particular formula for it: only, it shows a care for rhythm such as was not always found along with the care for classical periods in the writers of that time. The grammar of Lord Berners is one that pays attention to the right spacing of phrases according to their weighty syllables: when this is assured, there is less need for the grammatical complications of clauses in their right order and degree; the easy constructions of the old style leave it free to the author to tune his syllables to his own mind. The grammatical pattern of the classical schools has little attraction for him when he is taken up with the other device, of free enunciation with no broken, confused, or jarring sounds to break the tenor of it.

There is nothing in Lord Berners like the exorbitant fondness for novel and emphatic words, splendid or swaggering, such as are noted in some of the Elizabethan translators. He has a rich and full vocabulary, but it does not blaze out His in single gems. It corresponds to the vocabulary of Froissart's, the beauty of which, as of all good French, and not least in the French medieval prose, lies in the harmony between the single words and the syntactic idiom. The prose is not a new invention; it is natural, in the sense that it is founded upon the usages of conversation, quick and expressive, well pro- and vided with plenty of words for interesting things, unimpeached by drawing rhetoric, and free from any anxiety or curiosity about rules of good taste, because it had good taste to begin with, and did not need to think about it. The speech of Aymerigot Marcel, for instance, which may be pondered word for word and phrase for phrase as an infallible piece of Sampled...
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

good syntax and good diction, is expressed altogether in common and well-established forms, from the beginning, 'Ha! a! du traiteur vieillart, dist Aymerigot,' to the end, 'comment qu’il prende ne adviegne du nouvel.' This is rendered not quite fully by Lord Berners, but in the right manner of the original, with the same security and absence of constraint:

'Than tydinges came to Aymergot Marcell, where he was purchaseyng of frendes to have reysed the siege before the fortresse of Vandoys, that it was gyven up. Whan he herde therof he demaunded howe it fortuned: it was shewed hym howe it was by reason of a skrymyssh, and by the issuying out of his uncle Guyot du Sall unadvisedly. Ah, that olde traytour, quod Aymergot; by saynte Marcell, if I had hym here nowe, I shulde sle hym with myne owne handes; he hath dishonoured me and all my companions. At my departynge I straulyly enjoyed hym that for no maner of assaute or skrymyssh made by the Frenchmen he shulde in no wyse open the barryers, and he hath done the contrary: this domage is nat to be recovered, nor I wote nat whether to go. They of Caluset and they of Donsac wyll kepe the peace, and my companions be spredde abrode lyke men dyscomfyted; they dare never assemble agayne togyther; and though I had them togyther, yet I wote nat whyder to bring them. Thus, all thynge consydred, I am in a harde parte, for I have gretly displeased the French kyng, the duke of Berrey, and the lordes of Auvergne, and all the people of the country, for I have made them warre the peace duryng: I had trusted to have won, but I am nowe in a great adventure to lese, nor I wotte nat to whom to resorte to axe countysyle. I wolde nowe that I and my goodes with my wyfe were in Englande; there I shulde be in surety; but howe shulde I get thyder and cary all my stufe with me? I shulde be robbed twenty tymes or I coulde gette to the see, for all the passages in Poictou, in Rochell, in Fraunce, in Normandy and in Pycardy are straulytely kept; it wyll be harde to scape fro takynge: and if I be taken, I shal be sente to the Frenche kyng, and so I

xxii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

shall be loste and all myne. I thinke the surest way for me were to drawe to Burdeaulx, and lytell and lytell to get my good thyder, and to abyde there tyll the warre renewe agayne, for I have good hoope that after this treuce warre shall be open agayne bytwene Englane and Frawnce. Thus Aymergot Marcell debated the matter in hymselfe; he was hevy and sorowfull, and wyse nat what waye to take, outhere to recover some forteesse in Auvergne, or els to go to Burdeaux, and to sende for his wife thider, and for his goodes lytell and lytell secretely. If he hadde done so, he had taken the surest waye; but he dyde contrary, and therby lost all, lyfe and godes. Thus fortune payeth the people whan she hath sette them on the highest parte of her whole, for sodainly she reverseth them to the lowest parte, ensample by this Aymergotte. It was sayde he was well worth a hundred thousande frankes, and all was lost on a daye; wherfore I may well saye that fortune hath played her pagiaunt with hym, as she hath done with many mo, and shall do.’

The French is better and more lively, breaking out, for instance, in exclamations after the reference to the truce (‘aprê(s ces trièves, mal fuissent elles prises ne venues, entre France et Angleterre’); but the English, though less mercurial, is the language of one who is free-born, and who has not had to pay the price of the weary rhetorical schools for his command of phrases.

There are blemishes, of course, in Lord Berners’ Froissart. There are mistranslations and confusions. But these hardly affect the reputation of the book as a history well written in his defects’ and pleasant to read. ‘It might have been better, if the author had taken more pains’—this respectable formula comes to mind rather too often in the presence of Lord Berners’ easy-going translations, which sometimes recall the humours of the Ayenbite of Inuys, ‘mills-to-the-wind’ and suchlike. But the mistakes are not enough to spoil the story, any more than the Psalms have been spoilt in Coverdale’s version, and others, by similar failures.

xxiii
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

A Misfortune

It is something against the vogue of Lord Berners—a small thing—that he lived in a time when English spelling had contrived to make the language look other than beautiful. It is unfortunate that his clear phrases should be muffled in the misplaced and useless spellings that seem exactly the right dress for the shambling verse of the poets of that day. 'Barkese' and 'marchesse' (for 'barks' and 'marches'), 'physyceyon,' 'pertaynyng,' 'cherysshynge,' 'concludedde,' and so forth, are well enough for decrepit Chaucerian allegories, and for such moral interludes as make desolate the Tudor reigns for more than half the century; but we could have wished Lord Berners a habit better fitted for his mode of narrative, something less cumbrous, like the spelling of Chaucer or of Dunbar. Unhappily to this grievance, if such it be, Lord Berners has added considerably—partly through the fault of his French text, partly through the original and acquired ineptitude of the printer, but with more than can be fairly put down to their discredit—by his unqualified neglect of the historical names. It is beyond all language of complaint. The man who has been led into the intricate fallacies of the names in Berners' *Froissart* is only too glad to escape in silence.

III

Berners and Euphuism

The *Castell of Love* and the *Golden Boke of Marcus Aurelius* are different in kind from the other translations of Lord Berners, as well as much less imposing in size. What they want in bulk they make up in pretensions of another sort: it is in these that Lord Berners shows himself a Euphuist, and the *Golden Boke* especially has had ascribed to it by some critics the honour of having first introduced the rhetorical antithetic manner into English. It is impossible to say, in our ignorance about the shadowy character of Lord Berners, what motives led him to these books, or whether he really saw much good in their contrasted kinds
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of vanity. The Castell of Love is an allegory of the school of the Romaunt of the Rose; the Golden Boke, so called by its author, is a pompous exercise in ornamental sentences by a disciple of the new learning. There is no need to think of the Chronicles of Froissart in order to show up the tenuity of the one and the inanity of the other; the history of Arthur of Little Britain by comparison to either of them looks almost as substantial and as full of vitality as Don Quixote. Of course, as Froissart himself has proved, and Chaucer also, it is possible for a man to love at one and the same time the history of real characters and the phantoms of allegory; but in the careless versions of the Carcel de Amor and the Libro Aureo there is no sign of any strong affection for either work. We may be sure that Lord Berners Why was fond of stories; it is not proved that he had a liking Berners either for the old courtly manner of allegory or for the new Euphuised pedantry of moralising. In default of other theories about his literary taste, we may accept the statement of these two books as exactly true: they were done to order, 'at the instance of the Lady Elizabeth Carew,' who asked for the Castell of Love, and 'at the instant desire of his nephew Sir Francis Brian, knight,' who admired the Libro Aureo. Both books were much in favour, and Lord Berners, whatever may be said against his Euphuistic clients, has the advantage, if that be anything, of having kept his English readers well abreast of contemporary literature in translating them. They were what every one in Italy, Spain, and France was reading, or wishing to read, or ashamed to be supposed not to have read. Most probably he cared very little for them himself.

The two rhetorical books are very much unlike one another except in the common taste for a particular kind of Love of sentence. It is quite possible to fall into the idle mood for which the simple allegory of the Carcel de Amor seems occupation enough, and with nothing strained or absurd in its gentle, honourable sentiments. For the sake of the d
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION Garden of the Rose, and Chaucer’s Anelida, and ‘the floure of hem that maken in France,’ and all the great company of the chivalrous poets, it may be granted to this late author of the Castell of Love to show the way back over seldom-trodden ground into the old plesances, the dreamy air, the vanishing courts and temples of the Hollow Land. ‘Many are the Mighty Ones,’ and there is still some power in those shadows of old poetry, though few steps wander now into the region of their enchantment. Perhaps now and then a careless bibliographer, when he thinks least of danger, may find himself caught by the spell.

There is no such danger and no such charm in the Golden Boke, however much it may have prided itself, and called itself the Dial of Princes, and made the Emperor Marcus Aurelius help in the furtherance of its pretentious conceit. The Golden Book so styled is really a Brazen Calf, of the pattern invented specially for the Renaissance and its idolaters. The author, Antonio Guevara, Bishop of Guadix and of Mondoñedo, had a taste for sounding moral sentences, and for criticism of life in the manner of Polonius. He included also in his theory the principles of Iago’s moral essay on the Characters of Women, which are not those of the Castell of Love. Nothing could be more unlike the chivalry of Diego de San Pedro than the brisk remarks about the inferiority of women in the other Euphuist; both authors seem to have been equally popular, though the points of view are hardly reconcilable, except through the rhetorical taste that the two writers have in common. The casuistry of the amoret Saint Pedro is expressed in the same manner of writing as ‘the answere of M. the emperor whan Faustyne his wife demaunded the key of his study,’ a lecture to inquisitive females which is not now so well known as it deserves to be.

That the Spanish authors were the first to give currency to the antithetic way of phrasing adopted by Euphues seems
Syr John Froissart

to be proved, and in the history of this kind of prose Diego de San Pedro comes before Guevara. It was of course a very old device, as Plato bears witness; but it was in Spain The Humour at the end of the Fifteenth Century that it was established as the proper manner of good composition, and the Carcel de Amor was one of the books that taught it. A crucial instance to show this may be found in the dedications of different versions of the book. It was translated from Spanish into Italian, from Italian into French, from French

1 The speech of Agathon in the Symposium is pure Euphues, and is reported by Plato with the same motive and the same seat as Shakespeare had in his rhetorical parodies in Love's Labour's Lost and elsewhere:—οὕτω δὲ ἀπειλήσας μὴν κενὸν, ἀπειλήσῃς δὲ πλῆρον, τὰ τούδε ἐνώδους μετ' ἀλλήλων πάνω τετελέσθαι ξύλην, ἐν ἵππαιν, ἐν χοροῖν, ἐν θυελαὶς γενόμενοι ἡμῶν πράθητα μὲν πορίζον, ἁγράντητα δ' ἐδοξίζων, φαλάδωρος φιλικελαίος, ἀδώρος θυμωρελαίος, etc., Symp. 197 D. Earlier in the same dialogue the fashionable mode is touched upon, 'for in this way the learned instruct me to keep the balance of syllables':—Πωμαλλοῦ δὲ πανομένου, διδάσκων γέρον μέτα λέγων σοφοί οὐ σοφοί, 185 C.

2 Composed by Diego de San Pedro, at the request of Diego Hernandes, master of the pages (alcaide de los dam溉e) and of other gentlemen of the Court. Printed by 'Fadrique aleman de Basilea' (Frederick of Basiela) at Burgos in 1496. There are difficulties about the dates of the early editions. A Catalan version, Barcelona, Johan Rosenbach, is dated 1495. Diego de San Pedro repented of his very innocent vanity, and wrote a palinode confessing the blindness and errors of the Carcel de Amor, reprinted from the Cancionero General, Valencia, 1511, by Böl de Faber, Floresta de Rimas Antiguas Castellanras, i. p. 152. The Carcel de Amor has alternative conclusions, the second written by Nicolas Nufiez: this addition is found in Berners' Castell of Love. Thus England comes into some slight relation with the poets of the court of Castle, who might have given better entertainment than is provided in their treatises and allegories, if Lord Berners had gone to the Cancionero instead of to their prose. Nicolas Nufiez has a beautiful poem to Our Lady, written in the measure which was not accepted in England till long after:

O Virgen que a Dios pariste
y nos diste
a todos tan gran victoria,
torneame alegre de triste
pues podiste
tornar nuestra pena en gloria.

Floresta, i. p. 7.

xxvii
INTRODUCTION

into English. The dedications are different in the different languages, but one Euphuistic sentence is common to them all, and in the Italian and the French especially it stands out in contrast with what may be supposed the natural style, or rather the favourite affectations, of the translators:—

San Pedro

‘Como quiera que primero que me determinasse estuve en grandes dubdas; vista vuestra discrecione temia, mirada vuestra virtud osava; en lo uno hallava el miedo, y en lo otro buscava la seguridad; y en fin escogí lo mas dañoso para mi verguenza, y lo mas provechoso para lo que devia.’

_Carcel de Amor_, 1496.

Lazio de' Manfredi

‘E ben che io stessi in gran dubio prima ch’io me determinassi, perché vedendo la sublimità e intelligenzia sua io temevo, mirando la prudencia e virtute io havevo ardire; in l’una trovavo il timore, ne l’altra cercavo la sicurezza; in fine elessi il più dannoso per la mia vergogna e ’l più utile per il mio debito.’

_Carcere d’Amore del magnifico Meser Lazio de’ Manfredi._ Venice, 1514.

Berthault de la Grise

‘Pour laquelle chose premier que en ce labeur cultiver me determinasse en grande dubiosité et diversité d’ymaginations me trouvay. Car voyant la sublimité et intelligence de ton esperit ie craignoyez, et premeditant la prudence et vertu m’enhardissez et pronoie vigueur tres grande. En l’ung trouvoyez la timeur et en l’autre seureté et hardyesse. En fin ie esleuz le plus dommageable pour ma vergogne et le plus utile pour mon devoir.’


Berners

‘For or I first entred into this rude laboure, I was brought into great doubftulnes, and founde my self in dyvers ymaginations. For seyng the quycke intelligence of your spirite I feared, and againe the remembraunce of your vertue and prudence gave me audacite. In the one I founde feare, and in the other suertie and hardynes. Fynally, I did chose the moste unvyayable for myne owne shame and most utylitie. . . .’

xxviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

After this in Lord Berners’ text there is some confusion, due either to his habit of abridging, which sometimes interferes with the sense in Froissart, or to a printer’s error. It does not matter much. The striking thing is that this passage of Euphuism is the only thing directly translated from the Spanish prologue in the Italian, and therefore, as Differences the French translator had not the Spanish to work from, the only sentence of San Pedro’s represented in the French dedication; and it is quite different in rhetorical form from the Italian and the French contexts, which again are different from one another. Lelio de’ Manfredi of Ferrara uses another kind of ornament altogether, the language of Don Adriano or Sir Piercy Shafton, and not of the authentic Euphues: ‘flattery and fustian,’ quite unlike the neat syntactical play of the Spaniard. The Italian author, when left to himself, writes as follows:—

Che havendo con non pocha diligentia e faticha ridutto Italian
questo picciol volume da lo externo idioma in nostra vernacula lingua a V. Excellentia (vivo lume de la virtute; sola beltà de l’unica bellezza; verità aperta del vero; equale bilancia de la iustitia; splendida grandezza de la liberalitade; ferma columna de la clementia; stabile fortezza del casto pensiero; lucida gemma in oro nitido; e pretioso; amenissimo fonte in florido giardino; micante luce nelle tenebre; guida, governo, albergo e habitaculo de le nove muse) l’ho dedicato; havendo forsi habiuto mancho rispetto a la grossezza del mio ingiugno e la ineptie de la lingua, che a la altezza sua.’ The French translator, René Berthault de la Grise, does not borrow or imitate this enthusiasm. His style admits some of the vocabulary of Pantagruel’s Limousin; no more than the Italian’s is it French to be called properly Euphuistic, though it is sometimes under the influence of the balanced phrase:—‘Et voyant que d’assez belles matieres traictoit mesmes pour ieneus d’ames l’entreprins mettre et translater dudit ytalien en

xxix
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRO. 'nostre vernacule et familiere langue francoise' . . . 'Et
DUCTION 'ie prie pour le surplus le plasmateur de la cause premiere
'longuement te conserver heureuse et prospere.' The
Spanish sentence is marked at once as something of a
different school.

It is very doubtful how far Lord Berners went himself in
approval of the antithetic pattern. His dedication of the
Castell of Love, which is mainly from the French, is more
Euphuistic than the French, chiefly through the omission
of a long sentence, where the French translator having
facts to state broke down into mere ordinary hazardous
grammar:—'Ce petit livret iadis converte de langue castil-
LANNE ET ESPAIGNOLLE EN TUSQUAN FLORENTIN PAR UNG FERRAROYS
'MON BON ET SINGULIER AMY, DES MAINS DUQUEL EN CE PREMIER
'voyage que le treschrestien roy Francois premier de ce
'nom mon souverain seigneur a fait en Lombardie pour la
'conqueste de son estat ultramontain ay recouvert.' But it
remains uncertain whether or not Lord Berners ever thought
much about this grammatical business: at any rate he is
utterly destitute of the literary character belonging properly
to Euphuists, as he never thinks it worth while to utter
anything of his own, and does not ask for admiration.

There can be no question of the influence of the Golden
Boke and the Castell of Love as examples of English prose.
'The fysher goth not to take dyvers fyshes of the river
'with one baite, nor the mariner with one nette entreth
'into the see. I promise you the depenesse of good wylles
'ought to be wonne with the depenesse of the harte, some
'with gyftes, some with wordes, some with promises, and
'some with favours.' So Lord Berners translates Guevara,
and so the tune was given out for a large company of
authors who were more anxious to profit by it than ever Lord
Berners himself had been. The Carcel de Amor, with its
different story, gave the same example of style:—'Dexar el
'camino que llevava parecia me desvario; no fazer el ruego
xxx
SYR JOHN FROISSART

d' de aquel que alli padescia figurava se me inhumanidad; en seguílle havia peligro, y en dexalle flaqueza,' etc.

But that is not really the taste of Lord Berners. He thinks, indeed, that prefaces and dedications should be Euphuist ornamental; but even here, as the dedications of Froissart and the romance of Arthur prove, when he was outside the danger of the Castell of Love he chose a different kind of language. In these prologues he makes experiments in decoration, but they are not Euphuistic in the strict sense of the term: that is, they do not consist in the antithetic arrangement of phrases as that was practised by San Pedro and Guevara. The device that falls in most completely with his taste is that of amplification: especially in the Prologue to Froissart, where his use of triple synonyms has Amplification often been remarked—'eschewe, avoyde, and utterly fyle'; 'trouble, sorowe, and great adversyte'; 'right profitable, necessarie, and behovefull for the humayne lyfe.' The usage was nothing new, and it is not to be put down to the influence of the revival of learning: it was a piece of rhetoric common in the Middle Ages. The Anglo-Saxon translation of Bede puts regularly two synonyms for one word of the original; and in the course of his Froissart Lord Berners might have come upon instances of triplets, as in some of the documents quoted by Froissart:—'the sayde thynge to holde and kepe and accomplyshe,' 'his subjectes, alies, and adherentes,' 'our officers, sergeantes, or publike persone,' in 'the fourme and tenor of the letter on the peas made before Charters bitwene the kynge of Engelande and Fraunce.' Froissart himself writes:—'Comment il peuissent prendre, eschieller, et embler villes, chastiaus, et fortereces.'

In the Prologue to Arthur of Little Britaine the synonyms Berners and are not scattered so freely; and as there is less appearance Style

THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION
of a mechanical repetition, the style of this piece of Lord Berners' writing has some advantage over the others. That he should speak of 'fresshe ornate polysshed Englyssh,' and confess his failure in 'the facondyous arte of rethoryke,' shows that he knew of the more ambitious methods of composition, and that there is something of literary criticism in his choice of language, though he makes no great parade of it. It is evident that he does not greatly care for such discourses as the praise of History with which he begins his *Froissart*. He might have written more, he says, but he was afraid that he might 'too sore torment' the reader; wherefore he will 'briefly come to a point.' His real business is with the translation, which may stand on its own merits; and it is in the translation of history that Lord Berners has done great things, in comparison to which his small original prefaces and his divagations into the Spanish rhetoric are unimportant.

His Blunders
As a translator he has many faults. Want of scholarship is shown in all his books: he is easily taken in by the first impression of a sentence, and does not wait to see that it is grammar, and not always if it make sense. For instance, in the *Golden Boke* he is thrown out by a simple inversion, and confounds subject and object in this way:—

'I have redde in bokes and have proved it by myselfe,
that the love of subjectes, the suretie of the prince, the
dignitie of the empire, and the honour of the Senate, do
conserve the prince, not with rigour but with gentyll
conversation'; where the French has 'les conservent les
princes'—princes keep the love of their subjects, and so forth,
not by rigour but by affability. Some of his mistakes, it
is true, are not of his own making. The French translator of
Guevara (1581) had apparently before Lord Berners turned
*pretor en los exercitos*, 'praetor in the armes,' into *preteur
es exercices*, which becomes in English *pretour in exercises*.

and Those
of his
Originals
The *Castell of Love*, in spite of its title-page, was evidently
xxxii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

taken from the French version; and if Lord Berners and his printer between them place the opening scene 'in a shadowed ' darke valey in the mountayne called Serva de Marenu in ' the countrey of Masedonia,' it is because the French author before him had turned the Sierra Morena into 'Sierre de Moriene.' Lord Berners had some knowledge of what the French books might do in disfiguring proper names, and in the Prologue to Froissart gives up the attempt to rectify them. He is not to be blamed indiscriminately for the cruel travesties of names in Froissart, though he might have done more to find out what the wonderful misspellings of the French printers really meant. Most of the names in Pynson's text are the result of an elaborate process of disfigurement. Froissart probably took some care, but he had no talent for spelling: he was content to write l'amoureus Tubulus, meaning Tibullus, and Oleus for Aeolus, and Super-nascus for Parnassus; hence it is no wonder that English names were altered in his writing of them. Then came the copying scribes and the French printers, whose work Lord Berners had before him. Souegne and Melbeugre, for Sweden and Norway, in Berners, chapter lxxxiv., are derived from the French text, and may stand as an example of the difficulties which the Translator found too many for him. They were increased by the English printers, whose work was left uncorrected by Lord Berners, and who made additional nonsense of their own.

But apart from his neglect of the proper names, this translator shows a want of conscience in his attention to the meaning. Such mistakes as have been quoted from his Golden Boke are found in his Froissart also. 'Thus Jaques Dartvell endedde his dayes who had ben a great maister in Flanders; poore man first mounteth up, and unhappy man sleeth them at the ende' (chapter cxv.): this stands for 'povres gens l'amontèrent premièremen et meschans gens le tuèrent en le par fin'; that is, 'poor men uplifted
THE CRONYCLE OF

him at the first, and wicked men slew him in the end.’

Par eschielles de cordes et gravés d'acier’—‘rope-ladders and steel grappling’—is translated ‘with helpe of the archers.’ Achier, the spelling in the text which he was using, was enough to set him on this bold but unnecessary and misleading version, which rather confuses a spirited account of an escalade, though it is picked up and well continued after this:—‘And first there entred, raumpynge uppe lyke a catte, Bernarde de la Salle, who in his tyme hadde scaled dyvers forteresses,’ and so on.

IV

It is difficult to exaggerate the merits of Froissart as a narrator, taking a reasonable view of his circumstances and intentions. But it is possible to praise him wrongly. It is well understood now that much of the fame of the Chronicles is due to Jean le Bel, the real author of the greater part of the First Book; and apart from those large debts that can be verified by a comparison of Froissart with the recovered history of Jean le Bel, there is much in the common estimate of Froissart that is really due to the Middle Ages in general, and the traditional spirit of storytelling of which Froissart had his share. His forms of composition are inherited, and other writers have described before him all the pageant of which he is the accomplished master: the movements of armies, the shock of battle, the valour of this knight and that knight, and how they severally bore themselves in the press, and so forth. So far from being singular in his command of stories, Froissart appears as one of a numberless multitude of historians, who have all of them Froissart’s interest in events, and in various degrees the power of setting them out in a narrative. Instead of admiring Froissart, one is often inclined to wonder at the commonness of this gift of storytelling; and when Froissart is praised for his sieges, adven-

XXXIV
SYR JOHN FROISSART

tures, ambushes, and all the rest of it, there crowd into the court where he is getting his reward, who shall say how many captains, voyagers, chaplains, and common soldiers with journals and memoirs that might stand along with Froissart's Cressy, if spirited actions, described as they took place, be what is wanted in a chronicler? Of all the things in literature for which grace is to be said, there is none that is at once so plentiful in quantity and so inexhaustible in attraction as this kind of writing. It flourishes in any season and any climate. The Epic may wither and the Tragedy fail, but there is seldom want of the good bread Forebears of Chronicles, Journals, Memoirs, Narratives, whatever they and Rivals may be called, and there is as little weariness in them as in any things composed by men. The shortness of life may perhaps have its advantages, as various philosophers have explained; but it leaves a regret that there is hardly time in any ordinary life for all the Memoirs of France. And there are other languages, even the despised mediæval Latin, as Carlyle discovered in his Jocelyn of Brakelonde. The writing in Jocelyn's Chronicle is not so good as Froissart's; but if mere lively sketching of an incident be what is wanted, why should not Jocelyn claim his own? Those who wish to see past things as they were, will think as fondly of the streets of St. Edmund's Bury, and the old wives protesting against taxes with their distaffs, as of the Court of Gaston de Foix in Froissart's Chronicles. At least they will not care to stop and choose between one and the other. Jocelyn of Brakelonde lets them have a picture of something happening, and again, as Carlyle has sufficiently brought out, he can give the impression of a person's character and how it strikes a contemporary; and what can Froissart or Horace Walpole give more? Many things, no doubt; but not things of the same essential, satisfying flavour as the pictures of events, in which the monk of St. Edmund's, and many a ship-captain in Hakluyt, might compete with Froissart!
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

The Gift of narrative, like the gift of courage, is always and everywhere something near a miracle; but these miraculous qualities are pretty widely distributed among the human race. Perhaps the tendencies of education and culture have been rather to conceal the merits of the chroniclers by directing attention to moralists and philosophers instead; also the beaten ground of Livy, and the school historians writing mechanical sentences with the ablative absolute, are known to have produced an unfortunate aversion from history which has probably checked explorers. Dr. Johnson, who was sick of the Second Punic War, would surely have found the medieval chroniclers as well worth reading as the romances in Dr. Percy’s library. He was not a friend of Gray, or he might have been guided differently; but, as it was, Gray had few companions in his taste for the historians of chivalry. The love or the respect for great authors has naturally left out of notice the simple authors who make a record of events in any grammar that comes handy. The absorption of the schools in science and abstract philosophy, and the pretensions of the moral essayists (with half a dozen historical examples in their stock to enliven their account of human nature), prevented a right appreciation of old chronicles. Hence, the brilliancy of Froissart, who happens to be generally known or at any rate famous, has perhaps been too emphatically acknowledged: with too much isolation of Froissart from the other French historians, and also with not enough recognition of the common and widespread faculty of good story-telling. Froissart has been praised for what belongs to Villehardouin, and for qualities that he shares with any one who has been in lively places and can give an account of them, or who can repeat with spirit the stories of adventure, or even of mere commonplace occurrences, that he has heard from others. It would be easy to find in any age of literature any number of brilliant passages of narrative and description in writers

xxxvi
Syr John Froissart

who have no pretence to fame as historians. Perhaps one must except the great classical ages of Greece and Rome; for the ancients, or the Fates on their behalf, seem to have cleared away the less successful writers to let Homer and Herodotus live at ease in their room. But the Gothic Ages have been less thorough in their pruning; and from the days of St. Jerome to the last soldier’s letter about this year’s war there is an endless supply of the kind of history that stirs the reader of Froissart. It is very commonly disregarded by most of the human race, and perhaps most of all by the best educated, but it has its reward. When a chronicler of this kind is read for the first time, he has the same effect as Baruch had on La Fontaine. The discoverer goes about asking his friends:—‘Have you read Jocelyn of Brakelonde?’ Because Jocelyn has worked a miracle for him, in showing him visions of the past and things as they actually happened! The praise of Froissart, the stock comparison to Herodotus, might have provoked opposition before this from the friends of the less famous writers. Have you read Giraldus Cambrensis? or Galfridus Malatera? or Dino Compagni? Have you read Pitscottie? Do you know the real character of King Stephen, as shown when he sat playing at ‘chevaliers’ with the boy William, that was afterwards Marshal and Earl of Pembroke? Do you know the youth of Mark Alexander Boyd, ‘playing the loon on the Sabbath Day,’ and waiting at night in the Glasgow street to have the life of the Professor whose discipline was not agreeable? The Professor, Mr. James Melville, has given his account of this part of the Renaissance in his Diary, and of other things as lively. Is his impression of what happened, and his record of it, less vivid than Froissart’s? Has Froissart anything truer, anything more courteous, more absolutely sufficient in every way, than Melville’s interview with Don Juan Gomez? Froissart in such things is equalled by his two chief predecessors in
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION French history, to name no more. He does not come nearer to the very truth of the thing than Villehardouin.

Villehardouin The approach to Constantinople and the thrill of apprehension and resolution mingling at the sight of the place they had come to take, the chief city of the world, the solemnity of this, the sudden revelation of the place, and the immediate shock of surprise, all the difference between what you have thought about and what you see before you, Villehardouin has put into one magnificent sentence:

‘Quant il virent ces haus murs et ces riches tours dont ele estoit close et ces riches palais et ces hautes yglises dont il avoit tant que nus nel peut croire s’il ne le véist proprement à l’oeil, et il virent le lome et le le de la vile qui de toutes autres estoit souveraine, sachés qu’il n’i ot si hardi à qui le char ne frémesist: et ce ne fu mie merveille s’il s’en esmaierent, quar onques si grans afaiz ne fu empris de nulle gent puis que li mons fu estorés.’

And as much in his own different way has been done by Joinville. Among the shadows and the bodiless voices of the House of Fame, the knights of Mansourah, as Joinville saw and remembered them, are still possessed of their human life and their own proper character. There is Count Peter of Brittany, hustled from the field by his men, and showing how little he thought of them as he spat the blood from his mouth and cursed them; holding on to the saddlebow to keep the rout from unseating him:—‘Bien sembloit que il les prisaist pou.’ And among all the many good things that have been said on the battle-field, from the days of Sarpedon downward, we may doubt whether anything is better than the speech of the good Count of Soissons:—‘Li bons cuens de Soissons, en ce point là où nous estiens, seu moquoit à moy et me disoit: Seneschaus, laissons huer ceste chienaille; que par la Quoife Dieu! (ainsi comme il juroit) encore en parlerons nous entre vous et moi de ceste journée ès chambres de dames.’

Froissart also has gained credit for a simplicity and

xxxviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

directness of style which is really common to his age, to all

INTRODUCTION

the Middle Ages, more or less. This is very pleasantly

ducted by one of his French editors, who chanced to

be drawn to Froissart not in the ordinary way. M. Buchon Virtue
did not take up Froissart at first because of Froissart's reputa-
tion as a medieval historian: he had read other historians
first, in Portuguese; it was from admiration of Fernan
Lopes, he says, that he turned to look for something corre-
spanding in his own language, and so came upon Froissart. Fernan Lopes
But with most readers the case is different. They have not
read Fernan Lopes, perhaps no medieval prose at all, and
they are apt to take as the peculiar beauty of Froissart
that charm of simple phrases which belongs even to the
weakest medieval writings in the vulgar tongue, to the Petits
Artus, to the Reali di Francia, and not exclusively to the
great books like the Quest of the Holy Grail.

There is as wide an interval between the masters and the
butchers in the Thirteenth or the Fourteenth Century as at
any other time, and Froissart is as far removed from the
incompetent medieval prosers as Gibbon is from Russell's
Modern Europe. But there is this difference: that, while the
useless prose of later times is neither fit for the land nor yet The Medieval
for the dunghill, there is generally something even in the Charm
feeblest of medieval writings which has not wholly lost its
savour, something that attracts even a man of the Eighteenth
Century, as Dr. Johnson was taken captive by Palmerin of
England. It does not belong to the great books only, to
Froissart or Malory; but even the commonest hackwork of
chivalry has a power of attraction in some of its phrases. All
the weariness, all the respectability of well-educated books are
unavailing with a certain class of readers if they only hear
such opening words as 'Or dist li contes,' and 'Now torne we
fro this mater and speke we of Sir Tristrem.' Phrases like
these kill the phrasing of modern historians—e.g. 'the arts
as well as arms of his subtle enemy,' or 'foiled in his design,
THE CRONYCLE OF

the weak but unscrupulous monarch,' etc. If you test this
sort of good grammar along with common phrases such as
may be found easily enough at any opening of the books of
chivalry—"Now shewethe the story that anone, after that
Huon was enterlyd into the chapell"—it is certain that some
readers will consider this last the more admirable. What
is beyond question is, that the dulness of the Middle Ages is
redeemed by that grace of simplicity, and by the command of
phrases that, even in the poorest context, yet bear witness to
their gentle ancestry. Mediaeval prose calls up the thought,
at any rate, of something different from the grammar-school;
and the grammar-school, with Holofernes for its teacher, is
what is suggested by most of the polite literature that has
been composed since the Renaissance, once its day is over.

Of all the languages French had gone furthest in tuning
the common mediaeval prose to effects of pathos, making the
most of the contrast between deep meaning and innocent-
looking words. No language written by grown men ever
comes near the old French in giving a tone to narrative like
the awe-stricken voice of a child. The old French writers
must appeal to you for pity and wonder, must call out "how
great the loss," and add in the next breath, "but there was
no help for it, so they had to let it be" ("mais amender ne
le porent"). In old French literature the individual strength
or levity of a writer's character seldom does much to
modify this hereditary trait of style; the most worldly and
the strongest minded talk in this way; there is little irony
known, and tears come quickly to the eyes over the common
fortunes of the race. Jean le Bel and Froissart are gentle-
hearted men, in different degrees, and both of them were
poets and lovers of romance. They use this sort of language,
and they use the formulas of romance to bring a thing
vividly before the mind:—"He that had seen this, had been
filled with wonder." 'Qui donc veust hommes, les femmes et
' enfans de chiais plover et tordre leurs mains et crier à
xl
Syr John Froissart

'haulte vois très amèrement, il n'est si durs coers ou monde
'qui n'en eust pité';—'there was nat so hard a hert if they
'had senz them but that wolde have had great pytie of
'them'—so the sorrow of Calais is represented by Lord
Berners, cap. cxxvi., but he does not convey the full associa-
tion of the original phrase with the formulas of the heroic
poetry. 'là vœsiés fier estor esbaudir';—'there might you
see fierce stour of battle raging, lances shivered, shields
broken, the coats of mail torn through and rent.' It was in The Epic
such phrases of the chansons de geste that the earliest French Touch
historians learned their ways of appealing to an audience.
And it is the epic manner again that has determined the
fashion of a sentence like this in the beginning of one of the
chapters on Cressy:—'Ceste bataille, ce samedi, entre la Broie
et Creci, fu moult felenesse et très horrible.' It is used again
for Najera in 1367:—'Che samedi au matin entre Nazres et
Navaret'; and it recalls the magnificent opening of the old
heroic poem in the cycle of William of Orange:—

A icel jor que la dolor fu grans
Et la bataille orible en Alicheans.

It has the epic way of making the time and the place seem
notable, as if they partook in the action. Such is the habit
of the old French writers of history.

V

The most probable date of Froissart's birth is 1338; Froissart
his life ¹ is nearly contemporary with Chaucer's. Between and Chaucer
the fortunes of the two writers there are many close resem-
blances: Froissart appears to have been, like Chaucer, sprung
from a prosperous townsman's family, and, like Chaucer, he
found it not difficult to get access to courts and noble houses.
He had not Chaucer's imagination, nor his full sympathy

¹ The Life of Froissart, by Mme. Darmesteter, in the series of 'Great
Writers of France,' has made it easy to follow his career, and not so easy to
say anything fresh about it.
THE CRONYCLE OF

with different conditions of men, but his birth and his good temper saved him from the exclusive preference of courtly and chivalrous affairs that has sometimes been attributed to him. A man of Hainault, a townsman of Valenciennes, had no right to look down upon respectable burgesses. In the notes on his own life in his poems he makes no pretence of great dignity for himself: he takes something like the humorous view of his own modest rank that Chaucer presents in the *House of Fame* and in the interludes before and after *Sir Thopas*. Froissart coming back from Scotland, with his one horse Grisel carrying him and his saddle-bag, is a traveller of less magnificence than Jean le Bel, and there is no affectation of courtliness in the confessions of the *Dit du florin*, how his money went in the taverns of Lestines. There was not the sharp division between knights and burgesses that is sometimes supposed—for example, in Claverhouse's description of him to Henry Morton. Eustache de St. Pierre, of the town of Calais, is one of the heroes of Jean le Bel and of Froissart, and Froissart notes the death of a 'valiant burgess of Abbeville' in a 'brunt' of battle in 1369: 'the which was great damage': just as if he had been a knight.

He has given an account of his schooldays and his early love affairs in the poem of *l'Espinette amoureuse*. This is his *Vita Nuova*; but while Dante's story is made as solemn as the prophetic books that he quotes in it, and filled with the quintessence of the old idealist worship, Froissart's poem varies easily between the formulas of the allegorical tradition and a literal account of the way he spent his youth in Valenciennes, from the time when his amusements were like those of Gray at Eton or Cowper at Westminster to the incidents of his unsuccessful courtship. The Fourteenth Century was quite capable of such personal notes and such urbane confessions as are common in less 'Gothic' periods. Froissart was a memoir-writer as well as an author of songs.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

and virelais. His 'mémoire yimaginative,' as he calls it in the Trésor amoureux, was employed on his own small adventures at school, before he turned to the chronicles of the 'prowess' of Christendom.

The record of his life contains little besides his travels and his literary works, the travels being generally for the sake of his history. He went to England in 1361 to present a book of his to Queen Philippa, and spent about five years at the English court. In 1365 the queen sent him with good credentials to Scotland. He stayed fifteen days at Dalkeith, in the house of the Earl Douglas, and saw Scotland there his son, the Douglas who fell at Otterbourn: 'a fair young child, and a sister of his called the lady Blanche.' In his account of Otterbourn, Froissart mentions that in his youth he had ridden 'nigh over all the realm of Scotland'; King David took him with him on a progress through the country, and he 'searched all the realm to the wild Scots.' In his travels he noted not only such things as were told him about Robert the Bruce and about the manners of the Scots (to verify Jean le Bel's descriptions), but also, more fancifully, the names that he used in composing the scenery of his tale of Meliadore, such as Snowdon, which is the name of Stirling in romance. On his return, which is the subject of one of the pleasantest of his shorter poems, he seems to have spent some time with the young Lord Despencer, whose father-in-law, Bartholomew Burgershaw, comes often into his story. Passages of conversation with Despencer are among the additions made by Froissart to his last redaction of the First Book. They have not the same extent as his report of the talk on the way to Bearn in 1388, but they are significant: Despencer pointing out the towns that his family had lost through 'the ill queen.' Froissart was at Berkeley Castle Berkeley along with him in 1366, and heard the story of it from an old squire: he asked questions, he says, to 'justify' his history. Then he went to Brussels, where he was befriended Brussels.
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION
by Wenceslas of Brabant for the sake of Queen Philippa, and then to the Black Prince at Bordeaux. He was at Bordeaux on Twelfth Night 1367, when Richard, son of the Black Prince, was born; and, being known as a chronicler, was bidden to write down the fact for his book. After a short visit to England again, he went out along with Despencer to accompany Lionel of Clarence to his wedding at Milan. The journey had a bad ending in the death of the bridegroom not long after the marriage. Froissart went on to Rome, about which he has nothing to say. He seems to have preferred Stirling, in his ‘Gothic’ taste. Queen Philippa died in 1369, and Froissart came back to his own country of Hainault, where he must have worked hard at his Chronicles, with such diversions as are indicated in the Dit du florin, a poem written twenty years later. In an earlier poem, le Joli buisson de Jonece, which dates itself the 30th of November 1378, he gives a pleasant account of his own fortunes and of those who have befriended him;

Hainault

Rome

Bordeaux

Milan

His Friends

Queen Philippa, the Duchess Blanche of Lancaster, for whose early death he makes his lament, Isabel, Lady of Coucy, her father King Edward, her husband (Sir Enguerrand), and many others; the Duke and Duchess of Brabant, the Duke Aubert, the three Lords of Blois, Lewis, John, and Guy, especially Guy; the Count Amadeus of Savoy; and last of all, his Scottish friends, whom he ought to have mentioned before—the King, and the Earls of Douglas, Mar, March, Sutherland, and Fife:—

‘Haro! que fai! je me bescoco
J’ai oublié le roy d’Escos
Et le bon Conte de Duglas
Avec qui j’ai mené grant glas:
Bel me reçurent en leur marce
Cils de Mare et cils de la Marce
Cils de Surlant et cils de Fl.’

1 Buisson de Jonece l. 363 sq. (Scheler, Poésies de Froissart, t. ii. p. 11).
SYR JOHN FROISSART

He does not here mention Robert of Namur, for whom the First Book was composed.

Froiassart set out on his adventures when he left Hainault for England in 1361, to offer to Queen Philippa his first essay in history:—"Howbeit I took on me, as soon as I Prologue, see \( \text{came from school, to write and recite} \) the said book, and below, p. 18 \( \text{bare the same compiled into England, and presented the} \) volume thereof to my lady Philippa of Hainault, noble Froiassart as \( \text{queen of England, who right amiably received it to my} \) great profit and advancement." Berners does not quite rightly give the original meaning:—"Ce non obstant si em-
\( \text{prins je assez hardiement, moy yssu de l'escole, à dittier} \) et à rimer les guerres dessus dites." The book presented to the Queen of England was not any part of the present Chronicle, but a rhyming history, such as are found in plenty, though this one of Froiassart's is lost.\(^1\) It was doubtless in the ordinary verse of romance, such as was used in the Life of William the Marshal long before this, and in Chandos Herald's Life of the Black Prince later; and in a book that claims remembrance in connection with Froiassart and Jean le Bel, by John Barbour, the historian of the Bruce. Froiassart had from the first the right historical sense that made him go about asking questions and taking notes, but he was not at first, apparently, drawn to the methods of Villehardouin and Joinville. He preferred the old mode of utterance, in rhyme: as in the days when In Rhyme

---

\(^1\) Something has been saved: thirty-six octosyllabic verses on the events of 1357, apparently from Froiassart's poem, have been found in two parchment slips used for binding, and published by M. L. Delisle in the Bibliothèque de l'École des Chartes, LX. pp. 611-616. M. Longnon, in calling attention to this at the end of the third volume of his Meliadur (p. 368), observes that it is most probably this early historical poem of Froiassart's which is mentioned in the library catalogue of King Charles V.:—La guerre du roy de France et du roy d'Angleterre, et les faits du roy de Navarre et de ceux de Paris quant ils furent contre le roy... écrit en français de lettres formées, et rymé, a deux colombes.
THE CRONYCLE OF

PROSE was not thought fit for a gentleman to read, or rather to have read to him. Prose was enjoined upon him when he made up his mind to continue Jean le Bel, and to sacrifice his first attempt, or at any rate to disregard it. What happened to his plans is clearly enough explained in his Prologue, though it is not clearly brought out by Berners. He had, of his own motion and through his natural interest in the subject, gathered material for a history of the wars of England and France, chiefly about the battle of Poitiers and what followed, for the earlier history was rather too far back for his own memory to serve him well. This history he compiled into metre and presented to the queen. Then, as he went on with his researches, he found that it would not stand, and that he had not rightly made out the actors in the story and their proper exploits. He had the motive of heroic literature strongly at work in his mind—namely, the desire to honour the great deeds of champions in war; and he found that somehow or other his rhyming chronicle had gone wrong or come short in its attribution of glory to the different knights. So he fell back on the Chronicles of Jean le Bel of Liége, made these the foundation and the first part of his work, and continued them, starting in his new undertaking from about the time when he may have begun to suspect and criticise the book presented to the queen, which was about the time when Jean le Bel comes to an end:—

'Therefore to acquit me in that behalf and in following the truth as near as I can, I, John Froissart, have enter- prised this history on the foresaid ordinance and true foundation, at the instance and request of a dear lord of mine, Robert of Namur, knight, lord of Beaufort, to whom entirely I owe love and obeisance, and God grant me to do that thing that may be to his pleasure.'

PATRONS AND OPINIONS

The life of Froissart is determined by the favour of his patrons, and so are his opinions. This has been shown...
SYR JOHN FROISSART

most clearly by M. Siméon Luce in his investigation of INTRO-
Froissart’s ways of working and the processes by which the DUCTION
different redactions of his First Book were brought about.
The English sympathies of the First Version (which is the
most popular in manuscripts, and which was taken as material
for the early printed copies, and therefore was translated by
Lord Berners), the English accounts of Cressy and Poitiers, Philippa of
are due to Froissart’s attachment to the English party in England
his early life, to the favour of Queen Philippa, and the
protection of Robert of Namur. Robert of Namur came Robert of
back from journeys like those of Chaucer’s Knight in Pruce Namur
and the Holy Land, and offered his services to King Edward
at Calais in 1346; although he was not constant altogether
in his support of the English, he was more for that side
than for the French. Froissart dedicates to him the First
Book of the Chronicles, written from the English point of
view. But before 1373, when he became curate of Lestines, Gui de
under the patronage of Gui de Blois, Froissart’s opinions Châtillon
began to change. Queen Philippa had died in 1369; he
had come to be more and more closely drawn to the court
of Brabant, where Wenceslas of Bohemia, husband of the
duchess, gave his countenance to Froissart, and made him Duke
the confidential friend to whom he gave his poems, Wenceslas
Wenceslas, son of King John of Bohemia who fell at
Cressy, naturally had other sympathies in connexion with
the war than those which Froissart had represented; while
Gui de Châtillon, Count of Blois, was nephew of that
saintly Charles of Blois who had died at Auray (cap. cxxvi.),
maintaining his right in Brittany against the English sup-
porters of the rival claim, and his father too had died at
Cressy on the French side. For Gui de Blois the Second
Redaction appears to have been made between 1376 and
1383: it is found in two manuscripts, the chief of which, at
Amiens, is thought by M. Luce to have been copied from
Froissart’s own writing, and from writing done in haste and
xlvii
THE CRONYCYCLE OF

not very easy to read. Gui de Blois, a good knight, who
was hostage in England when King John was set free from
his captivity, who like Robert of Namur had made journeys
in 'Pruce,' who fought against the English in Guienne, and
commanded the French rearguard at Roosebecke in 1382,
was the chief patron of Froissart in the rest of his life: the
Third Book was written about 1390 for his good master
and lord, Gui, Count of Blois, and in the Prologue of the
Fourth Book Froissart describes himself as 'chaplain to his
dear lord above named,' as well as treasurer and Canon of
Chimay and of Lille in Flanders. Gui de Blois died in
1397, before the Chronicles came to an end, and before the
last redaction of the First Book.

Froissart probably drew away from Robert of Namur
owing to a coolness between Robert of Namur and Wenceslas
in 1371; down to the death of Wenceslas in 1383 Froissart
was his friend and associate in poetical studies. His
romance of Meliador, long lost but now recovered, and
lately published, was written to introduce in it the lyrics of
Wenceslas: poems for which Mr. R. L. Stevenson's review
of Charles of Orleans has said by implication everything
most to the purpose. Their music is the thinnest that
human senses can apprehend, yet they are true and graceful
in their own way, though there is no substance in them.
Their author was gently born, and the piety of Froissart was
well bestowed in honouring and preserving his poems.

The First Book was finished about the time when Froissart
went to Lestines, about 1373; it was revised for Gui de
Blois (the Second Redaction) between 1376 and 1383, and in
these years and later Froissart was occupied with his Second
Book, great part of which is the chronicle of Flanders. After
1381, when Gui succeeded his brother John as Count of
Blois, Froissart was made his chaplain and became Canon of
Chimay. Between Blois and the Low Countries he saw some
more of the world, and towards the end of 1388, in order
xlviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

to get fresh material, he made the journey to Bearn that rightley takes up so much room in his memoirs and in every account of his life and character.

Froissart’s Third Book begins with the matters, from Orthes 1382 onward, that he learned at Orthez in 1388, concerning the business of the realms of Castile, Portugal, Navarre, ‘and Aragon, yea, and of the realm of England and country of Bourbonois and Gascoyne.’ In telling about these things he gives not only the substance but the way in which the stories came to him in his journey southward, and Gaston de Foix also the conversations at the house of ‘the high and mighty prince Gaston, Earl of Foix and Bearn.’ He brought with him his romance of Meliadur, containing the poems of Wenceslas of Brabant: ‘the songs, ballads, rondels, and virelais which the gentle duke had made in his time’: and read the book aloud for the night’s entertainment. Apart from historical criticism, no comment on this part of Froissart’s life can do much more than repeat his own story, and that is unnecessary here, when his own story is to follow in its proper place, as Lord Berners has translated it. There is no need for any chorus to the tragedy of the house of Gaston Phoebus—‘the piteous death of Gaston, the earl’s son’—and as little for the less solemn passages, where Froissart told the story of Acteon, as possibly helping to explain the strange disease of Sir Peter of Bearn, or where he listened to the squire’s tale ‘how a spirit called Horton served the lord of Corasse a long time, and brought him ever tidings from all parts of the world.’ From this date his manner of writing history changes: there is more of his personal memoirs, a greater freedom of discourse and of digression. It was not that he acquired new powers, or that he learned the art of making A Change his journal interesting; for his poems, it will be found, show of Method much the same faculty of dealing with personal matters as

1 At the xxii. chapter of Berners’ Second Volume (1525).
THE CRONYCLE OF

Introduction the conversations of Orthez, and Froissart had of course from the first been a writer of reminiscences. But he certainly increased his freedom; and, when he went back in his old age to revise his First Book, he added many circumstances 'beneath the dignity of history,' and gave, for example, not only the results of his early inquiries in England, but in some cases the way in which his researches were carried out: for instance, in the talk with Despencer already quoted. And his later visit to England is recorded, not in the style of the First Book, but like the visit to Orthez: the conversations are fully reported, and the circumstances noted. Besides the information given by Sir Richard Stury at Eltham, it is told, in one of the memorable expressions of Froissart's quick sense for what was about him, that he and Sir Richard were walking up and down in the shade of a vine-trellis, while his old acquaintance of four-and-twenty years back explained to him the condition of England. Unfortunately this sentence did not come into Lord Berners' Froissart:—'Et toutes les parties qui sont icy 'dessus contenues, celluy vaillant chevalier anchien messire 'Richard Stury les me dict et racompta mot à mot en gam- 'biant les galeriés de l'ostel à Eltem où il faisoiç mout bel 'et mout plaisant et umbru, car icelles galeriés pour lors 'estoienc toutes couvertes de vignes.'

Froissart threw at Orthez: the generous life there and the favour shown to him and to his book, 'the Meliador,' gave him an exhilaration that does not seem to have passed away. He left Orthez in March 1389 in the train of the young Duchess of Berry. At Avignon (where he lost his purse) he wrote the Dit du florin, a poem about himself and his own fortunes, in which he shows the same kind of spirit as in his prose memoirs of the same date. On his way back to Hainault he met his old friend and patron, 'mon tres chier et grant seigneur,' he calls him, 'mon- seigneur Enguerran Seigneur de Coucy,' whose life and fate 1
SYR JOhn FROISSART

(after Nicopolis) were so well in harmony with the legendary sorrows and the chivalrous reputation of the name he bore. From Enguerrand de Coucy he got news of English affairs. After a visit to Valenciennes and to Gui, 'the Earl of Blois,' he returned to Paris in time to see the entry of Queen Paris Isabel on Sunday the 20th of June 1389; he gives a very full account of all the shows, pageants, and devices made in her honour. Later, at Bruges, he collected Portuguese intelligence from Don John Pacheco, and finished his Third Book, the whole of which must have been written at high pressure and with great zest and spirit. In 1390 the Fourth Book was begun, and dedicated, like the others, to Gui de Blois. But Gui de Blois was not quite able to keep all Froissart's old devotion. He died in 1397, ruined by extravagance and 'accidie,' having had to sell his estate of Blois; and the latter part of the Chronicles is somewhat The Fall of overcast by the shadow of his decline. He is not mentioned Gui de Blois among the patrons whom Froissart consulted before his visit to England in 1394. Froissart applied for aid and New Patrons countenance to Albert of Bavaria, Count of Hainault, Holland, and Zealand, and Lord of Friesland, to his son William of Ostrevant, to the Duchess of Brabant, and to the Lords of Coucy and of Gommegines. Gui de Blois is remembered at his death as an honourable lord who had been liberal in his help to Froissart and in his encouragement of the Chronicles, but before his death his wealth Albert of had shrunk, and the historian had to turn elsewhere for Bavaria a patron. There was nothing exactly disloyal in this, and Albert of Bavaria was no new friend to Froissart; but all the same there is something rather sad in the passing of Gui de Châtillon and in Froissart's acceptance of the new conditions. Albert of Bavaria and his son were Knights of the Garter, and attached to England in their sympathies, and Froissart had begun to think again of a still older debt than that which he owed to Châtillon—his obligation to
THE CRONYCLE OF

Queen Philippa and her children. He returned to England in July 1394.

Naturally in this visit there was the common disappointment: the old nests had other birds in them. At Canterbury Froissart stood by the tomb of the Prince of Wales; he had not seen Richard, King of England, since the day when the child was held at the font in the church of Bordeaux. His old acquaintances were mostly dead. But he found Sir Richard Stury, whom he had seen last in 1370 at the court of Wenceslas at Brussels, and he was well received by the king, who accepted graciously his richly bound and jewelled volume of poems:—`in a fair book, well enlumined, all the matters of amours and moralities that in four and twenty years before I had made and compiled.' There is no attempt in these chapters of Froissart to keep merely to public history. It is in this part of his memoirs that the passages occur to which Gray calls attention in his letter to Wharton (January 23, 1760):—`Pray, are you come to the four Irish Kings, that went to school to K. Richard the 2d.'s Master of the Ceremonies; and the man who informed Froissart of all he had seen in S. Patrick's Purgatory?' Froissart in England in these latter days heard the grumbling of the nation, from Thomas, Duke of Gloucester, down to the populace of London, against the misgovernment of the king; and he takes notice in his own way of the same things as were expressed in a different manner by his contemporary, the alliterative poet, in his complaint and admonition to Richard the Redeless. He left England late in 1395. Not much is known of the rest of his life. He appears to have lived mostly in his own country of Hainault, working at his books. His history ends tragically, with the ruinous defeat at Nicopolis, and with the death of King Richard. But this was not the last of his memoirs. After 1400, though he did not continue his history beyond the accession of Henry of Lancaster, he went back again to the First
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Book, and began re-writing it in an original way, making his own that part of his *Chronicles* which had mainly been due to Jean le Bel. This revision—the Third Redaction, extant in the one manuscript of Rome—goes down to 1350, and is very different in style from both the other versions. The tone, which in many places had been flattened a little through the transference of Jean le Bel's original narrative to the copy of his work in Froissart, is now freshened again by means of digressions, remarks, and reminiscences of Froissart's own. The earlier history comes out in this last version more impressively through Froissart's indignation and distress at the fall of King Richard; the character of the English nation as he describes it in the manuscript of Rome is determined by what he had himself observed, not in 1365, but thirty years later. Nothing definite is known of Froissart after this, and the year of his death is uncertain.

VI

The French poets of the Fourteenth Century, the masters Froissart's and the contemporaries of Chaucer, have not received the same attention from literary historians that has been given to the earlier mediaeval schools. No one has set himself to explain and characterise them as M. Gaston Paris and his pupils have described the triumphs of the Thirteenth and the Fourteenth Centuries, the Arthurian Romances, *Reynard*, the *Fabliaux*, the early lyrical poetry of France, the *Romaunt of the Rose*. And they are still too mediaeval—Guillaume de Machaut, Eustache Deschamps, and Froissart—for the professors of modern literature, who regard the Middle Ages as merely a preserve for philologists and antiquarians, and who find that one *chanson de geste* is the same as another, and none of them really worth much notice from an educated taste or a serious historian. Fortunately the texts of these poets have not been neglected, though their value has not been fully
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

estimated for the history of literature. One can form one's own opinion, with the scholarly Editions of the poetry of Froissart and of Eustache Deschamps, easily accessible as they are, and with Chaucer's earlier poetry to help one to an understanding of their motives. Nor should the essay of M. Sandras be omitted, in which he tries to reduce Chaucer to the rank of a mere dependent on his French instructors, and does no harm to Chaucer thereby, while he illustrates Machaut and Deschamps, and gives a clue to some of the mazes of that Garden of the Rose in which the French poets were fond of walking.

All the poets of that school were servants of the Rose, believers in the Romaut of the Rose, and their office might be regarded as a kind of lyrical variation or descant on the themes given out in the authoritative text of Guillaume de Lorris, from which, as from a perennial fountain, their jets of ballades and virelays are refreshed and supplied:

'The God of Love, a! benedicite,
How mighty and how great a lord is he!'

These poets, with Chaucer in his youth, are of the household of that lord, and find their way to his Garden in the dream of a May morning; and their poems have the dreamy charm of the place, so indescribable, yet so distinct even from the things that are most like it, such as the Provençal poems, or those of Petrarch, which are akin to the Rose indeed, but not in the same close degree as the makings of Machaut, Froissart, and Chaucer. This common bond of loyalty, however, does not explain everything in that fellowship of poets, and Froissart, like Chaucer, has more than one way. It has perhaps been too often and too hastily taken for granted that in the French school of the Fourteenth Century there was nothing more than the

SYR JOHN FROISSART

lyrical repetition of the old conventional amatory motives in the form of ballades, rondels, and chansons royales, having great beauty of poetical form, in narrow limits, but without variety or novelty apart from the systems of the rhythms and the rhymes. If there had been nothing more, there would still have been Chaucer's Complaint to Pity and 'Hyd Absolon thy gilte tresses clere'; and also that most exquisite deliverance of Chaucer's finest poetical sense, the lament of Anelida. But there would not have been the dialogue in the Parliament of Birds; and even the Book of the Duchess, closely as it conforms in most respects to the tradition of the Rose, is not altogether a dream. It is not strange that Chaucer should very early have found the ways of the French tradition too strait for him. But the French authors also, though they had not the same poetical career before them, are free to go beyond the limits of the Rose; the poetry of Froissart and Deschamps, if there be nothing in it like the Canterbury Pilgrims, is at least as free as the Parliament of Birds or the House of Fame; and The Pageant besides the beauty of their ballades and rondels (which any churlish classical person may disparage if he choose) there is an amount of humorous and satirical poetry that is hardly recognised by those who think the Middle Ages wanting in the modern qualities of wit and worldly elegance. The passages where Froissart tells things about his own life are as sound, as clear, as free from 'Gothic' encumbrance as even Swift's autobiographical verses. What is most of all to our purpose, they illustrate the Chronicles. The motive of Froissart in the Chronicles is not altogether purely the love of exploits and prowess or the desire to praise famous men. Happily, in many parts of his work, especially in the latter part of the Chronicles, as has been seen, the memoir-writer gets the better of politics and the art of war, and reveals the true extent of his theme, which is nothing less than human experience as understood and
THE CRONYCLE OF

remembered by himself. Froissart declares himself at last in the chapters on his visit to Bearn, so very different from the history of the wars. In the first part of his work he does not talk about himself, and report conversations with the same fulness. He does not, unluckily, report the talk by the way during his visit to Scotland as he does the conversations with Sir Espaing de Lyon on their journey to Orthez. The earlier notes are given without their setting. Stirling and Dalkeith and the evening’s entertainment there are not described in the same manner as the nights at Orthez in the house of the Count of Foix. The new method that he adopts for 1388, and had not used for 1365, is not to be ascribed merely to ‘the tattling quality of age,’ nor yet altogether to a maturing of his style, an enlargement of his scope, a growing freedom from the dignity of history. No doubt there was a development of this sort going on: he felt that there might be enough of battles, sieges, and ambuscades; why should he not indulge his genius? But his genius had found its way before this in the memoir notes that he put into various poems, and his poems show him as he really is more intimately than the more important historical pieces of his Chronicles: a man pleased with the recollection of anything that has happened to him, an average good-humoured Epicurean temperament quickened into something finer by his sense of a continuous excitement in the mere process of living, and with a gift of expression in which his memoirs shape themselves for narrative. The short poem on his horse Grisel and his greyhound coming back from Scotland is a specimen of Froissart’s mind. It is like a poem for a child, telling how the horse and the dog exchanged remarks on life and on their master. ‘See what hard work I have,’ says the horse, ‘with so much to carry, while you run free!’ ‘But con-

sider,’ says the greyhound, ‘how well our master cares for you, how he goes to see that you are fed, how you are lvi
SYR JOHN FROISSART

‘given a comfortable lodging and a bed of straw or fern, while I am tied up at the door or anywhere to keep watch’; and so on. In all which, besides the fluent verse, there is nothing remarkable, except that Froissart on his travels should have amused himself by thinking into rhyme the common trials of his companions—he was fond of animals—and the common charities of the road. There is no heightening nor idealising nor ornamentation of the subject; nothing much more than a pleasant appreciation of what is happening about him in an ordinary day’s journey; without any epithet or any poetical diction he draws toward his inn. Froissart has set down in verse, using his horse and dog to speak for him, his record of the fact that his heart leaps up when he beholds the church spire at the end of the day’s stage, and knows that it means an inn not very far off. This is outside the allegorical garden, and it reveals the same good-tempered and frank enjoyment of life that carried Froissart through so much. Life is generally so interesting to him that he has no time to be wearied. Though the mass of his writing is large, it never looks like task-work. Tristitia was one of the Seven Sins for which he had no inclination. Hence his writings move most easily; he is never preoccupied, and has always time to spare. The romance of Meliadore, which, to be sure, is not a very substantial work, for all its length—would seem to have been turned out as a sort of amusement, a relaxation from the claims of history. In the same way that other good-natured man, Froissart’s contemporary, Boccaccio, John of Froissart, the Tranquillities—might lapse into Tuscan verse or prose Boccaccio, as a relief from his serious labour at the Genealogy of the Gods or the history of the Falls of Princes. Chaucer was and Chaucer less mercurial than his French and Italian compeers, and shows more sign of study in his writings, and less levity. But Froissart, Chaucer, and Boccaccio deserve to be remembered together in honour of the century in which they lived.
THE CRONYCLE OF

as the three great writers who have least of the writer's melancholy.

At the first glance there is a temptation to think of Froissart's poetry and his Chronicles as roughly corresponding to the difference between Chaucer's earlier and later poems: as though the Chronicles and all Froissart's historical researches implied the same kind of turning towards real life, the same kind of discontent with the shadows of the Rose, as may be found in Chaucer's literary progress, in the difference between the Complaint to Pity (for example) and the Canterbury Prologue. Froissart, we might imagine, like Chaucer, grew weary of the allegorical landscape and the visionary actors, of Beau-Semblant, Bel-Accueil, and Franc-Vouloir, even of the heroes and heroines, Paris and Helen, Tristram and Iseult, 'Polixena et Dame Equo,' and the other gentle ghosts of the Lovers' Paradise. But this anticipation is hardly borne out by the facts of Froissart's nature or the succession of his works. It is not exactly true of Chaucer that he ever gave up anything: the pageant of the Legend of Good Women is later than the strong life of his Troilus and Cressyde. Of Froissart it is even less to be affirmed that he intentionally withdrew from the artifice of the fashionable poetry because he was tired of it and wanted something more real to break his mind upon. His occupation (or his diversion) with the romance of Meliandor shows that he kept up both interests at once. But besides this it has to be remembered that the courtly school itself allowed its poets to deal pretty freely with real life. The rules of their Paradise were not so strict as in the time of Tannhäuser: they could go in and out much as they chose. It is easy to distinguish the poems or the parts of their poems in which they keep to the full ritual of the old observance of the Rose, and again the poems where cheerfulness is seen breaking in, where the light is daylight, where the tone is that of urbane conversation, or at least as lviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

near it as was possible for a Fourteenth Century author of INTRO-
moral essays in verse. In the scope of his poetry Froissart DUCTION
is not very different from Clément Marot. The wit and Froissart and
good humour of poems like the Dit du florin are the proper the Satirists
things for what was originally called Satire by its Roman
inventors, and the old Horatian tag upon Lucilius, the
Boswellian motto, is not out of place in connexion with the
poetry of Froissart; for though much of it belongs to the
schools of the mediæval amorists, its character as a
whole is rather that of confessions, impressions, notes and
criticisms of life:—

Quo fìt ut omnis
Votiva pateat veluti descripta tabella
Vita senis.

His poems got some share of his confidences, his prose
memoirs had the rest, and the life of ‘Sir John Froissart of
the country of Hainault’ is shown in them like a picture.

VII

The original author of most of this present First Volume Jean le Bel
is Jean le Bel, canon of St. Lambert of Liége, who, according
to the chronicler Jean d’Outremeuse, of the same city and
of the canon’s household, ‘placed great care and all good
‘diligence in this matter, and continued it all his life as
‘justly as he could, and much it cost him to collect and gain
‘it.’ Jean le Bel died about 1370, over eighty years old.
Along with his brother Henry he took part in the expedi-
tion of Jean de Beaumont in 1327, which brought him to
York, Northumberland, and Scotland, along with the army
of King Edward. He appears in Berners (cap. xv.) as ‘syr
John de Libeaux,’ among the Hesbegnon of Hesbaye.

Jean de Hemricourt, in the Miroir des nobles de Hesbaye,
gives an account of Jean le Bel and his way of life that His Way of
shows him to have possessed the virtue of magnificence, Life
besides his faculty of writing sound history. He was one
lix
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION of the most splendid persons of his time, 'of frank and noble conditions and richly dressed,' 'grand et hauz et personables de riches habits et stoffes,' with ermine, sendal, and precious stones; 'the fashion of his house was this, and

Hospitality 'he had in this way instructed his squires of honour that 'without consulting their master if they saw any gentle 'stranger, whether prelate or knight or squire, they invited 'him forthwith to dinner or supper, and any prince who 'visited Liége was brought to dine with Jean le Bel. When

Magnificence 'he went to church on holidays there was as large a follow-'ing as for the Bishop of Liége, forty or fifty in his train, 'who all came to dinner with him afterwards; he was looked 'up to as their head by his kinsfolk and friends, and took

Character and 'care of their advancement. He had good natural sense 'and good demeanour more than most men, he was blithe 'and gay and glad, and could make songs and virelays, and 'followed mirth and pastime; and in this course of life he 'obtained both heritages and pensions. By the grace of 'God he lived all his days in prosperity and good health, 'and was more than eighty years old when he died, and 'according to his rank were his obsequies reverently and 'costly carried out. He left great possessions to two sons, 'twins, named John and Giles, who were born to him when 'he was old of a damsel of good family belonging to the 'house of Des Prez.' The description of Jean le Bel's magnificence might make one a little anxious about his talent for literature—it is consistent with florid tastes; but of these there is no sign in his Chronicles, and his narrative has less affinity with the ermine and sendal and the rich display of his household than with the habits of warfare which he learned in following his lord Jean de Beaumont. His client, Jean de Hemricourt, has said not a word too much in prais-ing the liberal mind of his master: Jean le Bel had a clear head and a frank bearing, and his Chronicles are not affected by any touch of vainglory. He had imagination, among

Scholar
Syr John Froissart

other things, and was a lover of heroic poetry; though it is not so pronounced as in some of the earlier French historical prose, there is in Jean le Bel the tone of the epic language, the phrasing of the chansons de geste; it has been noted also in Froissart. In Jean le Bel's expedition in England with John of Hainault the places that belonged to King Arthur gain his attention, and he is pleased when he writes the name of 'Carduel in Wales which was in the Observer days of Arthur,' or 'a white abbey which in the days of King Arthur was called the Blanche Lande,' and again, 'the castle of Windsor that King Arthur built, and where the Table Round was first established.' He remembers the famous sieges made by Charlemagne, Alexander, and Godfrey; and compares the valour shown at Nevill's Cross to that of Roland and Oliver. He has the same motive as Froissart in bringing out the prowess of good knights and in recording the grand apertures d'armes. At the same time Thinker his judgment is unclouded by any of the magic mists of romance; the vigour of his story is not sophisticated, and indeed his story was begun in a sort of protest against the marvellous exaggerations of common minstrels, the 'jongliours et enchantours en place,' as Froissart calls them in his reference to Jean le Bel’s antipathy for their fables. He writes for 'persons of reason and understanding,' gens de His public raison et d'entendement, in order to displace the bourdes controverses, 'the multitude of words invented and repeated to embellish the rhyme, and the crowd of wonderful achieve- ments told of certain knights and other persons,' all out of measure, and more likely to discredit the subjects of them by their impossibility than in any way to do them honour. This pursuit of a true method is justified by the talents of Method Jean le Bel; his praise of 'soothfastness' is by no means a conventional opening or a hackneyed depreciation of rival authors. Nor does it mean anything prosaic or dull: such things are far removed from the generous heart whose ways
THE CRONYCLE OF

were described by Jean de Hemricourt. He is the author of some of the best known and most highly honoured things in Froissart: the chapters on the surrender of Calais and the devotion of Eustache de St. Pierre, and on the death of the Bruce. He wrote the often-quoted account of the Scots and their warfare, from his own observation; and Froissart, though he studied the same subject on the same ground, did not cancel the report of Jean le Bel in favour of any newer notes of his own. One chapter he struck out, because he would not believe it true; but true or not, it remains as one of the finest things in old French prose—the tragic story of the Countess of Salisbury, the dishonour of King Edward, and the sentence spoken on him by the wronged earl, more lofty, more magnanimous, and more impressive in its power of condemnation than the revenge taken upon Tarquin. Jean le Bel, who can use with good effect the ordinary easy conversational language of medieval French chroniclers, can also rise to the height of a tragic argument in phrases of as much severity and dignity as any Roman author would have found appropriate for such a theme.

Froissart has left out other things also which are worth reading in the original Chronicle. Jean le Bel has a character of his own; and though Froissart’s editing is most judicious for his own purposes, it is not quite the same thing as Jean le Bel speaking in his own person. Jean le Bel was at York in 1327 and Froissart was not; so naturally there is a difference in the two versions. Froissart keeps everything that he can, but he cannot keep the directness and immediate force of the older historian’s remarks on what he actually saw:—‘Incontinent after dinner there began a great fray between some of the grooms and pages of the strangers and the archers of England who were lodged among them in the said suburbs.’ Froissart gives all this, but he cannot speak of it as Jean le Bel goes on to do:—‘And I myself, who was there present, could not enter my lodging to arm me,
Syr John Froissart

‘myself and my companions, so many English did I find about our doors in a mind to wreck and plunder at large; and we saw the arrows flying so thick upon us that it behoved us to withdraw to another place and wait the event along with the others.’ And ‘we fell into the hatred of all the country except the great lords; the people hated us worse than the Scots who were burning their country.’ Things seen and Things heard.

The narrator who can say ‘we’ has an advantage over one who says ‘they’; and Jean le Bel, who saw the smoke of the Scottish fires with his own eyes, is worth listening to apart from Froissart. The smoke of an invading enemy seems to have dwelt in his imagination, for he brings it vividly in his account of 1346, and Froissart here has not kept the touch that emphasises the weakness of the French king:—‘How was it that King Philip who was at Paris a bare seven leagues away, with all his power of lords and men at arms that he had summoned for defence of the country, how was it that he did not fall upon those enemies who were making their smoke and flames fly over his head in Paris, or why did he not at least defend the passage of the river?’

Jean le Bel’s criticism of the two kings is also left out by Froissart, but it is a fine piece of historical censure. Room may be found for it here, not only as an historical note on the matters contained in this First Volume, but even more in order to show the independent value of Jean le Bel’s historical judgment and his gift of plain speaking:—

‘Some who shall hear this history read will wonder why I call England and the King of England “the noble King Edward,” but the other France compared simply “King Philip of France”; so they might think and imagine that I maintained a side and a party. With due respect, I do not write thus out of party leanings, but I do it to honour him who in this history bears himself most nobly: that is the noble King Edward, for whom no honour is too great; for in all his needs he has always taken good counsel, and listened to his
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

people, knights and squires, and honoured each in his degree, and well defended his realm against his enemies, and made large conquests upon them, and ventured his own body at home and forth of his realm along with his men unwavering, and has well paid his soldiers and allies, and freely given of his own: therefore he ought to be willingly served by all and everywhere have the name of noble king. Not thus has the King of France acted, but has let his land in many marches be exiled and wasted, and has in all places kept himself so as to ease his person and keep from danger; and has always trusted poor counsel of clerks and prelates, and even of those who said to him, "Sir, be not dismayed and run no risk of your life, for hardly will you guard against treason; who can tell that any man is loyal? But let this young King of England waste his time in folly and spend his substance; his smoke will not take the kingdom from you, and when he has spent all he must go back; he has not yet conquered Boulogne, Amiens or Saint Omer; when he is gone you may easily make good your losses." Such counsellors King Philip followed, not the lords and barons of his country; but some he put to shameful death, and their heirs disherited. The less should be his praise and honour among all men. Withal, he sore oppressed his country under taxes, and the churches with tithes, and forged bad money in different places, and again called it in and uttered better, and again debased it, so that in trade there was no certainty. And the soldiers were never well paid, but often had to spend of their own, in fault of payment, and also had often to sell their horse and armour before they found the paymasters. A prince who thus behaves himself ought to have the less love from his men; and it is great pity and loss when by ill counsel the realm of France that had surmounted all the world in honour, wit, learning, chivalry, merchandise and all good things is thus tormented and to this mischief brought by its enemies and itself, that he who ought to be lord of it is captive, and nearly all the lords and knights of the land are dead or in prison. Verily I believe it is by miracle that God suffers it so to be. And now I will leave off, I can say no more
SYR JOHN FROISSART

than this, and will return to our matter to speak of the noble King Edward, whom all should love, praise, and honour, for well he has deserved it; God be praised.'

The recovery and publication of Jean le Bel's authentic *Les Vrayes chroniques* work\(^1\) is a gain not so much of new material for French history as of an author with a mind and style of his own, who now has his proper place among the masters of the French tongue. He has not the variety nor the wide range of Froissart. But he writes like a man of honour and a man of good sense, acquainted with great affairs and able to find the right words for them.

Incidentally, and apart from the matter of his book, Jean le Bel will always be interesting through the contrast between the quiet tone of his narrative and the apparent pomp and glory of his manner of living. It must perplex a moralist to find this very unaffected story coming from a man of such splendid ways as those described by the clerk of Hesbaye; while it might also puzzle an economist to explain how the revenue of Jean le Bel was increased under those conditions, which look so much like mere ostentation and prodigality. Such resolution and independence are not easily found in so rich a house. The contrast is like that in the case of Chaucer's Monk, from whom, as he is described in the *Prologue*, one would not expect the 'Tragedies' that he afterwards recites, nor the gravity of his mood and disposition.

VIII

Froissart's *Chronicles* have been found wanting in many Froissart respects, and their credit has been damaged in several places explained by exact historical criticism; but these blemishes, even from and justified the scientific point of view, are small in comparison to his

---

\(^1\) *Les Vrayes chroniques de Messire Jehan le Bel.* Edited in two volumes by M. Potain, Brussels, 1863.
merits and the great amount of news of all sorts that
he has collected and exhibited. Was it possible for him
to have done more than he did by way of ‘justifying’
his history? The wonder is that he could have done so
much, when we consider what a great mass of writing is
published as his work, in prose and verse. And not all of
his work is extant. There was hardly time for him to do
more. Between his researches, his taking of notes, his
composition of new chapters for his Chronicles and his
revision of old work, besides his songs and virelais, his
moral poems, and the leisurely romance of Meliador, he can
seldom have been idle. He was not negligent, though
he may have made mistakes; and it is hard to see how
he could have spent his time better than he did, if he was
to accomplish the enormous labour he had set himself to
get through.

Was he the historian of a declining age, of false chivalry?
He has been so represented, but it is not easy to accept this
opinion about him. He is spoken of sometimes as if his
Chronicles were a romance of chivalry, without substance or
gravity, as if all the life in it were a pageant or a tourna-
ment. But is this really so?

Froissart has the French character of the Fourteenth Cen-
tury. He notes, by the way, that the English think every
one French who uses the Gallic tongue; but although he
would not call himself French, there is no injustice in giving
him the common qualities of the French courtly authors in
the time in which he lived. French literature in the Four-
teenth Century had undoubtedly not a little vanity in it.
The court poetry of Froissart and his contemporaries, includ-
ing Chaucer, was living on ideas and imaginations that had
begun to lose their youth and freshness even before the days
of Guillaume de Lorris, a hundred years and more before
Froissart was born. The motives of the old French heroic
romances were exhausted, and Meliador is the dream of a
Syr John Froissart

INTRODUCTION

shadow; the old lyric motives of Provence and of the Provençal schools in other languages had been repeated for generations before the poets of ballades and rondels adopted new metrical forms without changing the spirit or the common ideas of the old tradition. Meïador, both in Froissart’s narrative couplets and in the rondels and virelais of Duke Wenceslas, is all reminiscence and repetition of conventional common forms, and Meïador is a representative book: if one wish to know what chivalrous poetry had come to in 1380, it is to be found there. It has graces indeed, but there is no strength in it. The strength of poetry is elsewhere at that time: in the Italian study of classical literature and in Chaucer’s following of the Italians.

But this does not dispose of Froissart’s Chronicles, and even Froissart’s poetry, it has been seen, is not all convention and repetition. It is true that in many respects his age was one of literary exhaustion, and it is true also that Froissart remained all his life insensible to the chief new sources of literary strength that were accessible in his time: Froissart’s spirit he had no interest in what was being done in Italy, and in Limitations spirit he came no nearer to his contemporary Petrarch than if they had been living in separate worlds or with a thousand years between them. Italy made no impression on him when he travelled there, and is incomparably less valuable Italy and to him than Spain, which he had never seen. He notes the Spain fortunes of Sir John Hawkwood and his companies in Italy, and some of the business of the Papacy, and with some detail and in his best manner the rise of the Visconti at Milan; but he did not know nor care what Petrarch and Boccaccio were about, and he brought back from his Italian travels nothing in the smallest degree resembling the acquisitions of Chaucer. He was made for the world he lived in; and the meteors that were flickering here and there as intimations of a change that was drawing on, the restlessness, the misgivings by which the spirit of Petrarch was
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION disquieted, had no effect on Froissart, and lay beyond his consciousness. Froissart's soul was at ease:—

‘Coer qui reçoit en bon gré
Ce que le temps li envoie
En bien, en plaisance, en joie,
Son eage use en santé,
Partout dire l'oseroie.’

These moral sentiments of Froissart express his own mind thoroughly:—he took in good part whatever Time sent him, and spent his life happily, quite at home in the world where he found himself. No one would go to him for anything like those intimations of vast unachieved discoveries in literature such as perplex and disturb the life of Petrarch—‘dreaming on things to come’—and make him what he is for every one who has come under his influence. If Froissart had known the letters of Petrarch he would not have liked nor understood them; he would have dismissed them with another of his moral verses, in which the old proverbial judgment is reiterated against those who look for better bread than is made of good wheat:—

‘C'est grand folie de querir
Meilleur pain que de bon froment.’

But if Froissart, compared to Petrarch, be wanting in depth and originality, wanting in perception for anything beyond the ordinary ranges of life, it is not just to put him down as limited or partial in his treatment of his own proper ground. If his work be superficial—and this is what is alleged against him,—at any rate there is a good extent of surface, and many things come into the picture besides the vainglory of the age of chivalry. To judge from some accounts of him, one might imagine that there was a tournament on every second page, and that the matter of the Chronicles was the same as that of Meliadore, where indeed

1 L'Esbinette, l. 1021: virsley.

lxviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the vanities have their own way, and ample room to display themselves. The knight-errant, it is true, is there, as he is in Chaucer’s Prologue, come back from Pruce or Germade. But Robert of Namur or Guy of Châtillon is no more fantastic than Chaucer’s Knight; and as for tournaments, if they are a sign of decay, then the age of chivalry was already far gone long before this, for tournaments are made more of in the sober biography of William the Marshall than in Froissart’s Chronicles. When it is said that Froissart writes as if the whole of life were one long holiday for lords and knights, is there not some confusion between the temper of the historian and the things he writes about? Undoubtedly Froissart takes the whole of life with enjoyment, and his Chronicles, in spite of the falls of princes, are not depressing to read. Nor is the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire: it was written by an historian with the same invincibly happy temperament as Froissart. But the contented minds of Froissart and Gibbon do not misrepresent the facts by leaving out afflictions and distresses. Though Froissart may be kept alive for his fifty years of chronicle-writing by an equanimity of nature that protects him from the strain of tragic emotions and from melancholy, and though his demeanour, like Gibbon’s, may be too placid for readers with a taste for gloom and fire in historical pictures, he does not cover up the miseries of life or cry peace when there is no peace. It is not a theatrical or unreal life in his pages: it is not the less real because it is showy in some of its aspects; and most of the fighting in it is not showy, but grim enough. Froissart is no more ostentatious with his banners and pennons waving in the wind than the Books of Moses are, when they go into details about knobs and bowls and lavers, and ram-skins dyed red. And much of the warfare in Froissart, as in Jean le Bel, is chivalrous just in the sense that any war may be chivalrous where there is courage and heroism. It
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRO-duction

would not be grossly misleading to say of Froissart that life as he represents it is all ambushes and surprises, hungry and heavy marching in pursuit of invisible enemies, all weariness, wounds, death, and captivity of good knights. The end of Chandos was rather wretched — ‘he slode and fell down at the joining with his enemies,’ and a squire gave him his death-wound with a stroke coming on his blind side, for he had only one eye. The Captal died in prison, and Sir Enguerrand of Coucy died broken-hearted in captivity among the Turks, after he had seen the butchery at Nicopolis, the most pitiful and most shameful ruin of the best knight- hood of Christendom.

It would be easier to prove Froissart a writer of sad stories than a chronicler of the false splendours of chivalry, if one were set down with his book before one to find illustrative passages by turning over his pages. William Morris in his poems from Froissart (in the Defence of Guinevere volume) has discovered more of the spirit of his history than the professed historians who complain of his levity and cheerfulness. Froissart, it is true, does not ponder much on themes like those of Sir Peter Harpdon’s End or Concerning Geoffrey Teste Noire; but he knows the cruelty of war, and if he had wanted knowledge of such griefs, and of the way human beings are wrung by them, he might have learned from Jean le Bel’s heroic work what such things are. But he did not need this instruction.

Froissart’s wars are no doubt influenced by the chivalrous ideal, which counted for something in the life of the Fourteenth Century. Don Quixote, if he had lived in the time of Chaucer’s Knight, would have been considered sound in his principles and not remarkably extravagant in his manner of expressing himself. He might have justified himself by the example of the English knights-bachelors in 1387, who went to win their ladies’ grace in the fields of France, each with a patch over one eye. He might have quoted the lxx
Syr John Froissart

Companion of Ywain of Wales, on the French side in 1369, who was commonly called the Pursuivant of Love. King John of France founded the Company of the Star, which was to be like the Round Table of King Arthur; and Chandos and a French lord disputed before Poitiers because each of them bare one manner of device, a blue lady embroidered in a sunbeam above on their apparel. But if this be vanity, it is not all that Froissart has to tell: the battle of Poitiers was a real battle, and not a mere thing in a story-book. Froissart understands the gentlemen who went into war, their bodies to advance, to win honour; but it is no design of his to turn them into absolute romantic knights. Froissart, who could write verse about a small boy making dams in running water at Valenciennes, was not offended by real things, and never tried to alter the reports he got (from James Audley and others) in order to make his Chronicles look more like the adventures of Meliadore. He shows no preference for the kind of fighting which is most like tournaments. Joinville praises a battle in which there is nothing but clean strokes in the mellay, no interference of bolts or arrows; but Froissart knows many different kinds of fighting, and does not disparage any of them for the sake of that which was of course the noblest. His great captains and his other valiant men are not reduced to the abstract type of chivalry. Bertrand du Guesclin is perhaps not treated with full justice by Froissart, but at any rate he is one of the ‘prowest,’ and he is very different from the conventional romantic hero. Froissart understands the practical hard-working military man, from Edward the Black Prince, Sir Walter Manny, Sir John Chandos, Bertrand du Guesclin, Oliver Clisson, to the less eminent ranks of Sir Robert Knolles and Sir John Hawkwood, and lower than these the chiefs of brigands, Bacon, Crokart, Geoffrey Teste Noire, and Aymerigot Marcel. The adventures are varied, the men engaged in them are not all alike.

lxxi
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

Froissart's story resembles Barbour's in many places—not only where they are telling of the same matter in the same order, as in the scene of the death of the Bruce, but where the same kind of incident is found in different places. The 'sleights' of Barbour are like the 'subtilties' of Froissart, especially where there are fortresses to be taken. Any one who has been told that Froissart is all tournaments and vanity should read the story of the ingenious person who won the city and castle of Évreux, 'the which as than was French,' in Berners, cap. clxxvi.: how he talked pleasantly to the captain and got into the castle, with authentic news that the kings of Denmark and Ireland had made an alliance and were going to destroy all England. It might have had a place among the 'interludes and jeopardies' of the Bruce, along with the story of William Bunnock at Linlithgow or the 'trains' made by Sir James Douglas.

Omissions

Some of the liveliest of Froissart's episodes did not find their way into the vulgate text, and so did not reach Lord Berners. One of these is the game of chess between King Edward and the Countess of Salisbury; another is the story of Oliver de Mauny at the siege of Rennes. They are worth considerably more than most commentaries and criticisms, and the readers of Froissart may be left to form their own judgment upon them, as upon the rest of the book to which these omitted chapters belong. This is the story of the king's game of chess. In Berners, cap. lxxvii. (p. 195 in this volume), it reads, 'All that day the kyng taryed ther,' etc. From that point the fuller version goes on as follows, unhappily not in the English of Lord Berners:—

King Edward plays Chess

'After dinner the tables were removed. Then the king sent lord Reynold Cobham and lord Richard Stamford to the host and the companions who were lodged under the castle to know how they did, and that they should make ready, for he wished to ride on and follow the Scots, and that they should send on all the carriages and the munitions, and by the evening he would

lxxii
Syr John Froissart

be with them. And he ordered the Earl of Pembroke to make guard with five hundred lances, and that they should wait for him on the field till he should come, and all the rest should ride forward. The two barons did all as he commanded.

And he remained still in the castle with the lady, and hoped that before his departure he would have response more agreeable than he had had as yet. So he called for chess, and the lady had it brought in. Then the king asked the lady to play with him, and she consented gladly, for she made him all the good cheer that she might. And well was she bound thereto, for the king had done her a fair service in raising the siege of the Scots before the castle, and again she was obliged because the king was her right and natural lord in fealty and homage. At the outset of the game of chess, the king, who wished that something of his might be won by the lady, challenged her, laughing, and said, "Madam, what will your stake be at the game?" And she answered: "And yours, sir?" Then the king set down on the board a fair ring that he wore with a large ruby. Then said the countess, "Sir, sir, I have no ring so rich as yours is." "Madam," said the king, "that which you have, set it down, and consider not so narrowly."

Then the countess to please the king drew from her finger a light ring of gold of no great worth. And they played at chess together, the lady with all the wit and skill she could, that the king might not hold her for too simple and ignorant; and the king played false, and would not play as well as he knew. And there was scarce pausing between the moves but the king looked so hard on the lady that she was all put out of countenance, and made mistakes in her play. And when the king saw that she had lost a rook or a knight or what not, he would lose also to restore the lady's game.

They played on till at last the king lost, and was checkmate with a bishop. Then the lady rose and called for the wine and comfits, for the king, as it seemed, was about to depart. And she took her ring and put it on her finger, and she would fain have had the king take back his own again, and presented it to him and said: "Sir, it is not meet that in my
THE CRONYCLE OF

house I should take anything of yours, but rather you should take of mine.” “Nay, madam,” said the king, “but the game has made it so, and if I had won be assured that I should have carried yours away.” The countess would not press the king further, but went to one of her damsels, and gave her the ring, and said: “When you shall see that the king has gone out, and taken leave of me, and is about to mount his horse, do you go forward and render him his ring again, courteously, and say that in no wise will I retain it, for it is not mine.” And the damsel answered that so she would readily do.

“‘At this the wine and the comfits came in. And the king would not take of them before the lady, nor the lady before him, and there was there a great debate all in mirth between them. Finally it was agreed, to make it short, that it should be together, as soon the one as the other. After this, and when the king’s knights had all drunk, the king took leave of the lady, and said to her aloud, so that no one should comment upon it: “Madam, you abide in your house, and I will go to follow my enemies.” The lady at these words courted low before the king. And the king freely took her by the hand and pressed it a little, to his contentment, in sign of love. And the king watched until knights and damsels were busy taking leave of one another; then he came forward again to say two words alone: “My dear lady, to God I commend you till I return again, praying you to advise you otherwise than you have said to me.” “My dear lord,” answered the lady, “God the Father glorious be your conduct, and put you out of all base and dishonourable thoughts, for I am and ever shall be ready to serve you to your honour and mine.”

“Then the king went out of the room, and the countess also, who conveyed him to the hall where his palfrey was. Then the king said that he would not mount while the lady was there, so to make it short the countess took her full and final leave of the king and his knights and returned to her bower with her maidens. When the king was about to mount, the damsel whom the countess had instructed came to the king and knelt; and when the king saw her he raised her up very speedily, and
SYR JOHN FROISSART

thought that she would have spoken of another matter than
she did. Then she said: "My lord, here is the ring which my
lady returns to you, and prays you not to hold it as discourtesy,
for she wishes not to have it remaining with her. You have
done so much for her in other manners that she is bound, she
says, to be your servant always." The king, when he heard
the damsel and saw his ring that she had, and was told of the
wish and the excuse of the countess, was all amazed. Never-
theless he made up his mind quickly according to his own will;
and in order that the ring might remain in that house as he
had intended, he answered briefly, for long speech was need-
less, and said: "Mistress, since your lady likes not the little
gain that she won of me, let it stay in your keeping." Then
he mounted quickly and rode out of the castle to the lawn
where his knights were, and found the Earl of Pembroke wait-
ing him with five hundred lances and more. Then they set
out all together and followed the host. And the damsel
returned and told the king's answer, and gave back the ring
that the king had lost at chess. But the countess would not
have it and claimed no right to it: the king had given it to
the damsel, let her take it and welcome. So the king's ring
was left with the damsel.'

The story of Oliver de Mauny at the siege of Rennes, and
of John Bolton and the partridges, belongs to 1357, and
would have appeared in Berners, cap. clxxv., where he gives
the coming of the young bachelor 'Bertrande of Glesquyne,'
but not of his cousin:

'And there were newly come to the siege two young The Adven-
bachelors, cousins German, who were afterwards much renowned ture of the
in the realm of France and the realm of Spain, as you will hear
Partridges
further on in this history. These two cousins were named
Bertrand du Guescin and Oliver de Mauny. And the said
Bertrand during the siege fought in single combat with an
English knight, likewise renowned, called Sir Thomas Dag-
worth; and the combat was appointed for three courses with a
lance, three strokes of an axe, and three strokes of a dagger.

lxxv
INTRODUCTION

And these two champions acquitted themselves valiantly to their great honour; howbeit the said Bertrand gave such a stroke of his axe to the said Englishman that he smote him to the ground with violence. And there it ended. And they were eagerly watched by those within and also by those without: then they left the field without great hurt to either. So the Duke Henry of Lancaster kept his siege before Rennes a long time, and made many assaults, but nothing gained there.

‘Now it happened one day during the siege that an English knight, Sir John Bolton, a man of valour in war, had been for sport to the fields with his sparrowhawk, and had taken six partridges. He mounted his horse, armed at all points, with his partridges in his hand, and came before the barriers of the city and began calling to the townsman that he wished to speak with Sir Bertrand du Guesclin. Now it chanced that Oliver de Mauny was standing above the gate to watch the condition of the English host; and he perceived and was aware of the Englishman with his partridges, and asked him what he wanted and whether he would sell or give his partridges to the ladies who were in the place besieged. “By my faith,” answered the English knight to Oliver, “if you dare bring your bargain nearer and come and fight with me, you have found your champion.” “In God’s name,” said Oliver, “yes, wait for me and I will pay you on the nail.” Then he came down from the walls to the ditches, which were all full of water, and plunged in and swam, and crossed them, armed at all points save the harness of the legs and his gauntlets, and came to his chapman who was waiting for him. Then they fought, valiantly and long, and quite near to the host of the Duke of Lancaster, who looked on well pleased, and forbade any one going forth to them. And also those of the town and the ladies who were there took great delight in watching them. The two valiant men fought on, and the end of it was that Sir Oliver de Mauny overcame his chapman, Sir John Bolton, with his partridges, and carried him off without his leave and sore wounded across the ditches and into the town, and presented him to the ladies with the said partridges, and they received him gladly and did him great honour.'
SYR JOHN FROISSART

"It was not long afterwards that Oliver felt his wounds pain-
ing him sore, and could not get the herbs that he knew would
cure him. So he called upon his prisoner courteously and said:
"Sir John, I am hard wounded; and I know some herbs out
there which with the help of God would cure and restore me.
Now, I will tell you what you shall do: you shall go out from
here and go to the Duke of Lancaster your lord, and bring me
a safe-conduct for myself and three men for a month till I am
healed; and if you can obtain it for me I will let you go free,
and if not, then you will return here to be my prisoner as
before." At this news Sir John Bolton was well pleased, and
went away to the English court, where he was gladly welcomed
by all, and by the Duke of Lancaster no less, who rallied him
well about the partridges. And then he made his request and
the Duke granted it, and gave him the safe-conduct written
and sealed. Sir John returned at once with the safe-conduct,
and gave it to his captor, Sir Oliver de Mauny, who said that
he had done admirably and forthwith freed him from his
captivity. And they set out together from the good city of
Rennes and came to the host of the Duke of Lancaster, who
was glad to see them, and received them heartily and showed
great kindness to Oliver. And the Duke said that he had a
noble heart, and proved that he would yet be a valiant man
and of great prowess, "when to get my safe-conduct and a
few simples he had released a prisoner who might well have
paid him ten thousand florins of gold." After this the Duke
appointed a room to lodge Oliver de Mauny, and ordered it to
be richly hung and furnished, and every one to give and afford
him all that he might require. There was Oliver housed in
the camp of the Duke, and the surgeons and physicians of the
Duke attended him and visited him every day; and also the
Duke came often to see him and cheer him. And he stayed
there and was healed of his wounds; then he took his leave of
the Duke of Lancaster, and thanked him much for the great
honour he had done him; and also he took leave of the other
gentlemen and of Sir John Bolton, his prisoner that had been.
But at his going the Duke of Lancaster gave him some fine
xes le rigola des perdus

lxxvii
THE CRONYCLE OF

plate in a present and said to him: “Mauny, I pray you commend me to the ladies, and tell them that we have often wished for partridges for them.” With this Sir Oliver departed and came to the city of Rennes, where he was joyfully received by every one great and small, and by the ladies, for whom he had plenty of news; and more especially to his cousin Bertrand de Guescelin he told the whole of his adventure, and they had much mirth of it between them, for they loved one another well, and afterwards till their death, as you shall hear recounted later in this story.

Chaucer was harder than he need have been to the two cousins in his Monk’s Tragedy of Peter of Spain: whatever ‘cursedness’ they may have brewed later for the ally of the Black Prince, this episode would make one think well of Mauny, ‘wicked nest’ though Chaucer calls him. Another passage of Chaucer comes to mind in another way to illustrate the history of Froissart: the battle of Actium in the Legend of Cleopatra, saint and martyr, has its companion, if not its original, in Froissart’s sea battle at La Rochelle on St. John’s Eve, 1372 (Berners, cap. ccxcvii.-ccxcix.), when the Earl of Pembroke was taken. The Spaniards are not said to have thrown pease on the hatches to make them ‘slidder,’ as was done at Actium; but the nature of the business is the same in both, and no more and no less chivalrous in either than the affair of the Shannon and the Chesapeace.

Description with Froissart is seldom employed for the mere sake of ornament. He has not in his prose, and not very noticeably in his poetry, the common taste of the Middle Ages for elaborate catalogues of furniture and minute descriptions of works of art, such as the sculptures at the beginning of the Romance of the Rose, or the pictures of the Æneid in Chaucer’s temple of Venus in the first book of the House of Fame. When he takes up this kind of work, as in the pageants for the queen’s entry into Paris in 1389, he does it with a will, but he does not introduce lxxviii
SYR JOHN FROISSART

such things irrelevantly. Generally it will be found that where he is most brilliant with his scenery and properties he is also most dramatic: they accompany the action, and do not impede one’s view of it. He is very particular about the way things appeared on the blazing day when King Charles vi. fell into his frenzy (Berners, ii. clxxxvii.)—

‘The French King rode upon a fair plain in the heat of the sun, which was as then of a marvellous height, and the King lost his Wits had on a jack of black velvet, which sore chafed him, and on his head a single bonnet of scarlet, and a chaplet of great pearls which the Queen had given him at his departure, and he had a page that rode behind him bearing on his head a chapeau of Montauban bright and clear shining against the sun, and behind that page rode another bearing the King’s spear painted red and fringed with silk, with a sharp head of steel; the Lord de la River had brought a dozen of them with him from Toulouse, and that was one of them; he had given the whole dozen to the King, and the King had given three of them to his brother the Duke of Orleans and three to the Duke of Bourbon. And as they rode thus forth the page that bare the spear, whether it were by negligence or that he fell asleep, he let the spear fall on the other page’s head that rode before him, and the head of the spear made a great clash on the bright chapeau of steel. The King, who rode but afoot them, with the noise suddenly started, and his heart trembled, and into his imagination ran the impression of the words of the man that stopped his horse in the forest of Mars, and it ran into his thought that his enemies ran after him to slay and destroy him, and with that abuse he fell out of his wit by feebleness of his head, and dashed his spurs to his horse and drew out the sword and turned to his pages, having no knowledge of any man, weening himself to be in a battle enclosed with his enemies, and lift up his sword to strike, he cared not where, and cried and said: “On, on upon these traitors!”’

Here no doubt an educated taste would blame the excessive notice of particulars, as Dante was criticised by Warton
THE CRONYCLE OF

for relating things ‘circumstantially and without rejection.’
But Froissart does not always write so vividly, and here the circumstances are given ‘without rejection,’ because he is leading up to the event that gives them all their right proportion; his mind is not like that of the conventional poets who were accustomed to put in a description of a king’s pavilion or of pictures in a hall when they could not think of anything better to fill out their story. Froissart’s descriptive passages are not the lazy intervals in his history, like the pauses for ornamental catalogues of precious things in the old French romances, not to speak of other and more classical kinds of poem. Froissart’s mode of description varies with the dramatic interest of the scene—taking ‘dramatic’ to mean generally whatever belongs to the action. He is never still for a moment. He does not put down blocks of inanimate detail between his passages of adventure. His writing is made what it is principally through his sense of time—that is, his sense of the way things change their appearance as the plot develops itself. There is another chapter which shows this plainly enough: the description of Edward III., as admiral, waiting for the Spanish fleet in 1350—an addition of Froissart’s own to the matter he borrowed from Jean le Bel, and an example of the strength of his early work even before he had come to rely entirely on his own materials. Unfortunately this did not come into Lord Berners’ copy, the early French Editions having a bad text about that part, confused, abridged, and padded with extracts from other chronicles:—

The King as Admiral

‘The King of England, who was at sea with his fleet, had given order fully for all that was to be done and for the manner of engaging the enemy, and had made my Lord Robert of Namur captain of a ship, which was called La Sale du Roy, where all his household was. And the King sat on the quarter-deck of his ship, wearing a jack of black velvet, and on his head a black beaver hat that became him well. And as I was told lxxx
SYR JOHN FROISSART

by those who were with him that day, he was as merry as he had ever been in his life, and made his minstrels play before him a dance of Almaine that Sir John Chandos, who was with him, had newly brought over. And further for his pastime he made the said knight sing to the minstrels’ music, and took great delight in it. And ever he looked aloft, for he had set a watch in the topcastle of his ship to give warning when the Spaniards came on.

‘Now when the King was taking his pleasure thus, and all the knights very glad to see him of such good cheer, the watch that saw the Spaniards heave in sight said:—“Ho! I see a ship, and it looks like a ship of Spain.”’ Then the minstrels ceased; and he was asked if he saw more. Not long after he answered and said, “Yes, I see two—and three—and four.” And then when he saw the main fleet:—“I see so many, God help me, that I cannot tell them all.” Then the King and his people knew that it was the Spaniards. Then he bade sound his trumpets, and all their ships drew in to be more in order and better for defence, for they knew that they should have battle since the Spaniards came in so large a fleet. By this time it was late, upon the hour of vespers or thereabout; and the King called for wine and drank, as also did all his knights, and put his basnet on his head, and so did the others.’

Froissart has so often been praised for picturesque work, that it is allowable to refine a little about the excellence of this, and to observe that it is plainly dramatic, and only picturesque in an incidental way, the imaginative vision of Froissart being wakened to the picturesque things in the scene—as in that other of the madness of the King of France—by his sympathy with the dramatic life in it. The figure of the king would be nothing much without the suspense of the adventure approaching. What Froissart feels most vividly and with most delight is not the charm of the king’s majesty nor yet the accompaniment of Chandos’s Almain, the minstrels and the song, but the movement of the hour as it passes, and its effect on the king’s mind. The gesture
THE CRONYCLE OF

INTRODUCTION

of the king, as his eyes shift to the look-out on the maintop,
is what really makes the value of Froissart’s description,
and the other points in the story are lively because of this
interest in the future event. There is nothing very deep or
very far fetched in the art of Froissart, but it is not untrue or
irrelevant. It aims at the centre, and is kept to its task and
carried through it by an instinctive pleasure in the dramatic
motives, though these are little elaborated or analysed.

Thus with all his defects he is one of the chief medieval
writers, and his work is the culmination of a great medieval
school, the school of adventurous history, which begins in
those heroic poems of France, whose old forms were still
available in Froissart’s time for the epic of Bertrand du
Guesclin.¹ That poem, however, was the last of its heroic
race, and prose had come to be more generally convenient
for historical work, as Froissart found in his youth. It had
learned some of its capabilities before Froissart began;
indeed, he added little to the school of historical prose except
his wider range and his indefatigable spirit. He had models
in his predecessors for almost everything he did, and he is
inferior to some of them in some things. He cannot have
more dignity than Villehardouin, more weight of expression
than Jean le Bel; Joinville had more intimate knowledge of the life he wrote about, and his reminiscences come from a deeper source. Froissart completes the older
school, however, in a way that was scarce possible later.
He carried on the medieval love of adventure and the old
simple methods of story-telling into a time when other
fashions were making themselves evident and claiming to
be recognised. Before the new generations break in, before
the ideals of Petrarch come into possession of the world,
Froissart takes leisure to look about him, and spends fifty

¹ La Vie du vaillant Bertran du Guesclin (pas Cuelier), edited in Documents
inédits sur l’histoire de France, 1839; a chanson de geste in Alexandrines:—

'Seigneurs or escoutes, pour Dieu le roi divin.'

lxxxi
Syr John Froissart

years in a large comprehensive history, where the life of the world is represented according to the medieval traditions of good narrative. He was well equipped and well protected. He had no suspicion nor misgiving about the new fashions, and took no notice of their allurements; the Humanities and their new scholarship found him impenitent and insensible. His humanism was of an older and more Gothic kind, which very naturally was disparaged as too quaint and barbarous when the Italian classical rules of poetry and rhetoric began to dominate the literature of Europe. But his work Narrative remains with that of the other old French historians to prove how well the Middle Ages understood some essential principles of narrative, and even of grammar, when that liberal art is taken liberally. He does not indeed represent all the powers and virtues of medieval literature; but though other writers may have gone deeper and higher, none before him had commanded so wide a field with so little sign of labour and weariness. 'Wise and imaginative,' the 'sages et imaginatifs' terms that he is fond of using in his praise of kings and lords, are not inapplicable to Froissart, though the wisdom and imagination may be different from those of the greatest masters. He had at any rate the wisdom that he claimed for himself—of taking things as they came; and his imagination was of the same kind. It saved him from false rhetoric, and Lord Berners in translating him did more for the humanitarian than when he adapted the examples of the Spanish rhetorical school. Montaigne, who is entitled to Montaigne speak for the new age, has given his opinion, and will hardly be contradicted when he pronounces Guevara a little overpraised, or when he discovers something akin to his own freedom in the variety of Froissart.

W. P. K.
NOTE

For this Edition, Utterson’s reprint of Pynson has been used: the text has been collated with the original. Punctuation has been revised throughout: in many cases Pynson’s has been preferred before Utterson’s. In spelling, u and v have been distinguished, and capital letters have been employed where it seemed convenient. In some places the text has been emended, with Pynson’s reading put in the margin and noted ‘P.’ Several new readings here adopted are those of Mr. G. C. Macaulay in his Edition of Berners for the ‘Globe’ series: a book to which the present Editor wishes to acknowledge many obligations.

The erroneous proper names are a most serious difficulty. To impose new names on an old text seemed violent. How is one to correct ‘therle of Anzell and therle of Sanzes,’ for instance? ‘Don Tello’ and ‘Don Sancho’ are not in terms of Bourchier’s language, and to borrow the ‘Dans Telles’ or ‘Dans Sanzes’ of the French would be equally impossible. The names, then, have been kept, with some minor corrections. Berners, as he says in his Preface, meant to keep the difficult names as he found them; so here the first French text of A. Verard (1495?) has been taken to control the mistakes of the English printers. An Index of Names which will appear in Vol. vi. will explain difficulties of this sort; in the meantime the more important cases are placed in the margin. The Editor is much indebted for help in this, and in collation of texts, to Mr. J. P. Anderson of the British Museum, and to Mr. R. W. Chambers of University College, London.
HERE BEGYNNETH THE FIRST VOLUM OF

SYR JOHAN FROYSSART


[1528]
THE PREFACE
OF JOHAN BOURCHIER, KNYGHT,
LORD BERNERS,
TRANSLATOUR OF THIS PRESENT CRONCYCLE

What condygne graces and thankes ought men to gyve to the writers of historyes, who with their great labours, have done so moche profyte to the humayne lyfe? They shewe, open, manifest and declare to the redor, by example of olde antyquite, what we shulde enquire, desyre, and folowe; and also, what we shulde eschewe, avoyde, and utterly flye: for whan we (beynge unexpert of chaunces) se, beholde, and rede the auncent actes, gestes, and dedes, howe and with what labours, daungers, and paryls they were gested and done, they right greatly admonest, ensigne, and teche us howe we maye lede forthe our lyves. And farther, he that hath the perfyte knowledge of others joye, welthe, and highe prosperite, and also trouble, sorowe, and great adversyte, hath theexpert doctryne of all parylles. And albeit that mortall folke are marveylously separated, both by lande and water, and right wonderously sytyate; yet are they and their actes (done peradventure by the space of a thousande yere) compact togyder by thistographier, as it were the dedes of one selfe cyte, and in one mannes lyfe. Wherfore I say, that historie may well be called a divyne provydence; for as the celestyall bodys above complecte all and at every tyme the univerall worlde, the creatures therin conteyneyed, and all their dedes, semblably so dothe the history. Is it nat a right noble thynge for us, by the fautes and errours of other,
THE CRONYCLE OF

THE
PREFACE
OF
THE
TRANSLATOUR

to amende and erect our lyfe into better? We shulde nat seke and acquyre that other dyd; but what thynge was most best, most laudable, and worthely done, we shulde putte before our eyes to folowe. Be nat the sage counsayles of two or thre olde fathers in a cyte, towne, or countre, whom long age hath made wyse, discret, and prudent, far more praysed, lauded, and derely loved than of the yonge menne? Howe moche more than ought hystories to be commended, praysed, and loved, in whom is encluded so many sage counsayls, great reasons, and hygh wisdoms of so innumerabule persons, of sondry nacyons, and of every age, and that in so long space as four or fyve hundred yere. The most profyt-
able thynge in this worlde for the instytution of the humayne lyfe is hystorie. Ones, the contynuall reddyng therof maketh yonge men equall in prudence to olde men, and to olde fathers stryken in age it mynystreth esperyence of thynge. More, it yeldeth private persons worthy of dignyte, rule, and governaunce: it compelleth themperours, hygh rulers, and governours to do noble dedes, to thende they may optayne immortall glory: it exciteth, moveth, and stereth the strong hardy warriours, for the great laude that they have after they ben deed, promptly to go in hande with great and harde parels, in defence of their countre: and it prohibytyeth reprovable persons to do mischevous dedes, for feare of infamy and shame. So thus, through the monu-
mentes of writynge, whiche is the testymony unto vertue, many men have ben moved, some to bylde cytes, some to devyse and establishe lawes right profytale, necessarie, and behovefull for the humayne lyfe: some other to fynde newe artes, craftes, and sciences, very requisite to the use of man-
kynde. But above all thynge, wherby mans welthe ryseth, speciall laude and praise ought to be gyven to historie: it is the keper of suche thinges as have ben vertuouslye done, and the wytnesse of yvell dedes: and by the benefite of hystorie all noble, highe, and vertuous actes be immortall. What moved the strong and seuer Hercules to enterpryse in his lyfe so many great incomparable labours and paryl? Certaynly nought els but that for his meryt immortalyte mought be gyven to hym of all folke. In semblable wyse dyd his imytator, noble duke Theseus, and many other innumerabule
SYR JOHN FROISSART

worthy princes and famouse men, whose vertues ben redeemed from oblyvion and shyne by historie. And whereas other monumentes in processe of tyme by varyable chaunces are confused and lost: the vertue of history dyffused and spreede throughe the unyversall worlde, hath to her custos and kepar, it (that is to say, tyme), whiche consumeth the other writynges. And albeit that those menne are right worthy of great laude and praye, who by their writynges shewe and lede us the waye to vertue: yet nevertheless, the poems, lawes, and other actes that they founde devysed and writ, ben mixed with some domage: and somtyme for the trueth they ensigne a man to lye. But onelye hystorie, truely with wordes representyng the actes, gestes, and dedes done, complecteth all profyte: it moveth, stereth, and compelleth to honestie; detesteth, erketh, and abhorreth vices: it extolleth, enhaunceth, and lyfeth up suche as ben noble and vertuous; depresseth, poystereth, and thrusteth downe such as ben wicked, yvell, and reprovable. What knowleage shulde we have of auncyent thynge past, and historie were not? whiche is the testymony therof, the lyght of trouthe, the maysters of the lyfe humayne, the presydent of remembrance, and the messanger of antiquyte. Why moved and stered Phaleryus the kynge Ptholome, oft and dilygently to rede bokes? Forsothe for none other cause, but that those thynge are founde writen in bokes, that the frendes dare nat shewe to the prince. Moch more I wolde fayne write of the incomparable profyte of hystorie, but I feare me that I shulde to sore tourment the reder of this my preface; and also I doute nat but that the great utilitye therof is better knownen than I couldde declare: wherfore I shall brevely come to a poyn. Thus, when I advertysed and remembred the manyfolde comodyties of hystorie, howe benefyclall it is to mortall folke, and eke howe laudable and merytoryous a dede it is to write hystories, fixed my mynde to do some thyng therin: and ever whan this mymaginacyon came to me, I volved, toured, and rede many volumes and bokes, conteynynge famouse histories. And amonge all other, I rede dilygently the four volumes or bokes of sir Johan Froysart of the countrey of Heynaulte, written in the Frenche tonge, whiche I judged comodyous, necessarie, and
THE CRONYCLE OF

THE PROFYTABLE TO BE HADDE IN ENGLYSSHE, SITHE THEY TREAT OF THE NAMEUCES DONE IN OUR PARTIES; THAT IS TO SAY, IN ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAYNGE, PORTYNGALE, SCOTLANDE, BRETAyne, FLAUNDERS, AND OTHER PLACES ADJOYNYNG; AND SPECIALLY THEY REDOUNDE TO THE HONOUR OF ENGLYSHEMEN. WHAT PLEASURE SHALL IT BE TO THE NOBLE GENTILMEN OF ENGLANDE TO SE, BEHOLDE, AND RIDE THE HIIGHE ENTERPRISES, FAMOUS ACRES, AND GLORIOUS DEDES DONE AND ACHYVED BY THEIR VALYANT AUNCEYTOURS? FORSOTHE AND GOD, THIS HATH MOVED ME AT THE HIIGHE COMAUNDEMENT OF MY MOOST REDOUTED SOVERAYNE LORDE KYNGE HENRY THE VIII. KYNG OF ENGLANDE AND OF FRANCE, AND HIIGHE DEFENDER OF THE CHRISTEN FAYTHE, ETC., UNDER HIS GRACIOUS SUPPORTACYON, TO DO MY DEVOYRE TO TRANSLATE OUT OF FRENCH INTO OUR MATERNALL ENGLYSSHE TONGE THE SAYD VOLUMES OF SIR JOHAN FROYSSART: WHICHE CRONYCLE BEGINNETH AT THE RAYNGE OF THE MOOST NOBLE AND VALYANT KYNGE EDWARD THE THYRDE, THE YERE OF OUR LORDE A THOUSANDE THRE HUNDRED AND SIXTENE: AND CONTYNUETH TO THE BEGINNUNG OF THE REIGNE OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH, THE YERE OF OUR LORDE GOD A THOUSANDE AND Foure hundred: the space bytwene is threscore and fourtene yeres; requyrynge all the reders and herers therof to take this my rude translacion in gre. And in that I have nat folowed myne authour worde by worde, yet I trust I have ensewed the true reporte of the sentence of the mater; and as for the true namyng of all maner of personages, countreys, cyties, townes, ryvers, or feldes, whereas I coude nat name them properly nor aptely in Englishese, I have written them acordynge as I founde them in Frenche; and though I have nat gyven every lorde, knyght, or squyer his true addycyon, yet I trust I have nat swarwed fro the true sentence of the mater. And there as I have named the dysaunce bytwene places by myles and leages, they must be understande acordying to the custome of the countrie where as they be named, for in some place they be lengar than in some other; in Englannede a leage or myle is well knowne; in France a leage is two myles, and in some place thre: and in other countrie is more or lesse; every nacion hath sondrie customes. And if any faute be in this my rude translacyon, I remyt the correctyon therof to them that discretely shal fynd any reasonable defaute;
SYR JOHN FROISSART

and in their so doynge, I shall pray God to sende them the blysse of heven. Amen.

Thus endeth the preface of sir Johan Bourchier, knight, lorde Berners, translatour of this present cronycle: and herafter foloweth the table, with all the chapiters as they stande in the boke in order, from one to four hundred fyftie and one, whiche be in nombre CCCC. and li. chapiters.
THE TABLE

HERE AFTER FOLLOWETH THE TABLE
OF THIS PRESENT VOLUME

CAP. i. First, the auctours prologue ......... 17
ii. Of them that were moost valiant knights to be made men-
cion of in this boke ................. 19
iii. Of some of the predecessours of kyng Edwarde of Englande 20
iv. Of some of the parentes of this good kyng Edwarde the thyrede 21
v. The first occasyon of the warre bytwene the kynges of Eng-
lande and of France ............... 22
vi. Howe therle Thomas of Lancastre and xxii other great lorde
and knyghtes of Englande were beheded 23
vii. Howe the quene of Englande went and complayned her to the
kyng of Fraunce, her brother, on Sir Hewe Spenser 24
viii. Howe sir Hewe Spenser purchased that the quene Isabell of
Englande was putte out of Fraunce 26
ix. Howe quene Isabell departed out of Fraunce, and entred into
the Empyre ......................... 28
x. Howe quene Isabell arryved in Englande, with Sir John of
Heynalt in her company ........... 31
xi. Howe the quene of Englande besieged kyng Edwarde the
seconde, her housbane, in the towe of Bristowe 34
xii. Howe Sir Hewe Spenser theldre and therle of Arundell were
judged to dethe, ...................... 36
xiii. Howe Sir Hewe Spenser was putte to his judgement ........ 38
xiii. Of the coronacyon of kyng Edwarde the threrde ........ 40
xv. Howe kyng Robert de Breux of Scotlande defyed kyng
Edwarde of Englande .............. 42
xvi. Of the discencion that fell bytwene tharchers of Englande and
them of Heynalt .................... 45
xvii. Of the maner of the Scottes, and howe they make their warre. 48
xviii. Howe the kyng of Englande made his first journey agaynst the
Scottes ............................. 50

8
THE TABLE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CAP.</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xix. Howe kyng Edward was maryed to the lady Philype of Haynall</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xx. Howe kyng Robert of Scotlande dyed</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxi. Howe Philippe of Valloyes was crowned kyng of Fraunce</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxii. Of the batayle of Casell in Flanders</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxiii. Howe therye of Kent and therye Mortymer in Englantye were put to dethe</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxviii. Of the homage that kyng Edward of Englantye made to the Frenche kyng for the duchy of Guyen</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxiv. Howe Sir Robearte of Arthoyse was chased out of the realme of Fraunce</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxv. Howe kyng Edwardes tooke the towne of Berwyke agaynst the Scottes</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxvi. Howe kyng of Fraunce and dyvers other kynges taked on them the crossey to the Holy Lande</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxvii. Howe kyng Philipp of Fraunce and dyvers other kynges taked on them the crossey to the Holy Lande</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxviii. Howe kyng Edwardes counsayled to make warre agaynst the Frenche kyng</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxix. Howe Jaques Dartwell governed the countie of Flaunderes</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxx. Howe certayne nobles of Flaunderes kept the yle of Cagant agaynst thenglysmen</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxi. Of the batayle of Cagant bytwene the Englysmen and Flemyngees</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxii. Howe kyng Edwardes of Englantye made great alyaunces in thempyre</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxiii. Howe kyng Davyd of Scotlande made alyaunce with kyng Philyp of France</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxiv. Howe kyng Edward was made vycar general of thempyre of Almayne</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxv. Howe kyng Edwardes and all his alye dyde defy the Frenche kyng</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxvi. Howe Sir Gaultier of Manny, after the defyaunces declared, made the first journey into Fraunce</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxvii. Howe after the defyaunces the Frenche men entred into Englande</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxviii. Howe kyng Edwardes besieged the cytie of Cambray</td>
<td>112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xl. Howe the kyng of Englantye and the Frenche kyng taker day to fight</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xli. Howe these two kynges ordyned their batayle at Vyronfosse</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xlii. Howe the sayd two kynges departed without batayle</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CAP.</th>
<th>THE TABLE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xlili.</td>
<td>Howe king Edwarde of Engelande toke on him to beare the armes of Fraunce, and the name to be called kyng therof</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xliii.</td>
<td>Howe the Frenchmen brent in the landes of Sir Johan of Heynalt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xlv.</td>
<td>Howe therie of Heynalt toke and distroyed Aubenton and Tharsche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xlvii.</td>
<td>Howe theye of Tourney made a journey into Flandres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xlviii.</td>
<td>Of the journey that duke John of Normandy made into Heynalt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xlix.</td>
<td>Howe theye of Doway made a journey into Ostrenant; and howe the erie of Heynalt was in Englane</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l.</td>
<td>Howe the duke of Normandy layd siege to Thyne the byshoppe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>li.</td>
<td>Of the batayle on the see before Sculse in Flandres, bytwene the kynges of Engelande and the Frenchmen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lii.</td>
<td>Howe kyng Robert of Cylce dyde all that he might to pacify the kynges of Engelande and Fraunce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liii.</td>
<td>Of the counsayle that the kyng of Engelande and his Alyes helde at the towne of Vyllenort</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liii.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Engelande layde siege to the cytie of Tourney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liii.</td>
<td>Howe the erie of Heynalt distroyed the townes of Seclyne and Dorchies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lv.</td>
<td>Howe the Scottes wan agayne a great partes of Scotlande, whyle the siege was before Tourney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lvi.</td>
<td>Of the great assemble that the Frenche kyng made to repayse the siege before Tourney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lvii.</td>
<td>Howe theye of the garyson of Bouhayne distrussed certayne soudyers of Mortaygne before the townes of Conde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lviii.</td>
<td>Of the journey that sir Wylliam Bayleule and sir Walfart de la Croyse made at the bridge of Cresyn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lix.</td>
<td>Howe the erle of Heynault assayled the fortresse of Mortayne, in Picardy, by dyvers maners</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lx.</td>
<td>Howe the erle of Heynalt toke the towne of saynt Amande during the siege before Tourney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxi.</td>
<td>Of the takyng of Sir Charles of Momorency, and of dyvers other Frenchmen, at the brige of Cresyn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxii.</td>
<td>Howe the Flemenches were before saynt Omer during the siege of Turney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxiii.</td>
<td>Howe the siege before Turney was broken up, by reason of a truse</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## THE TABLE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CAP.</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lxxiii. Of the warres of Bretaygne, and howe the duke ther dyed . . .</td>
<td>lxxiv.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxv. Howe the erle of Mountfort toke the towne and castell of Brest . . .</td>
<td>lxxvi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxvii. Howe the erle of Mountfort toke the cyte of Reynes . . .</td>
<td>lxxviii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxviii. Howe therle Mountfort dyde homage to the king of England for the duchy of Breten . . .</td>
<td>lxxix.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxx. Howe the erle Mountfort was somoned to the parlament of Parys, at the request of the lorde Charles of Bloyes . . .</td>
<td>lxxxi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxi. Of the lorde of Fraunce that entred into Bretayne with Sir Charles of Bloyes . . .</td>
<td>lxxii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxii. Howe therle Mountfort was taken at Nauntes, and howe he dyed . . .</td>
<td>lxxiii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxiii. Howe the kyng of Englande the thirde tyme made warre on the Scottes . . .</td>
<td>lxxiv.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxiv. Howe kyng Davyd of Scotlande came with a great host to Newcastell upon Tyne . . .</td>
<td>lxxv.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxv. Howe the Scottes distroyed the Cyte of Dyham . . .</td>
<td>lxxvi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxvi. Howe the Scottes besieged a castell of therle of Salysburies . . .</td>
<td>lxxvii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxvii. Howe the kyng of Englande was in amours of the countesse of Salisbury . . .</td>
<td>lxxviii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxviii. Howe therle of Salisbury and therle Moret were delvered out of prison . . .</td>
<td>lxxix.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxix. Howe sir Charles of Bloyes, with dyvers lorde of Fraunce, toke the Ctyie of Reynes, in Bretayne . . .</td>
<td>lxxx.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxx. Howe sir Charles of Bloyes besieged the countesse of Mountfort in Hanybont . . .</td>
<td>lxxxi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxi. Howe sir Gaulter of Manny brought the Englyshmen into Bretayne . . .</td>
<td>lxxxii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxii. Howe the castell of Conquest was wonne two tymes . . .</td>
<td>lxxxiii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxiii. Howe sir Loyes of Spaygne toke the townes of Dynant and of Gerande . . .</td>
<td>lxxxiv.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxiv. Howe sir Gaulter of Manny discomfyted sir Loyes of Spaygne . . .</td>
<td>lxxxv.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxv. Howe sir Gaulter of Manny toke the castell of Gony in the forest . . .</td>
<td>lxxxvi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxvi. Howe sir Charles of Bloies toke the towne of Carahes . . .</td>
<td>lxxxvii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAP.</td>
<td>THE TABLE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxvii.</td>
<td>Howe sir John Butler and sir Hubert of Fresnoy were rescued fro dethe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxviii.</td>
<td>Howe sir Charles of Bloys toke the towne of Jugon with the castell</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxix.</td>
<td>Of the feat and justes that the kyng of Englands made at London for the love of the countesse of Salisbury</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxx.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englands sent sir Robert of Artosy into Bretayne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxi.</td>
<td>Of the batayle of Gernay, bytwene sir Robert of Arthois and sir Leyes of Spaygne on the see</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxii.</td>
<td>Howe sir Robert of Arthois toke the cite of Vannes in Bretayne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxiii.</td>
<td>Howe sir Robert of Arthois dyed, and where he was buryed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxiv.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englands came into Bretayne to make warre there</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxv.</td>
<td>Howe the lorde Cisson and sir Henry of Leon were taken prisoners before Vannes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxvi.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englands toke the towne of Dynant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxvii.</td>
<td>What lorde of Franconse the duke of Normandy brought into Bretayne against the kyng of Englands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxxviii.</td>
<td>Howe the kynges of Englands and the duke of Normandy were hoost agaynst hoost loged before Vannes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lxxix.</td>
<td>Howe the Frenche kyng beheeded the lorde Cisson and dyvers other lordes of Bretayne and of Normandy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c.</td>
<td>Of the order of saynt George that king Edwarde stablysched in the castell of Wyndsores</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ci.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englands delyvered out of prison sir Henry of Leon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cii.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englands sent the erle of Derby to make war in Gascoyne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ciii.</td>
<td>Howe the erle of Derby conquered the forteresse of Bergerath</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ci.ii.</td>
<td>Howe the erle of Derby conquered dyvers townees and forteresses in bye Gascoyne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cv.</td>
<td>Howe therle of Quenfort was taken in Gascoyne, and delyvered agayne by exchaungé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cvi.</td>
<td>Howe the erle of Layle, lieutenant to the French kyng in Gascoyne, layde siege before Auberoche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cv.ii.</td>
<td>Howe the erle of Derby toke before Auberoche the erle of Layle and dyvers other erles and vycountes, to the nombre of ix</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cviii. Of the townes that therle of Derby wan in Gascoyne, goynge 249
towarde the Ryoll . . .
cix. Howe therle of Derby layde siege to the Ryoll; and howe 251
the towne was yelded to hym .
cx. Howe sir Gaultier of Manny founde in the Ryoll his fathers 253
sepulture .
cxi. Howe the erle of Derby wanne the castell of the Ryoll 255
cxii. Howe the erle of Derby tooke the towne of Maulson, and 257
after the towne of Franche, in Gascoyne .
cxiii. Howe the erle of Derby wanne the cytie of Angoleame 258
cxiii. Howe sir Godfrey of Harcourt was banysshed out of Fraunce 260
cxv. Of the deethe of Jaques Dartvell of Gaunt . . . 260
cxvi. Of the deethe of Willyam, erle of Heynault, who dyed in Frise, 265
and many with him .
cxvii. Howe sir Johan of Heynault became Frenche . 266
cxviii. Of the great hoost that the duke of Normandy brought into 267
Gascoyne agaynst the erle of Derby .
cxix. Howe John Norwich scaped fro Angollem when the towne 270
was yelden Frenche .
cxx. Howe the duke of Normandy layd siege to Aguyllon with 272
a hundred M. men .
cxxi. Howe the kyng of Englande went over the see agayne to 276
rescue them in Aguyllon .
cxxii. Howe the kyng of Englande rode in thre batayls thorow 278
Normandy .
cxxiii. Of the great assemble that the Frenche king made to resyst 281
the kyng of Englande .
cxxiii. Of the batayle of Cane, and howe the Englyshemen toke the 283
towne .
cxxiv. Howe sir Godfray of Harcourt fought with them of Amyens 285
before Parya . . .
cxxvi. Howe the Frenche kyng followed the kyng of Englande into 289
Beauvonoyse .
cxxvii. Howe the bataile of Blanchetake was foughten bytwene the 291
kyng of Englande and sir Godmar du Fay .
cxxviii. Of the order of the Englyshemen at Cressey, and howe they 294
made thre batayls atote .
cxxix. Of thorder of the Frenchmen at Cressey, and howe they 295
regarded the maner of the Englyshemen .
cxxx. Of the bataile of Cressey, bytwene the king of Englande and 297
the Frenche kyng .

18
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CAP.</th>
<th>THE TABLE</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cxxxi.</td>
<td>Howe the next day after the batayle the Englyshmen dis-confyted agayne dyers Frenchmen</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxi.</td>
<td>Howe after the batayle of Cresse the deed men were nombred by the Englyshmen</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxi.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of England layd siege to Calys, and howe all the poore people were put out of the towne</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxi.</td>
<td>Howe the duke of Normandy brake up his siege before Aguyllon</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxv.</td>
<td>Howe sir Galtier of Manny rode thorowe Francye by save conducte to Calays</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxvi.</td>
<td>Howe thearle of Derby the same season toke in Poictou dyvers townes and castels, and also the cytie of Poictiers</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxvii.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Scottes, duryng the siege before Calys, came into Englynde with a great hoost</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxviii.</td>
<td>Of the batayle of Newecastell upon Tyne, bytwene the queene of Englynde and the kyng of Scottes</td>
<td>312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxxxix.</td>
<td>Howe Johan Coplande toke the kyng of Scottes prisoner, and what profyt he gate therby</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe the yonge erle of Flandres ensured the kynges daughter of Englynde</td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe sir Robert of Namur dyd homage to the kyng of Englynde before Calys</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe the Englyshmen wan the Roche Daryen, and howe sir Charles of Bloys layd siege therto</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Of the batayle of Roche Daryen; and howe sir Charles of Bloys was there taken by the Englyshmen</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe the Frenche kyng assembled a great hoost to reysye the kyng of Englynde fro the siege before Calys</td>
<td>324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englynde made the passages about Calys to be well kept, that the Frenche kyng shuld nat aproche to reysye his siege there</td>
<td>325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe the towne of Calys was yelded up to the kyng of Englynde</td>
<td>328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Englynde repeopled the towne of Calys with Englyshmen</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Of the desaynge of a brignant of Languedoc called Bacon</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cxl.</td>
<td>Of another pape called Crocart</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cl.</td>
<td>Howe sir Amery of Pavy, a Lombarde, solde the towne of Calys wherof he was capitayne, to the lorde Geoffrey Charney of France</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE TABLE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CAP.</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cli.</td>
<td>Of the batayle at Calys bytwene the kyng of Englane, under the baner of sir Gaultyer of Manny, and Sir Geoffray of Cherney and the Frenchemen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clii.</td>
<td>Of a chaplet of perles that the kyng of Englane gave to sir Eustace of Hybamont</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cliii.</td>
<td>Of the deth of kyng Phylip of Fraunce, and of the coronacyon of his son Johan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cliii.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Naver made sir Charles of Spayne constable of Fraunce to be slayne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clv.</td>
<td>Of the imposicyon and gabell ordyned in Fraunce by the thre estates for the festes of the warre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clvi.</td>
<td>Howe the Frenche kyng toke the kyng of Naver, and beheeded the erle of Harcourt and other at Roan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clvii.</td>
<td>Of the assemble that the Frenche kyng made to fyght with the prince of Wales, who rode abrode in Berry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clviii.</td>
<td>Howe the prince of Wales toke the castell of Remorenty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clix.</td>
<td>Of the great hoost that the French kyng brought to the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clx.</td>
<td>Of the ordre of the Frenchmen before the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxi.</td>
<td>Howe the cardynall of Piegourt treated to have made agremen bytwene the French kyng and the prince, before the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxii.</td>
<td>Of the batayle of Poicters bytwene the prince of Wales and the Frenche kyng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxiii.</td>
<td>Of two Frenchmen that fled fro the batayle of Poicters, and of two Englyshmen that followed them</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxiii.</td>
<td>Howe kyng Johan of Fraunce was taken prisoner at the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxiv.</td>
<td>Of the gyft that the prince gave to the lorde Audley after the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxvi.</td>
<td>Howe the Englyshmen wan greatly at the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxvii.</td>
<td>Howe the lorde James Audeley gave to his four squires the fyve C. marke of revenewes that the prince had gyven him</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxviii.</td>
<td>Howe the prince made a supper to the French kyng the same day of the batayle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxix.</td>
<td>Howe the prince returned to Burdeaux after the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxx.</td>
<td>Howe the thre estates of Fraunce assembled togyder at Parys after the batayle of Poicters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAP.</td>
<td>THE TABLE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxii.</td>
<td>Howe the three estates sent men of warre agaynst the lorde Godfrey of Harcourt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxii.</td>
<td>Of the batayle of Constances bytwene the lorde Godfrey of Hercourt and the lorde Loys of Ravnall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxiii.</td>
<td>Howe the prince conveyed the Frenche kyng from Burdeaux in to Englands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxvii.</td>
<td>Howe the kynge of Scottes was delievered out of prison</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxv.</td>
<td>Howe the duke of Lancastre leyde siege to Reynes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxvi.</td>
<td>How a knyght of the countie of Evreux, called sir Willyam of Granvyle, wan the cyte and castall of Evreux, the whiche the Frenche kyng had won before from the kyng of Naver</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxvii.</td>
<td>Of the companyons, wherof the Archeprest was chiefe; and howe he was honoured in Avignon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxviii.</td>
<td>Of another sorte of companyons, wherof Ruffyn a Walsheman was chiefe capitayne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxix.</td>
<td>Howe the provost of the marchantes of Parys slewe thre knyghtes in the regentes chambr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxx.</td>
<td>Howe the kyngge of Naver came out of prisone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxi.</td>
<td>Howe the kyngge of Naver preched solemnelye at Parys</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxii.</td>
<td>Of the beginnyng of the rysing of the commene, called the Jaquery, in Beauvosyn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxiii.</td>
<td>Howe the provost of the marchantes of Parys caused walles to be made about the cyte of Parys</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxiii.</td>
<td>Of the batayle at Meaulx in Bry, wher the companyons of the Jaquery were disconffyted by the erle of Foyz and the captall of Beuss</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxv.</td>
<td>Howe Parys was besieged by the duke of Normandy, regent of Fraunce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxvi.</td>
<td>Of the Parisiens that were slayne at sanyt Clude, by the Englysshemen that had ben soudyers in Parys</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxvii.</td>
<td>Of the dethe of the provost of the marchantes of Parys</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clxxxviii.</td>
<td>Howe the kyng of Naver deffyde the realme of Fraunce, the Frenche kyng beynng prisoner in Englands</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE CRONYCLE OF FROISSART

THE FIRST CHAPTRRE

Here begynneth the Prologue of syr John Froissart of the Cronicles of Fraunce, Inglande, and other places adioynynge.

To thentent that the honorable and noble aventures of festis of armes, done and achyved by the warres of France and Inglande, shulde notably be inregistered and put in perpetuall memory, whereby the prewe and hardy may have ensample to incourage them in theyr well doyng, I syr John Froissart wyll treat and recorde an hystorye of great louage and preyse: but or I begyn, I require the Savyour of all the worlde, who of nothyng created al thynges, that he wyll gyve me suche grace and understandyng, that I may continue and persever in such wyse, that who so this proces redeth, or hereth, may take pastaunce, pleasure, and ensample. It is sayd of trouth, that al buyldynge are masoned and wroughte of dyverse stones, and all great ryvers are gurgerd and assembled of divers surges and sprynges of water; in lykewyse all sciences are extrauught and compiled of diverse clerkes; of that one wryteth, another paraventure is ignorant; but by the famous wrytyng of auncient auctours, all thyngis ben knownen in one place or other. Than to attaygne to the mater that I have entreprised, I wyll begyn fyrst, by the grace of God and of the blessed Virgyn our Lady Saynt Mary, from whom all comfort and consolation procedeth, and wyll take my foundation out of the true cronicles somtyme compiled by the right reverend, discrete, and sage maister John la Bele, somtyme chanon in Saint Lambartis.
THE CRONYCLE OF

of Liege, who with good herte and due diligence dyd his
true devoure in wrytyng this noble cronicle, and dyd con-
tynue in all his lyfes dayes, in folowyng the trouth as nere
as he myght, to his great charge and cose in sekynge to
have the perffyght knowledge therof. He was also in his
lyfes dayes welbeloved, and of the secret counsayle with the
lorde sir John of Haynauhte, who is often remembred (as
reason requyreth) here after in this boke: for of many fayre
and noble aventures he was chiefe causer, and by whose
meanes the sayd syr John la Bele myght well knowe and
here of many dyvers noble dedes: the whiche here after
shal be declared. Trouth it is, that I who have entreprised
this boke to ordeyne for pleasure and pastaunce, to the
whiche alwayes I have been inclyned, and for that intent, I
have folowed and frequented the company of dyverse noble
and great lorde, as well in Fraunce, Inglande, and Scott-
lande, as in diverse other countries, and have had know-
ledge by them, and alwayes to my power, justly have
inquired for the trouth of the dedis of warre and aventures
that have fallen, and specially syth the great batell of
Poyters, where as the noble kyenge John of France was
takyn prisoner, as before that tyme, I was but of a yonge
age or understandyng. Howe be it I toke on me, assoone
as I came from scole, to wryte and recite the sayd boke,
and bare the same compyled into Ingland, and presented
the volume thereof to my Lady Phelype, of Heynauhte,
noble quene of Inglande, who right amyably receyved it to
my great profit and avancement. And it may be so,
that the same boke is nat as yet examyned nor corrected,
so justely as suche a case requyreth: for featis of armes
derely bought and achyved, the honor therof ought to be
gyven and truly devided to them, that by prowes and hard
travayle have deserved it. Therfore to acquyte me in that
bihalfe, and in folowyng the trouth as near as I can, I John
Froissart have entreprysed this hystory on the forsaid ordy-
naunce and true fundacion, at the instaunce and request of
a dere lorde of myn, Robert of Namure, knyght, lorde of
Bewfort, to whom entierly I owe love and obeysyunc, and
God graunte me to do that thyng that may be to his
pleasure. Amen.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. II

Here speketh the auctour of suche as were most valiant knyghtis to be made mencion of in this boke.

ALL noble herti to encorage and to shewe them example and mater of honour, I Sir John Froissart begynne to speke after the true report and relation of my master John la Bele, somtyme Chanoon of Saynt Lambertis, of Liege, afferyng thus, howe that many noble persons have oft tymes spoke of the warres of France and of Ingland, and peradventure knewe nat justely the trouthe therof, nor the true occasions of the fyrs t movyngeis of suche warres, nor how the warre at length contynuued: but now I trust ye shall here reported the true foundation of the cause, and to thentent that I wyll nat forget, mynysh, or abrydye the hystory in any thyng for defaute of langage: but rather I wyll multiply and encrease it as ner as I can, folowyng the trouthe from poynnt to poynnt, in spekyng and shawyng all the aventures wth the nativite of the noble kyng Edward the III. who reigned kyng of England, and achyved many perilous aventures, and dyvers great batelles addressed, and other featis of armes of great prowess, synth the yere of our Lorde God M.CCCxxvi. that this noble kyng was crowned in Ingland: for generally suche as were with hym in his batels and happy fortunate aventure, or with his peple in his absence, ought rycht well to be takyn and reputed for valiant and worthy of renounwe; and though there were great plenty of sondrye passonyges that ought to be praysed and reputed as soveraignes, yet among other, and pryncipally, ought to be renowned the noble prope persone of the forsyd gentyll kyng: also the prynce of Walys his son, the duke of Lancaster, syr Reinolde lorde Cobham, syr Gualtier of Mann of Heynaulte, knyght, syr John Chandos, syr Fulque of Harle, and dyvers other, of whom is made mencion hereafter in this present boke, because of theyr valyant prowes; for in all batels that they were in, most commonly they had ever
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. II

Herespeke the auctour of suche as were most valiant knyghtis. the renowne, both by land and by se, accordyng to the trouth. They in all theyr dedis were so valyant that they ought to be reputed as soveraignes in all chyvalry; yet for all that, suche other as were in theyr companye ought nat to be of the lesse value or lesse set by. Also in Fraunce, in that tyme, there were founde many good knyghtis, stronge and well expert in featis of armes: for the realme of Fraunce was nat so discomfited but that alwayse ther were people sufficient to fyght withall; and the kyng Philippe of Valoyes was a ryght hardy and a valiant knyght; and also kyng John his sonne, Charles the kyng of Behaigne,1 the erle of Alanson, the erle of Foyz, syr Saintre, syr Arnold Dangle, the lordes of Beamon,2 the father and the sonne, and dyverse other, the whiche I can nat theyr names, of whom hereafter ryght well shall be made mension in tyme and place convenient; [for] to say the trouth, and to mayntegne the same, all such as in cruel batels have ben seen abyding to the discomfeture, sufficiently doyng theyr devour, may wel be reputed for valyant and hardy, what soever was theyr adventure.

CAP. III

Here the mater speketh of some of the predecessours of Kyng Edwarde of Ingland.

FIRST, the better to entre into the mater of this honorable and pleasaunt historye of the noble Edwarde, kyng of Ingland, who was crowned at London the yeare of our Lorde God M.CCCxxvi. on Christmas-day, lyving the kyng his father and the queene his mother. It is certayne that the opinyon of Inglishmen most comonly was as than, and often tymes it was seen in Ingland after the tyme of kyng Arthure, how that betwene two valyant kynges of Ingland, ther was most comonly one bitwene them of lesse sufficiancy, both of wytte and of proves; and this was ryght well aparant by the same kyng Edward the thyrde; for his graund-father, called the good kyng Edward the fyreste, was ryght valyant, sage, wyse, and
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. III

hardy, aventurous and fortunate in all festis of warre, and had moche ado agaynst the Scottis, and conquered them three or four tymes; for the Scottes coude never have victory nor indure agaynst hym; and after his dissease his sonne of his first wife, who was father to the said good kyng Edward the thyrde, was crowned kyng, and called Edward II. who resembled nothyng to his father in wyt nor in prowes, but governed and kept his realme ryght wyldly, and ruled hymselfe by synyster counsell of certayne parsons, whereby at length he had no profyte nor lande, as ye shall here after; for anone after he was crowned, Robert Bruse, kyng of Scolland, who had often before gyven suche ado to the sayd good kyng Edward the fyrst, conquered agayne all Scolland, and bret and wasted a great parte of the realme of England, a four or five dayes journey within the realme at two tymes, and discomfyted the kyng and all the barons of Ingland at a place in Scotland called Estarvelyn 11 Stirling.

by batel aangyd the day of Saynt John Baptyst, in the seventh yere of the reigne of the same kyng Edward, in the yere of our Lorde M.CCCxiiii. The chase of this discomfture endured two dayes and two nyghtys; and the kyng of Ingland went with a small company to London: and on Mydleton Sunday, in the yere of our Lorde M.CCCxvi. the Scottis wan agayne the cite of Berwyk by treason, but because this is no part of our mater, I wyll leve spekyng thereof.

CAP. IV

Here myn auctour maketh mencion of the parent of this good kyng Edward the Third.

THIS kyng Edward the second, father to the noble kyng Edward the thyrde, had two bretheren; the one called Marshall, 3 who was ryght wyld and divers of condicions; the other called sir Aymon erle of Cane 4 right wyse, amiable, gentle, and welbeloved with al people. This kyng Edward the second was maried to Isabell, the daughter of Philyp la Beaw, kyng of Fraunce, who was one of the feyrest ladyes of the worlde. The kyng

3 Earl Marshal.

4 Edmund Earl of Kent.
had by her two sons and two daughters. The first son was the noble and hardy kyng Edward the thyrde, of whom this history is begun. The second was named John, and dyed young. The first of the daughters was called Isabel, married to the young kyng David of Scotland, son to kyng Robert de Bruse, married in her tender yongth, by thaccord of both realms of Ingland and Scotland, for to make per-fight peax. The other daughter was married to the erle Reynold, who after was called duke of Guerles, and he had by her two sons, Reynolde and Edward, who after regned in great puissance.

CAP. V

Herafter begynneth the occasion wherby the warre moved bitwene the kyngis of Fraunc and Ingland.

NOW sheweth the hystory, that this Phylip la Beaw, kyng of Fraunc, had three sons, and a feyre daughter named Isabel, married into Ingland to kyng Edward the second; and these three sons, the eldest named Lewes, who was kyng of Navarr in his father's daies, and was called kyng Lewys Hotin; the second had to name Phylip the great, or the long; and the thyrde was called Charles; and all three were kyngis of Fraunce after theyr father's discease by ryght succession ech after other, without hayng any issue male of theyr bodies laufully begoten. So that after the deth of Charlis, last kyng of the three, the twelve piers and all the barons of Fraunce wold nat gyve the realme to Isabell the suster, who was quene of Ingland, bycause they sayd and mayntyeynd, and yet do, that the realme of Fraunce is so noble that it ought nat to go to a woman; and so consequently to Isabel, nor to the kyng of Inglande her eldest sonne; for they determynd the sonne of the woman to have no ryght nor succession by his mother, syn they declared the mother to have no ryght; so that by these reasons the twelve piers and barons of Fraunce, by theyr comon acord, dyd gyve the realme of Fraunce to the lord Phylip of Valois, nephew
Syr John Froissart

somtyme to Philip la Beawe, kyng of Fraunce, and so put out the queene of Ingland and her sonne, who was as the next heir male, as sonne to the suster of Charles, last kyng of Fraunce. Thus went the realme of Fraunce out of the ryght lyncge as it seemed to many folk, wherby great warres hath moved and fallen, and great distructions of people and countries in the realme of Fraunce and other places, as ye may hereafter. This is the very right foundation of this hystory, to recount the great entreprizes and great featis of armes that have fortuned and fallen: syth the tyme of the good Charlemaigne, kyng of Fraunce, ther never fell so great adventures.

CAP. VI

Of the erle Thomas of Lancastre, and twenty-two other of the great lordis and knyghtis of Inglande that were beheeddyd.

The forsaide kyng Edward the second, father to the noble kyng Edward the thyrde, on whom our mater is founded; this sayd kyng governed right diversly his realme by the exortacion of sir Hewe Spencer, who had been norisshed with hym syth the begynnynge of his yongth; the whiche sir Hewe had so enticed the kyng, that his father and he were the greatest maisters in all the realme, and by envy thought to surmount all other barons of Ingland, wherby after the great discomfeture that the Scottes had made at Estermelyn, great murmuryng ther arose in Inglande bitwene the noble barons and the kyng's counsell, and namely, ageynst sir Hewe Spencer. They put on hym, that by his counself they were discomfeted, and that he was favorable to the kyng of Scottes. And on this poynct the barons had divers tymes comunlication together, to be advised what they myght do; wherof Thomas erle of Lancastre, who was uncle to the kyng, was chief. And anon whan sir Hew Spencer had espied this, he purveyd for remedy, for he was so great with the kyng, and so nere hym, that he was more beloved with the kyng than all the worlds after. So on a day he came to the kyng and sayd, Sir,
THE CRONYCLE OF

Of the erle
Thomas of
Lancastre.

1 Kent.
certayn lorde of your realm he made aliunce togethe
ayagnst you, and without ye take heed thereb by tymes,
they purpose to put you out of your realm: and so by his
malicious meaning he caused that the kyng made all the sayd
lordes to be taken, and theyr heedis to be striken of with-
out delay, and without knowlege or answere to any cause.
Fyrst of all sir Thomas erle of Lancastre, who was a noble
and a wyse holy knyght, and hath done syth many fayre
myracles in Pomfret, where he was behedded, for the whiche
dede the sayd sir Hewe Spencer achyved great hate in all
the realm, and specially of the quene, and of the erle of
Cane, 1 brother to the kyng. And whan he parceyved the
dyspleasure of the quene, by his subtile wytte he set great
discorde bitwene the kyng and the quene, so that the kyng
wold nat se the quene, nor come in her company; the whiche
discord endured a long space. Than was it shewed to the
quene secretly, and to the erle of Cane, that withoute they
toke good heed to them selve, they were lykely to be dis-
stroyed; for sir Hewe Spencer was about to purchase moch
trouble to them. Than the quene secretly dyd purvey go
in to Fraunce, and toke her way as on pylgryme to
saynt Thomas of Canterbury, and so to Wynchelsey; and
in the nyght went into a shyp that was redy for her, and
her yong sonne Edward with her, and the erle of Cane
and sir Roger Mortymer; and in a nother shyp they had
put all theyr purveyaunce, and had wynde at wyll, and the
next mornynge they arryved in the havyn of Bolayn.

CAP. VII

Howe the quene of Ingland went and complayned
her to the kyng of Fraunce, her brother, of syr
Hewe Spencer.

WHAN quene Isabell was arryved at Bolayn, and
her sonne with her, and the erle of Cane, the
captyayns and abbot of the towne came agaynst
her, and joyously receyved her and her company into
the abbey, and ther she abode two dayes: than she
departed, and rode so long by her journeys, that she arryved at Paris. Than kyng Charles her brother, who was en- fourmed of her coming, sent to mete her divers of the greatest lorde of his realm, as the lorde syr Robert de Artoys, the lorde of Cruyce, the lorde of Sully, the lorde of Roy, and dyvers other, who honorably dyd receive her, and brought her in to the cito of Paris to the kyng her brother. And whan the kyng sawe his suster, whom he had nat sene long before, as she shuld have entred into his chambre, he mette her, and toke her in his armes, and kyst her, and sayd, Ye be welcome feyre suster with my feyre nephewe your sonne, and toke them by the handis, and led them forth. The quene, who had no great joy at her herte, but that she was so nere to the kyng her brother, she wold have kneled downe two or three tymes at the feet of the kyng, but the kyng wold nat suffer her, but held her styl by the right hande, demaundig right swetely of her astate and besynesse. And she answered him rycht sagelie, and lamentably recounted to hym all the felonies and injuries done to her by syr Hewe Spencer, and requyred hym of his ayde and comfort. Whan the noble kyng Charles of Fraunce had harde his suster’s lamentation, who wepyngly had shewed hym all her nede and besynesse, he sayd to her, Fayre suster appease your selfe, for by the faith I owe to God and to saynt Denyce, I shall right well purvey for you some remedy. The quene than kneled downed, whether the kyng wold or nat, and sayd, My rycht dere lord and fayre brother, I pray God reward you. The kyng than toke her in his armes, and led her into an other chambre, the whiche was apparrayd for her, and for the yong Edward her sonne, and so departed fro her, and caused at his costis and chargis all thyngis to be delyvered that was behovefull for her and for her sonne. After it was nat long, but that for this occasiion Charles, kyng of Fraunce, assembled together many great lorde and barons of the realm of Fraunce, to have theyr counsell and good advise howe they shuld ordeyne for the nede and besynes of his suster quene of Ingland. Than it was counsailed to the kyng, that he shuld let the quene his suster to purchas for her selfe frendis where as she wold in the realm of Fraunce, or in any other place, and hym
THE CRONYCLE OF

selfe to fayne and be not knowne therof; for they sayd to
move warre with the kyng of Ingland, and to bryng his
owne realme into hatred, it were nothing apertenaunt nor
profitable to hym, nor to his realme. But they concluded,
that conveniently he might ayde her with golde and sylver,
for that is the metall wherby love is attayned both of
gentylemen and of pore souldiours. And to this counsell
and advice accorded the kynge, and caused this to be shewed
to the quene prively by sir Robert Darbys, who as than
was one of the greatteste lordis of all Fraunce.

CAP. VIII

Howe that syr Hewe Spencer purchased, that the
quene Isabell was banysshed out of Fraunce.

NOWE let us speke somewhat of sir Hewe Spencer.
Whan he sawe that he hadde drawen the kyng of
Ingland so moche to his wyll, that he could desire
nothyng of hym but it was graunted, he caused many
noble men and other to be put to deth without justice
or lawe, bicause he held them suspect to be ageynst hym;
and by his pride he dyd so many marveylles, that the barons
that were left alyve in the land coude nat beare nor suffre
it any lenger; but they besought and requyred eche other
among them selve to be of a peasauble accorde, and caused it
secretly to be knoen to the quene theyr lady, who hadde
ben as then at Parys the space of three yere, certiflying her
by wryttyng, that if she coude fynd the meanes to have
any companye of men of armes, if it were but to the nombre
of a thousand, and to bryng her son and heyre with her
into Inglande; that than they wolde all drawe to her, and
abeve her and her sonne Edward, as they were bounde to
do of dyety. These letters, thus sent secretly to her out of
Ingland, she shewed them to kyng Charles her brother, who
answered her, and sayde, Fayre suster, God be your syde,
your besynesse shall avayle moche the better. Take of my
men and subjectis to the nombre that your fremdes have
wrytten you for, and I consent wel to this voyage. I shall
cause to be delyvered unto you golde and sylver as moche as shall suffyce you. And in this mater the quene had done so moche, what with her prayer, gyftes, and promysses, that many great lordis and yong knyghtis were of her accorde, as to bryng her with great strength agayne into Inglande. Than the quene, as secretly as she coulde, she ordeyned for her voyage, and made her purveyaunce; but she coude nat do it so secretly, but sir Hewe Spencer had knowledge therof. Than he thought to wynne and withdrawe the kyng of Fraunce fro her by great gyftes, and so sent secret messangers into Fraunce with great plentye of golde and sylver and ryche jewelles, and specially to the kyng, and his prive counsell, and dyd so moche, that in shorte space, the kyng of Fraunce and all his prive counselle were as colde to helpe the quene in her voyage, as they had before great desyre to do hit. And the kyng brake all that voyage, and defended every parsone in his realme, onayne of banysshynge the same, that none shulde be so hardy to go with the quene to brynghe her agayne into Ingland. And yet the sayd sir Hew Spencer advysed hym of more malyce, and bethought hym howe he myght gette agayne the quene into Inglande, to be under the kyngis daunger and his. Than he caused the kyng to writte to the holy father the pope effectuously, desvyryng him that he wolde sende and wrytte to the kyng of Fraunce, that he shulde sende the quene his wyfe agayne into Inglande; for he wyll acquyte hym selfe to God and the worlde; and that it was nat his faute, that she departed fro hym; for he wolde nothyng to her but all love and good faith, suche as he ought to holde in mariaghe. Also ther were lyke letters wrytten to the cardynals, dyvysed by many subtile wyayes, the which all maye nat be wrytten here.

Also he sent golde and sylver great plenty to dyverse cardynalles and prelates, suche as were moost nereste and secretewt with the pope, and ryght sage and able ambassa-dours were sente on this message; and they lade the pope in suche wyse by theyr gyftes and subtyle wyayes, that he wrote to the kyng of Fraunce, that on payne of cursyng, he shulde sende his suster Isabell into Ingland to the kyng her housbande.
THE CRONYCLE OF

1326

CAP. VIII

These letters were brought to the kyng of Fraunce by
Howe that syr
HeweSpencer
purchased,
that the quene
Isabell was
banished out
do Fraunce.

CAP. IX

Howe that quene Isabell departed fro Fraunce,
and entred in to the Empyre.

WHAN the quene hard thys tidyngis she knewe
nat what to say nor what advyce to take; for
as than the barons of the realme of Fraunce
were withdrawn from her by the commandement
of the kyng of Fraunce; and so she had no comfort nor
succoure, but all onely of her dere cosyn, sir Robert de
Artoys, for he secretly dyd counsaile and comfort her as
moche as he myght, for otherwyse he durst nat, for the
kyng hadde defended hym. But he knew well that the
quene was chased out of Ingland, and also out of Fraunce,
for evyll wyll and by envy, whiche greved hym greatly.
Thus was sir Robert de Artoyes at the quenes commande-
ment; but he durste nat speke nor be knownen therof, for
he had hard the kyng say and swere, that who so ever
spake to hym for the quene his suster shulde leese his
landis and be banished the realme; and he knewe secretly
howe the kyng was in mynde and will to make his suster
to be taken, and Edward her sonne, and the erle of Cane,1
and syr Roger Mortymer, and to put them all in the handis
of the kyng and of syr Hewe Spencer. Wherfore he came
on a nyght, and declared all this to the quene, and advysed
her of the parell that she was in. Than the quene was
greatly abessehd, and required hym all wepyng of his good
counsaile. Than he sayd, Madame, I counsaile you that ye
depart and go in to the empire, where as ther be many great
lordes, who may ryght well ayde you, and specially the erle
Guillyam of Heynault, and syr John of Heynaulte his

1 Kend.
brother. These two are great lorde and wise men, true, 

dead, and redoubted of their enemies. Than the quene Howe that 
caused to be made reddy all her purveyorance, and payd for quene Isabell 
every thyng as secretly as she myght; and so she and her 
sonne, the erle of Cane, ¹ and all her company departed from 
Paris, and rode to warde Heynaulte, and so long she rode ¹Kent. 
that she came to Cambreys; and when she knewe she was 
in the Empyre, she was better assured than she was before; 
and so passed through Cambreys and entered into Ostren- 
aunt,² in Heynaulte, and lodged at Ambreticourt, in a ²L'Ostremant. 
knightes house, who was called syr Dambrecourte,³ who ²Sir Bastack 
receiving her ryght joyously in the best maner to his power, 
in so moche that afterwarde the quene of Inglande and 
her sonne hadde with them into Inglande for ever the 
knyght and his wyfe and all his children, and avounsed 
them in dyvers maners.

The comyngh thus of the quene of Inglande and of her 
sonne and heyre into the coutreyn of Heynaulte was anon 
well knowne in the howse of the good erle of Heynault, 
who as than was at Valenciennes; and syr John of Hey- 
nault was certified of the tyme when the quene arriyved at 
the place of syr Dambrecourte,³ the whiche syr John was 
brother to the sayde erle Guillam; and as he that was yong 
and lusty, desyriyng all honoure, mounted on his horse, and 
departed with a small company fro Valenciennes, and cam 
the same nyghtt to Ambreticourt, and dyd to the quene all 
honour and reverence that he could devise. The quene, 
who was ryght sorowfull, beganne to declare (complaynyng 
to hym ryght pyteously) her dolours; wherof the sayde syr 
John had grete pitie, so that the water dashte in his yen, 
and sayd certaynly, Fayre lady, beholde me here your owne 
knyght, who shall nat fayle you to dye in the quarell. I 
shall do the best of my power to conducte you and my 
lorde your sonne, and helpe to bryng ye into your astatis 
in Inglande by the grace of God, and with the helpe of your 
frndis in that partes; and I and suche other as I can 
desyre shall put our lyves and goodes in adventure for your 
sake, and shall gette men of warre sufficien, if God be 
pleased, without the daunger of the kyng of Fraunce your 
brother. Than the quene wold have kneled downe for
great joye that she had, and for the good wyll he offered her; but this noble knyght toke her uppe quckly in his
armes and sayde, By the grace of God the noble quene of
Ingland shall nat knele to me; but, madame, recomforte
your selfe and all your company, for I shall kepe you faith-
full promyse; and ye shall go se the erle my brother, and
the countesse his wyfe, and all theyr fayre children, who
shall receive you with great joye, for so I harde theym
reporte they wold do. Than the quene sayd, Syr, I fynde
in you more love and comforte than in all the worlde; and
for this that ye say and affirme me I thanke you a thousande
tymes, and yf ye wyll do this ye have promised, in all
courtesye and honoure, I and my sone shall be to you for
ever bounde, and wyll put all the realme of Ingland in
your abandon; for it is right that it so shuld be. And
after these wordes, whan they were this accorded, sry John
of Heynaulte toke leve of the quene for that nyght, and
went to Denoingle and laye in the abbeye; and in the
mornynge after masse he lepte on his horse, and came
agayn to the quene, who receyved hym with great joye;
by that tymye she had dy nedde, and was redy to mounte on
her horse to departe with hym; and so the quene departed
from the castell of Dambrercourt, and toke leve of the
knyght and of the lady, and thanked them for theyr good
chere that they hadde made her, and sayd that she trusted
ones to se the tymye that she or her sone shulde well
remembre theyr courtesye.

Thus departed the quene in the company of the sayd sry
John lorde Beaumont, who ryght joyously dyd conducte her
to Valencyennes; and agaynst her came many of the bur-
gesses of the towne, and receyved her right humbly. Thus
was she brought before the erle Guylleume of Heynaulte,
who receyved her with great joye, and in lyke wyse so dyd
the countesse his wyfe, and feastede her ryght nobly. And
as than this erle hadde foure fayre doughters, Margaret,
Philype, Jane, and Isabell; amonge whom the yong
Edwarde sette moost his love and company on Phyllyppe;
and also the yong lady in al honour was more conversaunt
with hym than any of her susters. Thus the quene Isabell
abode at Valencyennes by the space of eight daies with the
good erle and with the countess Jane de Valois. In the meane tyme the quene aparailed for her needis and besynesse, and the saide syr John wrote letters ryght effectuously quene Isabell unto knyghtis and suche companys as he trusted best in all Heynaulte, in Brabant, and in Behaigne, and prayed them for all amyties, that was bitwene theym, that they wolde goo with hym in this entreprise in to Inglande: and so there were great plente what of one countrey and other, that were content to go with hym, for his love. But this saied syr John of Heynaulte was greatly reproved and counsailed the contrarye, bothe of the Erle his brother, and of the chief of the counsaile of the countrey, bycause it semed to theym, that the entreprise was ryght hygh and parillouse, seynge the great discordis and great hates that as than was bytwene the barones of Inglande amonge them selfe; and also consdyrgyn, that these Englishmen most commonly have ever great envy at straungers. Therfore they doubted, that the saied syr John of Heynaulte, and his company shulde nat retourne agayne with honour. But howe so ever they blamed or counsailed hym, the gentle knyght wolde never chaunge his purpose, but saied he hadde but one dethe to dye, the whiche was in the will of God: and also saied, that all knyghtes ought to ayd to theyr powers all lades and damozels chased out of theyr owne countreys, beyng without counsaile or comfort.

CAP. X

Howe that the quene Isabell arryved in Inglande with syr John of Heynaulte in her company.

THYS was syr John of Heynaulte moved in his courage and made his assembly and prayed the Henaus to be redy at Hale, and the Brabances at Bredas, and the Hollenders to be at Durdryghte, at a day lymytte. Than the quene of Inglande took leve of the erle of Heynaulte, and of the countesse, and thanked theym greatly of their honour, feast, and good chere, that
THE CRONYCYCLE OF

CAP. X
They hadde made her, kyssynge them at her departynge. Thus this lady departed, and her sonne, and all her company, with sir John of Heynaulte, who with great peyne gotte leve of his brother: sayng to hym, My lorde and brother, I am yong, and thinke that God hath pourveyed for me this entrepyse for myn advauncement. I beleve and thinke verely, that wrongfully and synfully this lady hath been chased out of Inglande, and also her sonne: hit is almes and glory to God and to the worlde to conforte and helpe them that be comfortlesse and speccally so hygyhe, and so noble a lady as this is, who is daugther to a kyng and descendyd of a royall kyng: we be of her bloodde and she of oures. I hadde rather renounce and forsake all that I have, and go serve God over the see, and never to retourne into this countrey, rather than this good lady shulde have departed from us withoутe conforte and helpe. Therfore dere brother, suffer me to go with your good wyll, wherin ye shal do nobly, and I shal humbly thanke you therof, and the better therby I shal accomplyshe all the voyayge. And whan the good Erle of Heynaulte hadde well harde his brother, and perceved the great desyre that he hadde to his entrepyse, and sawe welle hyt myght tourne hym and his heyres to great honoure here after; sayd to hym. My fayre brother, God forbyd that your good purpose shulde be broken or lette: therfore in the name of God I gyve you leve, and kyste hym, streynynge hym by the hande, in sygne of great love.

Thus he departed, and roode the same nyghte to Mouncet in Heynaulte with the Queene of Inglande. What shulde I make long processe. They dyd so moche by them Journeys, that they came to Durderyght in Holande, wher as theyr speccyall assembly was made. And there they purveyed for shypps great and small, such as they coulde get, and shyped their horses and harneys and purveyaunce, and so commaunded themselfe into the kepyng of God and toke theyr passage by see. In that company there were of knyghtis and lordis. Froyst sir John of Heynault lord Beaund, sir Henry Dantoing, sir Michell de Ligne, the lorde of Gommegines, sir Parceval de Semeries, sir Robert de Baileul, sir Sauxes de Boussoit, the lorde of Vertaing, the

32

Mons.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

lorde of Pocelles, the lord Villers, the lord of Heyn, the lorde of Sars, the lord of Boysiers, the lorde of Dambretycourte, the lorde of Sarmuell and syr Oulphearte of Gustelle, and divers other knyghtis and squyers, all in great desyre to serve theyr maister; and whan they were all departe fro the hayvn of Durdryght it was a fayre fete as for the quantite and well ordeerd, the season was fayre, and clere, and ryght temperate, and at theyr departynge with the fyrrte flode they came before the Diques of Holande, and the next day they drewe uppe theyr sayles, and toke theyr waye in costynge Zelande, and theyr ententis were to have taken lande at Dongport, but they could nat, for a tempeste toke them in the see, that put them so farre out of theyr course that they wist nat of two dayes wher they were: of the whiche God dyd them great grace. For if they had takyn lande at the porte where as they had thought, they had ben all loste, for they had fallen in the handis of theyre enemies, who knew well of theyr commyng, and aboode them there, to have putte them al to dethe. So hit was that about the ende of two dayes, the tempest seased, and the maryners parceyed lande in Inglande, and drewe to that parte right joyously, and there toke lande on the sandes, withoute any ryght hayvn or porte, at Harwichte, as the Inglyshe cronicle sayth, the xxiii. daye of Septembre, the yere of our lorde M.CCC.xxvi; and so aboode on the sandes thre dayes with lytle purveyaunce of vitaylle and unshypoed theyr horses and harneys, nor they wist nat in what parte of Inglande they were in: other in the power of theyr friends, or in the power of theyr enemies. On the iii. day they toke forth theyr way in the adventure of God, and of saynt George, as suche people as hadde suffred great disease of colde by nyght, and hunger, and great feare, whereof they were nat as than clene ryd. And so they rode forth by hyllles and dales, on the oone syde and on the other, till at the laste they fouunde villages, and a great abbeye of blake monkes the whiche is called saint Hamon, wher as they iii. dayes refresshed themselfe.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XI

Howe the quene of Inglande beseged the kyng her husbande in the towne of Bristowe.

AND than this tidynge spred about the realme so moche that at the last it came to the knowledge of the lordes, by whom the quene was called agayn into Ingland: and they apparaileth them in all hast to come to Edwarde her son, whom they wolde have to theyr soveraigne lorde. And the fyrrte that came and gave them moost comforthe was Henrty Erle of Lancastre with the wrye neck, called Torte cole, who was brother to Thomas erle of Lancastre beheeddyyd, as ye have harde here before, who was a good knyght, and greatly recommended, as ye shall here after in this hystorye. Thys Erle Henry came to the quene with great companye of men of warre, and after hym came from one parte and other, erles, barones, knyghtys, and squiers with so moche people that they thought them clene out of parelles, and alwayes encreased theyr power as they went forewarde. Than they take counsell among them, that they shulde ryde streyght to the towne of Brystowe, where as the kyng was, and with hym the Spencers. The whiche was a good towne, and a stronge, and well closed, standing on a good port of the see and a stronge castell, the see bettyng rounde about it. And therin was the kyng and syr Hewe Spencer the elder, who was about xC. of age and syr Hewe Spencer his sonne, who was chiefe governour of the kyng, and counsayled hym in all his eyyl dedis. Also there was the Erle of Arundell, who had weded the doughter of syr Hewe Spencer, and diverse other knyghtis and squiers, repayryng about the kyngis courte. Than the quene and all her companye, lordes of Heynaulte, erles, and barons, and all other Inglishemen, toke the right way to the said towne of Bristowe, and in every towne where as they entred, they were recyved with great feast and honoure, and alwayes theyr people encreased, and so longe they rode by theyr journeys that they arryved at Brystowe, and besygedde the towne rounde.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

about as nere as they myght: and the kyng, and syr Hewe Spencer the yonger, helde theym in the castelle, and the olde syre Hewe Spencer, and the erle of Arundell, helde them in the town. And whan the people of the towne sawe the greate power that the Quene was of (for allmoost all Inglande was of her accorde) and perceved what parell and daunger euydentely they were in, they toke counsell amonge theymselfe, and determyned, that they wolde yelde uppe the towne to the quene, so that theyre lyves and gooddys myghte be sayvd. And soo they sende, to treate with the quene and her counsell, in this mattyer. But the quene nor her counsell wolde nat agree therto without she myght do with syr Hewe Spencer and with the erle of Arundell what it pleased her.

Whan the people of the towne sawe they could have no peace otherwise, nor save the towne, nor theyr gooddes, nor theyr lyves, in that distresse they accorded to the quene, and opened the gates, so that the quene and syr John of Heynaulite and all her barons, knyghtis, and squyers entred into the towne, and toke theyr lodgyngys within, as many as myght, and the residewe without. Than sir Hewe Spencer and the Erle of Arundel were taken, and brought before the quene to do her pleasure with them. Than there was brought to the quene her owne chyldren, John her sonne, and her two daughters, the whiche were found ther in the kepyng of the sayd syr Hewe Spencer, wherof the quene had great joye, for she had nat sene theym longe before. Than the kyng myght have great sorowe, and sir Hewe Spencer the yonger, who were fast inclosed in the stronge castell, and the moost part of all the realme turned to the quenes parte, and to Edward her eldest sonne.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XII

Howe that syr Hewe Spencer thelder and the erle of Arundell were judged to dethe.

WHAN the quene, and her barons, and all her company were lodged at theyr ease, than they besieged the castell as nere as they myght. The quene caused syr Hewe Spencer the elder and therle of Arundell to be brought forth before Edward her sonne, and all the barons that were there present. And sayde howe that she, and her sonne, shulde take ryght and lawe on them, accordyng to theyr desertis. Than syr Hewe Spencer sayd: Madame God be to you a good judge, and gyve you good judgement, and if we can nat have it in this world, I praye God we maye have hit in a nother. Than stepte forth syr Thomas Wage 1 a good knyght, and marshall of the hoste, and ther openly he recounted theyr dedis in wrytynge. And than turned hym to a nother auncient knyght, to the entent that he shuld bryng hym on that case fauty, and to declare what shuld be done with suche parsones, and what judgement they shulde have for suche causes. Than the sayd knyght counsailed with other barons and knyghtis, and so reported theyr opynions, the whiche was, how they had well deserved deth, for dyvers horryble dedis, the whiche they have commysed, for all the trespas rehearsed before to justifie to be of trouth, wherfore they have deserved for the dyversyties of theyr trespases, to have judgement in iii. dyvers maners: fy rst to be drawen, and after to be heeded, and than to be hanged on the jebet. This in lyke wyse as they were judged, so it was done, and executed before the castell of Brystowe, in the syght of the kyng, and of syr Hewe Spencer the yonger. This judgement was doone in the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.xxvi. on saynt Denys day in October. And after this execucion, the kyng and the yong Spencer, seyng theym selfe thus beseged in this myschief, and knewe no comfort that myght come to them, in a mornyng betymes, they two, with a smalle company, entred into a lytle vessell
SYR JOHN FROISSART

behynnde the castell, thynkynge to have fledde to the countrey of Walys. But they were xi. dayes in the shyppe, and enforced it to saile as moche as they myghte. But what so ever they dydde, the wynde was every daye so contrary to them, by the wyll of God, that every daye oones or twysse, they were ever brought agayn within a quarter of a myle to the same castell.

At the last it fortuned syr Henry Beamoonde son to the vicount Beamon in Ingland, entred in to a barge, and certayne company with hym, and spied this vessell, and rowed after hym so long, that the shyp, wherein the kyng was, coulde nat flee fast before them, but fynally they were over takyn, and so brought agayn to the towne of Bristow, and delivered to the quene and her son, as prisoner. Thus it befel of this high and hardy entrepyse of syr John of Heynaulte, and his companye. For whan they departed and entred into their shyppes at Durdrignt they were but iii. C. men of armes. And thus by theyr help, and the lordes in Ingland, the quene Isabell conquered agayn all her astate and dignyte, and put unto executio all her ennemyes, wherof all the moost parte of the reame were right joyouse, withoute it were a fewe parsones suche as were favourable to syr Hewe Spencer, and of his parte. And whan the kyng and sir Hewe Spencer were brought to Bristowe by the said sir Henry Beamonde, the kyng was than sent by the counsell of all the barons and knyghtis, to the strong castell of Barkely, and put under good kepyng and honest, and ther were ordeined people of astate aboute hym, suche as knewe rytght well what they ought to doo, but they were strayntly commaunded, that they shulde in no wyse suffer hym to passe out of the castell. And syr Hewe Spencer was delivere to syr Thomas Wage\(^1\) marshall of the host. And after that the quene departed and al her host toward London, whiche was the chiefe cite of Ingland; And so ryd forth on theyr journeis, and syr Thomas Wage caused syr Hewe Spencer to be fast binded on the lest and lenest\(^2\) hors of al the host, and caused hym to were on a \(^3\) best and tabarte, suche as traytours and theves were wont to were. And thus he was led in scorne, after the quenes rout, through out all the townes as they passed, with trumpes

---

\(^{1}\) Wake.

\(^{2}\) best and

\(^{3}\) levies F.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XII
Howe that syr Hewe Spencer was put to his judgement.

and canaryes, to do hym the greater dispyte, tyll at the
laste they came to the Cite of Herford,1 wher as the quene
was honorably receyved, with great solempnyte, and all her
company, and ther she kept the feast of al sayntis with
great roialte, for the love of her son, and straugers that
were ther.

WHAN this feast was done, than syr Hewe Spencer
who was nothyng beloved was brought forth
before the quene, and all the lorde of
knyghtis, and ther before hym in wrytyng was rehearsed
al his dedis, ageynst the whiche he wold gyve no maner of
answere. And so he was than judged by playn sentence.
Fyrst to be drawen on an hyrdell with trumpes and
trumpettis through all the cite of Herford, and after, to
be brought into the market place, where as all the people
were assembled, and there to be tyed on hygh upon a ladder
that every man myght se hym: and in the same place ther
to be made a great fier, and ther his pryvy membres cut
from hym, bycause they reputed hym as an heretyk, and
sodomite,2 and so to be brent in the fyre before his face: and
than his hart to be drawen out of his body, and cast into
the fyre, bycause he was a false traytoure of hart, and that
by hys traytours counsell and extorcion, the kyng had
shamed his realme, and brought it to great myschief, for he
had caused to be behedded the greatest lorde of his realme,
by whom the realme ought to have been susteyned and
defended: and he had so endued the kyng, that he wolde
nat se the quene his wyfe, nor Edwarde his eldest son, and
caused hym to chace them out of the realme for fere of
theyr lyves: and than his heed to be stryken of and sent to
London. And accordyng to his judgement, he was executed.
Than the quene and all her lorde toke theyr way toward
London, and dyd so moche by theyr journeys, that they
arrayved at the Cite of London, and they of the cite with

1 Herford.
2 so demet P.
Syr John Froissart

Great company mette them, and dyd to the quene, and to her sonne, great reverence, and to al theyr company, as they thought it best bestowed. And when they had ben thus receyved and feasted the space of xv. dayes, the knyghtis and straungers, and namelysyr John of Heynaulte had great desyre to retourne agayn into theyr owne countrees, for they thought they had well done theyr devour, and achyved great honour, and so toke theyr leve of the quene, and of the lordes of the realme, and the quene and the lordes requyred them to tary longer a lytle space to se what shuld be done with the kyng, who was in pryson, but the straungers had so great desyre to retourne into theyr owne countreys, that to praye theym the contrarye, avayled nat. And when the quene and her counsell saw that, they yet desyred syr John of Heynaulte to taryyll it was past Christmas, and to retaygne with hym suche of his company as pleased hym best. The gentle knyght wold nat leve to parfourme his service, but courtely graunted the quene to tary as long as it pleased her, and caused to tary suche of his company as he coude get; that was but a fewe for the remnaunt wolde in no wyse tary, wherof he was displeased. When the quene and her counsell sawe that they wolde nat abyde for no prayers, than they made them great chere and feastis. And the quene made to be gyven to them plenty of golde and slyver for theyr costis and servicies, and dyd gyve great jewelles to eche of them, accordyng to theyr degrees, so as they all helde them selfe ryght well content. And over that they had slyver for theyr horses, suche as they wolde leve behynde theym; at theyr owne estymacion, without any grudging. And thus syr John of Heynaulte abode styll with as smalle company among the Englisshemen, who always dydde hym as moche honoure as they coude ymagyn, and to all his company. And in lye wyse so dyd the ladys and damozelles of the countre. For there were great plentye of countesses, and great ladys gentle pucels, who were come thither to accompany the quene. For it seemed well to them, that the knyght syr John of Heynaulte had well deserved the chere and feast that they made hym.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XIII

The coronacion of kyng Edward the thyrde.

AFTER that the most part of the company of Heynaulte were departed, and syr John Heynaulte lorde of Beamonde taryd, the quene gave leve to her people to departe, savyng a certayne noble knightis the whiche she kept styl about her and her sonne, to counsell them, and commaundéd all them that departed, to be at London the next Christmas, for as than she was determynd to kepe open court, and all they promysed her so to do. And whan Christmas was come, she helde a great court. And thyther came dukys, erles, barons, knyghtis, and all the nobles of the realme, with prelates, and burgesses of good townes, and at this assemble it was advysed that the realme coud nat long endure without a heed and a chief lord. Than they put in wrytyngge all the dedis of the kyng who was in prison, and all that he hadde done by eyyll counsell, and all his usages, and eyyll behavynggis, and how eyyll he had governed his realme, the which was redde openly in playn audience, to thentent that the noble sagis of the realme might take therof good advye, and to fall at acorde how the realme shuld be governed from thensforth; and whan all the cases and dedis that the kyng had done and consented to, and all his behavyng and usages were red, and wel understand, the barons and knyghtis and all the counsels of the realme, drew them aparte to counsell, and the most part of them accorded, and namely the great lordeis and nobles, with the burgesses of the good townes, accordyng as they had hard say, and knew themselfe the most parte of his dedis. Wherfore they concluded that suche a man was nat worthy to be a kyng, nor to bere a crowne royall, nor to have the name of a kyng. But they all accorded that Edward his eldeste son who was ther present, and was ryghtful heyre, shuld be crowned kyng in stede of his fathar, so that he wold take good counsell, sage and true about hym, so that the realme from thensforth myght be better governed than it was before, and that
the olde kyng his father shuld be well and honestly kept as long as he lyved accordyng to his astate; and thus as it was agreed by all the nobles, so it was accomplysshed, and than was crowned with a crowne royall at the palaise of Westminster, beside London, the yong kyng Edward the iii. who in his dayes after was right fortunate and happy in armes. This coronacion was in the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.xxvi. on christymas day, and as than the yong kyng was about the age of xvi. and they held the fest tyl the convercion of sauent Paule folowyng: and in the mean tyme greatly was fested sir John of Heynaulte and all the princis and nobles of his countrie, and was gyven to hym, and to his company, many ryche jewels. And so he and his company in great feast and solas both with lordis and ladys taried tyl the xii. day. And than syr John of Heynaulte hard tydyingis, how that the kyng of Bayghan,\(^1\) and the erle of Heynaulte his brother, and other great plenty of lordis of Fraunce, had ordeyned to be at Conde, at a great feast and turney that was there cryed. Than wold sir John of Heynaulte no longer abyde for no prayer, so great desire he had to be at the said tourney, and to se the erle his brother, and other lordys of hys countrey, and specially the ryght noble kyng in larges the gentyll Charles kyng of Bayghan. Whan the yong kyng Edward, and the quene his mother, and the barons, saw that he wold no longer tary, and that theyr request coude nat availe, they gave hym leve sore ageynst theyr wyls, and the kyng by the counsell of the quene his mother dyd gyve hym CCC. markis sterlyngis of rent heritable, to hold of hym in fee, to be payed every yere in the towne of Bruges: and also dyd gyve to Philyp of Chastaulxe, his chef esquier, and his soveraigne counsellour, C. marke of rent yereby, to be payed at the sayd place, and also delievered hym moche money, to pay ther with the costis of hym, and of his company, tyl he come in to his owne countrey, and caused hym to be conducted with many noble knyghtis to Dover, and ther delievered hym all his passage free. And to the ladys that were come into Ingland with the quene, and namely to the countesse of Garrennes, who was suster to the erle of Barc, and to dyverse other ladys and damozels, ther were gyven many

\(^1\) Bohemia.
feyre and ryche jewels at theyr departyng. And when syr
John of Heynaulte was departed fro the yong kyng Edward,
and all his company, and wer come to Dover, they entred
encontynent into theyr shippes, to passe the see, to the
tent to come be tyme to the sayd tourney, and ther
went with hym xv. yong lusty knyghtis of Ingland to
go to this tourney with hym, and to acqueynt them
with the straunge lordis, and knyghtis that shuld be
ther, and they had great honour of all the company that
turneyd at that tyme at Conde.

CAP. XV

Howe that kyng Robert de Breux of Scotland
defyed kyng Edward.

AFTER that syr John of Heynault was departed fro
kyng Edward, he, and the quene his mother,
governed the realme by the counselfe of the Erle
of Kent, uncle to the kyng, and by the counsell of syr
Roger Mortymer, who had great landes in Ingland,
to the summe of vii.Cli. of rent yerely. And they both were
banisshed and chased out of Ingland with the quene as ye
have hard before. Also they used moche after the counsell
of syr Thomas Wage, and by the advyse of other, who
were reputed for the most sagest of the realme. How be it
ther were some hadde envy therat, the which never dyed in
Inglannde, and also it reigneth and wyl reign in dyvers
other countres. Thus passed forthe the wynter and the
lent season tyll Easter, and than the kyng and the quene
and all the realme was in good peace all this season. Than
so it fortuned, that kyng Robert of Scotland, who had ben
rhyght hardy, and had suffered moche travaile agaynst
Inglisshemen, and ofte tyme he had ben chased and dis-
comfeted, in the tyme of kyng Edward the fyrst, gransdfather
to this yong kyng Edward the iii. he was as than become
very olde, and auncient, and sicke (as it was sayd) of the
great evyll and malady. Whan he knewe theadventures
that was fallen in Ingland, howe that the olde kyng Edwarde
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the ii. was taken and deposed downe fro his regalley, and his CAP. XV
crowne, and certayne of his counsellours behedded and put to Howe that
distraction, as ye have hard here before, than he bethought kyng Robert
hym that he wolde defye the yonge kyng Edward the iii. 
de Breux of
because he was yong, and that the barons of the realme Scotland
defyed kyng Edward.

[thought] the better to sped in his purpose to conquere part
of Ingland. And so about Easter in the yere of our Lorde
M.CCC.xxvii. he sent his defyaunse to the yong kyng Edward
the iii. and to all the realme, sendyng them worde, howe
that he wolde entre into the realme of Ingland, and brene
before hym, as he had done before tyme, at suche seson as
the discomfeture was at the castell of 'Estermelin,' where as 1Sirling.
the Inglishmen receyved great dammage. Whan the kyng
of Ingland and his counsell, percyved that they were de-
fyed, they caused it to be knowne over all the realme; and
commanded that all the nobles, and all other, shuld be
redy appareled every man after his estate: and that they
shulde be by Ascension day next after, at the towne of
Yorke, standing northward. The kyng sent moche people
before to kepe the frontiers against Scotland, and sent a
great ambassade to sir John of Heynault, praying hym
right effectuously that he wold helpe to socour, and to kepe
company with hym, in his voyaige against the Scottis, and
that he wolde be with hym at the Ascencion day nexte
after, at Yorke, with suche company as he myght gette of
men of warre, in those parties. Whan syr John of Hey-
naulte lorde of Beamonde hard the kyngis desyre, he sent
streyght his letters and his messengers in every place, where
as he thought to recover, or attaigne to have any company
of men of warre, in Flaunders, in Heynaulte, in Brabant,
and in other places, desyryng them that in theyr best
apparel for the warre, they wolde mete hym at Wysant,
for to go over the see with hym into Ingland. And all
suche as he sent unto came to hym with a glad chere, and
dyverse other that hard therof, in trust to attaigne to as
moche honour, as they had, that were with hym in Ingland
before at the other voyaige. So that by that tyme the sayd
lorde Beamonde was come to Wysant, ther was redy shyppes
for hym and his company, brought out of Ingland. And
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XV

so they toke shyppyng and passed over the see, and arrayved
at Dover, and so than seased nat to ryde till they came
within iii. dayes of Pentecoste to the towne of Yorke, wher
as the kyng, and the queene his mother, and all his lordis
were with great host, taryeng the comynge of sir John
of Heynaulte, and had sent many before of theyr men of
armes, archers and comen people of the good townes and
villages, and as people resorted, they were caused to be
logged ii. or iii. leges of, al about in the countries. And on a
day thynge came sir John of Heynaulte and his company,
who were ryght welcome and well receyved, both of the
kyng, of the queene his mother, and of al other barons, and
to them was delyvered the subbarbes of the cite, to lodge
in. And to sir John of Heynaulte was delyvered an abbey
of whyte monkes for hym and his howsold. Ther came
with hym out of Heynaulte, the lorde of Angien, who was
called syr Gualtier, and sir Henry lorde Dantoing, and the
lorde of Saignoles, and sir Fastres de Rue, sir Robert de
Bailleul, and sir Guilliam de Bailleul his brother, and the
lorde of Havereth chasteleyne of Mons, syr Allarde de
Brysmell, syr Mychell de Ligne, syr John de Mentigni the
yonger, and his brother, syr Sawa de Boussat, the lorde of
Gommegines, syr Perecyval de Severnes, the lorde of Byaurien,
and the lorde of Fioien. Also of the countre of Flaundres,
ther was syr Hector of Vilais, sir John de Rodes, syr
Vauart de Guistell, the lorde of Traces, sir Guyssyun de
la Muele; and dyverse came thither of the countrey of
Brabant, as the lorde of Dufle, syr Tyrry of Vaucourt, syr
Rasse de Gres, syr John de Cassebegne, syr John Pylestre,
syr Guyliaum de Courterelles, the iii. bretherne de Harie-
beque, syr Gualtier de Hautberge, and dyvers other.
And of Beaignons, ther was syr John de Libeaux, and sir
Henry his brother, sir Henry de la Chapell, syr Hewe de
Hay, syr John de Limies, syr Lambert de Pres, and sir
Guilbert de Hers. And out of Cambresis and Artous, ther
were come certayn knyghtis of theyr owne good wyllis to
avaunce theyr bodyes, so that sir John of Heynaulte had
well in his company v. C. men of armes well apparailed,
and richely mounted. And after the feast of Pentecost came
thyther, syr Guyllaume de Juliers, who was after duke of

1 Enghien.
2 Pagnolle.
3 Briffoul.
4 Someries.
5 Straten.
6 Hesbignons.
7 Jean le Be.
The discension that was bitwene the archers of Inglande and them of Heynaulte.

The gentle kyng of Ingland, the better to fest these straunget lordeis and all their company, helde a great courte on Trynitye Sunday in the friers, wher as he and the quene his mother were lodged, kepyng heyr house eche of them apart. All this feast the kyng hadde well v.C. knyghtis, and xv. were new made. And the quene had well in her courte lx. ladys and damozelles, who were there redy to make feast and chere to sir John of Heynaulde and to his companye. There myght have been seen great noblesse, [and] plenty of all maner of straunge vitaille. There were ladys and damozelles freshely apparsayled redy to have danced, if they myght have leve. But incontynent after dyner, there began a great fraye bitwene some of the gromes and pages of the straungers, and of the archers of Inglande, who were lodged among them in the said subbarbis, and anon all the archers assembled them to gether with theyr bowes and drove the straungers home to theyr lodgyng, and the most part of the knyghtis and maisters of them were as then in the kyngis courte, but as soon as they harde tydynges of the fray, eche of them drewe to theyr owne lodgyng, in great hast suche as myght entre, and suche as coulde nat get in, were in great parell. For the archers who were to the nombre of iii. M. shotte faste theyr arowes, nat sparyng maisters nor varletts. And it was thought and supposed that this fraye was begonne by some of the frendis of the Spencers, and of the erle of Arundels, who were put to deth before, by the aide and counsell of sir John of Heynaulte, as ye have harde before, as than paraventure thought to be somewhat revenged, and to
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVI

set disorde in the hoost. And so the Inglysshaemcen, that
were hostes to these straugers shoot fast ther doores, and
wyndowes, and wolle nat suffre them to entre in to theyr
lodgyngis: howbeit some gate in on the backe syde and
quickly armed them, but they durst nat issue out into the
strete for feare of the arowes.

Than the strauers brake out on the backe side, and
brake downe pales and hedges of gardens, and drewe them
into a certeyne playne place, and abode their company,
tyll at the last they were a C. and above of men of armes,
and as many unharne, suche as coulde nat get to theyr
lodgyngis. And when they were assembled together, they
hasted them to go and succoure theyr compaignyons, who
defended theyr lodgyngis in the great strete. And as they
went forth they passed by the lodgyng of the lorde Denghyen,
wher as there were great gatis both before and behynd,
openyng into the great strete: and the archers of Ingland
shot fersly at the howse, and ther were many of the Hainalters
hurte: and the good knyght Fastre de Rue, and syr John
Parcavall de Meries, and syr Sansse de Boussac, these iii.
coulde nat entre in to theyr lodgyngis to arme them, but
they dyd as valiantly as though they had ben armed. They
had great levers in their handis, the whiche they founde in
a carpenters yarde, with the whiche they gave suche strokis
that men durst nat aproche to them. They iii. bette dowe
that day, with suche few company as they had, mo than lx.
For they were great and myghty knyghtis. Frynally the
archers that were at the fraye, were discomfette and put
to chase, and there was deede in the place, well to the nombre
of CCC. And it was said they were all of the buss hopprike
of Lyncoln. I trowe God dydnever gyve more grace and
fortune to any people, than he dyd as than, to this gentle
knyght, syr John of Heynaulte and to his company. For
these Inglysche archers intended to none other thynge, but to
murder and to robbe them, for all that they were come to
serve the kyng in his besynesse. These strauers were
never in so great parell, al the season that they lay, nor
they were never after in surete, tylly they were agayne at
Wysant, in theyr owne countre. For they were fallen in
so great hate with all the archers of the ooste, that some of
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the barones and knyghtis of Inglande shewed unto the lorde of Heynaulte, gyvyng them warnyng, that the archers and other of the comon people were alied to gether to the nombre of vi. M. to thentent to breymne or to kyll them in theyr lodgyngis, eyther by nyght, or by day. And so they lyved at a hard adventure, but eche of them promysed to helpe and aye other, and to selle derely theyr lyves or they were slayne. So they made many fayre ordynaunces among theym selfe by good and great advyce: wherby they were fayne often tymes, to lye in theyr harneis by nyght, and in the daye to kepe theyr lodgyngis, and to have all theyr harneys redy and theyr horses sadled. Thus continually they were faine to make watche by their constables in the feldes and high wayes about the courte, and to sende out scout watches a myle of, to se ever if any suche people were commynge to them warde, as they were enforced of, to the entent that if theyr scoutwatche hard any noyse, or movyng of people drawyng to the cite warde, than incontynent they shulde gyve them knowledge, wherby they myght the soner gader togyther, eche of them under their owne baner, in a certayn place, the whiche they had aduyed for the same entent. And in this tribulacion they abooide in the sayd subbarbes, by the space of foure wekis, and in all that season, they durst nat go far fro their harneis, nor fro theyry lodgyngis, savyng a certayn of the chief lorde among them, who went to the courte to se the kyng and his counsell, who made them right good chere. For if the said eyyll adventure had nat ben, they had sojourned there in great ease, for the cite and the countrey about them was ryght plenti-full. For at the tyme of vi. weekis that the kyng and the lorde of Inglande, a tournaments more than lx. M. men of warre laye ther, the vitailes were never the derer, for ever they had a peny worthe for a peny, as well as other had before they cam ther, and ther was good wyne of Gascoyn, and of Angiew; and of the Ryne, and plenti therof, with right good chepe, as well of pollen, as of other vitailes; and there was dayly brought before they lodgyngis hey, ootes, and litter, wherof they were well served for their horses, and at a metly price.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVII

Here the hystory speketh of the maner of the Scottis, and howe they can warre.

And whan they hadde sojourned iii. weekis after thys sayd fray, than they had knowledg fro the kyng, by the Marshals of the ooste, that the next weeke every man shuld provyde for cartis and chairetis, tentis and pavlyions to lye in the felde, and for all other necessaries therto belongyng, to the entent to drawe towarde Scotlande. And whan every man was rede appariled, the kyng and all his barones went out of the cite, and the first nyght they lodged vi. myle forwarde. And syr John of Heynault and his company were lodged alwayes as nere the kyng as myght be, to do hym the more honour, and also to thentent that the archers shulde have noo vauntage of hym nor of his companye. And there the kyng abode ii. dayes and ii. nyghtes, taryeng for all them that were behynd, and to be well advysed that they lacked nothyng. And on the iii. daye they dislodged, and went forwardeyll they came to the cite of Durham, a dayes journey within the countraye called Northumbrelande, the whiche at that tyme was a savage and a wylde countraye, full of desartis and montaignes, and a ryght pore countraye of every thyng, saving of beastis: through the whiche there ronnethe a ryver ful of flynt and great stones, called the water of Tyne. And on this ryver standeth the towne and castell of Carlyel, the whiche sometyme was kyng Arthurs, and helde his courte there often tymes. Also on that ryver is assysed the towne of Newe castell upon Tyne: in the whiche towne was redy the Marchall of Inglande, with a great company of men of armes, to kepe the countraye agaynst the Scottis; and at Carlyel was the lorde Huford and the lorde Mowbray, who were governours there, to defende the Scottis the passage; for the Scottis coulde nat entre into Inglande, but they must passe this sayd ryver in one place or other. The Inglisshemen coulde here no tydyngis of the Scottis tyl they were come to the entre of the sayd countraye. The

1 Hereford.
Syr John Froissart

Scottis were passed this ryver so prively, that they of Carlyel nor yet of Newe castell knew nothyng therof, for bitwene the sayd townes it was xxiii. Englishe mile. These Scottysshe men are right hardy, and sore traveluyng in harneys and in warres; for whan they wyll entre into Ingland, within a daye and a nyght, they wyll drywe theyr hole host xxiii. myle, for they are al a horsbacke, without it be the traundals and laggers of the oost, who folow after, a foote. The knyghtis and squiers are well horsed, and the comon people and other, on litell hakenys and geldyngeis; and they carey with them no cartis, nor chariettis, for the diversitie of the mountaignes that they must passe through, in the countrey of Northumbrelande. They take with them noo purveyaunce of brede nor wyne, for their useage and sobrenes is suche in tym of warre, that they wyll passe in the journey a great long tyme, with flesche halfe soden, without brede, and drynke of the ryver water without wyne: and they nother care for pottis nor pannis, for they seeth beastis in their owne skynnes. They are ever sure to fynde plenty of beastis in the countrey that they wyll passe through. Therfore they carie with them none other purveyaunce, but on their horse: bitwene the saddylle and the pannell, they trusse a brode plate of metall, and behynde the saddyl, they wyll have a lytly sacker full of ootemele, to the entent that whan they have eaten of the sodden flesche, than they ley this plate on the pyre, and tempre a lytly of the ootemele: and whan the plate is hote, they cast of the thyn paste theron, and so make a lytly cake in maner of a crakenell, or bysket, and that they eate to comfort with all theyr stomakis. Wherfore it is no great merveile, though they make greater journeys than other peppe do. And in this maner were the Scottis entred into the sayd countrey, and wasted and breny all about as they went, and toke great nombre of bestis. They were to the nombre of iiiii. M. men of armes, knyghtis and squiers, mounted on good horses, and other x. M. men of warre were armed after their gyse, right hardy and fyrse, mounted on lyttel hakenys, the whiche were never tyed nor kept at hard meate, but lette go to pastyre in the feldis and bushes. They had two good capitayns, for kyng Robert of Scotland, who in his dayes had ben hardy
and prudent, was as than of great age, and sore grieved with the great sickness, but he had made one of his capitaynes, a gentle prince, and a valiant in armes, called the erle of Morrell, beryng in his armes sylver three oreylls gowles, and the other was the lorde William Duglas, who was reputed for the most hardy knygth, and greatest aduenturers in al the realme of Scotland, and he bare azure a cheffe sylver. These two lordes were renomed as chief in all dedis of armes, and great prowesse in all Scodlande.

CAP. XVIII

Howe the kyng of Inglande made his first journey agaynst the Scottis.

WAN the kyng of Ingland and his oste had sene and hard of the fyers that the Scottis had made in Inglande, incontyment was cryed alarme, and every man commaunded to dislodge, and folowe after the marshals baners. Than every man drewe to the felde redye apparailed to fyght. There was ordeyned thre great batels a foote, and to every batell ii. wyngis of v. c. men of armes, knyghtis and squiers: and xxx. M. other armed, and well apparailed: the one halfe on lyttle hakenys, and the other were men of the coutre a fote, sent out of good townes at their wages; and xxxiiii. M. archers a foote, besyde all the other raskall and folowers of the oste; and as these batels were thus ordrd, so they avauenced forward, well raynged, and in good order, and folowed the Scottis by the syth of the smoke that they made with burnyng, and thus they folowed all that day till it was nere nyght. Than the ost lodged them in a wodde by a lyttle ryversyde, there to rest, and to abyde for theyr cariage and purveyauncis. And at that day the Scottis had brent and wasted, and pilled the coutrey about, within v. myle of the Inglysshe oste: but the Inglishmen could nat overtake them; and the next day in the mornnyng all the ost armed theym, and displayed theyr baners on the feld, every man redy apparailed in his owne batell, and so avauenced, without dis-
SYR JOHN FROISSART

orderyng, all the day through mountaignes and vallyes; but CAP. XVIII
for all that they could never aproche nere to the Scottis, Howse the
who went wastynge the countrye before them. There were kyng of Ing-
landemadethis
suche marisshes and savage desertis, mountaignes and dales,
first journey
that it was commanded, on peyne of deth, that none of the
agaynsethe
ost shulde passe before the baners of the marshals. And
Scottis.
when it drewe towards the nyght, the people, horse and
carriage, and namely the men afoote, were so sore travailed,
that theye coulde nat endure to labour any farther that day.
And when the lordes sawe that theyr labour in folowyng
the Scottis was in vayne, and also they perceived well,
though the Scottis wold abyde them, yet they myght take
theyr felde in suche a place, or on suche a hyll, that they
coulde nat fyght with them, without it were to their great
dammage and jeopardy: than was it commanded in the
kyngis name, by the marshals, that the ost shulde take
theyr lodgyng for that nyght, and so to take counsell and
advysse, what shulde be best to do the nexte daye. So the
oste was lodged in a wodde by a river syde; and the kyng
was lodged in a lylte poore abbey: his men of warre, horse
and carage were mervallously fortravailed. And when
every man had takyn his place to lodge ther al nyght, than
the lordes drewe them aparte, to take counsaille howe they
myght fyght with the Scottis, considerynge the countrey
that theye were in: for as farre as theye coulde understande,
the Scottis went ever forewardes, all about burnyng and
wastynge the countrye, and perceyved well, howe theye coulde
nat in any wyse feyght with them amonge these mountaignes,
without great parell or daunger, and theye sawe well also
theye coulde nat overtakke them; but it was thought that
the Scottis must nedis passe agayne the river of Tyne
homewarde; therfore it was determined by great advyse and
counsaille, that all the ost shulde remove at mydnyght, and
to make haste in the monnyng, to the entent to stoppe the
passage of the ryver from the Scottis, therby theye shulde
be advysed by force, eyther to feyght with them, or els to
abyde styll in Inglande to theyr great daunger and losse.
And to this conclusion all the ost was accorded, and so
supped and lodged as well as theye myght that nyght, and
every man was warned to be redy, at the fyrst soundyng of
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVIII

the trumpette; and at the secunde blaste, every man to
arme hym without delaye; and at the thyrde, every man
quyckely to mounte on theyr horses, and to drawe under
theyr owne standard and baner; and every man to take with
hym but one loffe of brede, and to trusse it behynde hym
on his horse. It was also determined, that they shulde
leave behynde theym all theyr loose harneys, and all maner
of cariaigs and purveyaunces: for they thought surely to
fyght with the Scottis the next daye, what so ever daunger
they were in, thynkyng to jeoparde, eythor to wyn, or to leese
all. And thus it was ordyned, and so it was accomplysshed:
for about mydnyght every man was redy apparaled, fewe
had slepte but lytle, and yet they had sore traved the daye
before. As great haste as they made, or they were well
raunged in batell, the day began to appere. Than they
avanced forward in al hast, through mountaignes, valeys,
and rokkes, and through many evyll passages, without any
playn countrey. And on the hyest of these hylles, and on
the playn of these valeys, there were mervaylouse great
marshes and daungerous passages, that it was great mervaille
that moche people hadde nat been lost, for they roode ever
styll forward, and never taried one for another, for who so
ever fel in any of these marshes, with moche peyne coulde
getthe any ayde to helpe theym out agayne; so that in
diverse places there were many lost, and specially horse and
cariaigs; and often tymes in the day there was cryed alarum,
for it was said ever, that the formost company of their oste
wer fyghtynge with their enimies; so that the hyndermost
went it had ben true: wherfore they hasted them over
rokkis, and stones and mountaygnes, with helme and sheld
redy apparaled to fyght, with spere and swerde redy in
hand, without tariyng for father, brother, or companyon.
And whan they had thus ron forth often tymes in the day,
the space of halfe a myle togyther towarde the crye, wenyng
it had been theyr enimyes, they were deceyved: for the
crye ever arose by the reysyng of hartis, hyndis, and other
savage beastsis, that were seen by them in the forewarde,
after the whiche beastsis they made such showting and
cryng, that they that came after, went they had ben a
fyghtynge with theyr enimyes. Thus rode forthe all that
daye, the yonge kyng of Inglande, by mountaignes and CAP. XVIII
desartis, without fynding any hygh way, towne, or village. Howe the
And when it was agaynst nyght, they came to the ryver of
Tyne, to the same place where as the Scottis hadde passed
over in to Inglande, wenying to them, that they must nedis
repasse agayyne the same wyaye. Than the kyng of Inglande
and his ooste passed over the same river, with suche gydis as
he had, with moche peyne and travaile, for the passage was
full of great stones. And when they were over, they lodged
theym that nyght by the ryver syde; and by that tyme
the son was goon to reste, and there was but fewe among
them that had other axe or hoke, or any instrument to cutte
downe any woodde to make their lodgyngis withal; and
there were many that had loste there owne company, and
wist nat where they were. Some of the footemen were farre
beynynde, and wysst nat well what way to take: but suche as
knewe beste the country, sayd playnly, they hadde rydden
the same daye xxi. Englysshe myles: for they roode as
faste as they might without any rest, but at suche passages
as they could nat chese; all this nyght they laye by this ryver
syde, styll in theyr harneys, holdynge theyr horses by theyr
raynes in theyr handis, for they wysst nat wherunto to tye
them; thus theyr horses dyd eate no meate of all that
nyght nor day before; they had nother ootes nor forage for
them: nor the people of the ooste had no sustenance of all
that day nor nyght, but every man his loffe that he hadde
caryed beyynde hym, the whiche was sore wette with the
swette of the horses: nor they dranke none other drynke
but the water of the ryver, withowte it were some of the
lordis that had cariedy botels with them: nor they had no
fyer nor lyght, for they had nothyng to make lyght withall,
without it were some of the lordes that had torches brought
with them. In this great trouble and daunger they passed
all that nyght: their armour still on their backis, their
horses redy saddled. And when the day began to appere,
the whiche was greatly desired of all the hole oсте, they
trusted than to fynde some redresse for themselfe and for
their horses, or els to fyght with theyr enemies, the whiche
they greatly desyred, to thentent to be delivered out of the
great travaile and peyne that they had endured; and all
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVIII

That day it rayned so faste that the ryver and passage was waxen great, and rysen so high, that or it were noone, ther myght none passe the passages agayn; wherfore they could nat sende to know where as they were, nor where to have any forage or lyter for theyr horses, nor brede nor drynke for theirow sustainauncis: but so all that nyght they wereayne to fast, nor theyr horses had nothyng but leves of trees and herbes: they cut downe bowes of trees with theyr swordis to tye withall their horses, and to make them selfe lodges. And about noone some poore folkis of the countrey were founde, and they said howe they were as than xiii. myle from Newcastell upon Tyne, and xi. myle from Carlyle, and that there was no towe nerer to them, wherein they might fynde any thyng to do theym ease withall. And when this was shewed to the kyng, and to the lorde of his counsell, incontinent were sent thither horses and sompters, to fetch them some purveyance; and there was a crye in the kyngis name made in the towe of Newcastell, that who so ever wolde bryng brede, or wyne, or any other vitaille, shulde be payd therfore incontinent at a good price, and that they shulde be conducted to the ooste in save garde: for it was published openly that the kyng nor his ooste wolde nat departe from the place that they were in, tyll they had some tydyingis where their enemies were become. And the next day by noone, suche as had ben sent for vitaille, returned agayn to the ooste, with suche purveyauncis as they coulde gette, and that was nat over moche, and with them came other folkis of the countrey, with lyttle nagges, charged with brede eyll bakyn, in panyers, and smalle pere wyne in barels, and other vitaille to sel in the ooste, whereby grete part of the ooste were well refreshed and eased. And thus they continued day by day, the space of viii. dayes, abidynge every day the retournyng agayn of the Scottis, who knew no more where the English ooste lay, than they knewe where they wer, so eche of them were ignorant of other. Thus iii. dayes and iii. nyghtis, they were in maner withowte brede, wyne, candel, or lyght, foder, or forage, or any maner of purveyaunce, other for horse or man; and after the space of iii. dayes, a lofe of brede was solde for vi. d. the whiche was worthe but i. d., and a gallon of wyne for vi. grootis, that
SYR JOHN FROISSART

was worth but vi. d. And yet for all that, there was suche CAP. XVIII rage of famin, that eche toke vitailes out of others handis, Howe the wherby there rose divers batels and stryfes bitwene sondry kyng of Ing- companyons; and yet beside all these mischiefes it never seased to rayne all the hoole weke, wherby theyre saddels, pannels, and countresyngles were all rottyn and broken, and most part of their horses hurt on their backs: nor they had nat wherwith to shoo them, that were unshodde, nor they had nothyng to cover them selfe withall, fro the rayne and colde, but grene busshes, and their armour; nor they had nothyng to make fyre withal, but grene bowes, the whiche wold nat burne because of the rayne. In this great mishief, they were all the weke, without heryng of any worde of the Scottis, upon trust they shulde repasse agayn into their owne countreis, the same way, or nere ther about: wherby great noysse and murmour began to ryse in the ooste, for some said, and layd it to others charge, that by theyr counsaile the kyng, and all they were brought in to that daunger, and that they had done it to betraye the kyng and all his ooste. Wherfore it was ordeyned by the kyng and by his counsaile, that the nexte mornyng they shulde remove the ooste, and repasse agayne the rywer, about vii. myle thens, wher as they myght passe more at their ease. Than was it cried through out the ooste, that every man shulde be redy apparailed to remove, the nexte day by times; also there was a crye made, that who so ever coulde bryng to the kyng certayne knowledge where the Scottis were, he that brought fyrst tydyngis therof, shulde have for his labour a C. li. lande to hym, and to his heires for ever, and to be made a knyght of the kyngis hande.

When this crye was made in the ooste, divers Englishe knyghtis and squiers, to the nombre of xv. or xvi. for covetyse of wynnyng of this promyse, they passed the rywer in great parell, and rode forth throughe the mountaignes, and departed eche one from other, takynge their adventure. The next mornyng the ooste dislodged, and rode fayre and easely all the daye, for they were but evyll apparailed, and dyd so moche that they repassed agayn the rywer, with moche payn and travaile, for the water was depe, because of the rayn that had fallen, wherfore many dyd swym, and
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVIII

Howe the kyng of Inglande made his first journey agaynst the Scottis.

some were drowned. And whan they were al over, than they lodged the oste, and ther they founde some forage, medowes and feldis, about a lytle village, the whiche the Scottis had brent whan they past that way: and the nexte daye they departed fro thens, and paste over hyls and dales all day tyll it was noone, and than they founde some villages brent by the Scottis, and there about was some champonyoun countrie, with corne and medowes, and so that nyght the ost lodged ther. Agayn the iii. day they rode forth, so that the most parte of the oste wist whiche way, for they knewe nat the countrie, nor they coulde here no tydyngis of the Scottis. And agayn the iii. day they rode forth in lyke maner, tyl it was about the houre of iii. and there came a squyer fast rydyng toward the kyng, and said; And it like your grace, I have brought you parfit tydyngis of the Scottis your ennemies: surely they be within iii. myle of you, lodged on a great mountaine abidying ther for you, and ther they have ben all this viii. dayes, nor they knewe no more tydyngis of you, than ye dyd of them: sir, this that I shew you is of trueth, for I aproched so nere to them, that I was takyn prisoner, and brought before the lorde of their oste, and there I shewed them tydyngis of you, and how that ye seke for them, to thentent to have batell: and the lorde dyd quyt me my raunson and prison, when I had shewed them howe our grace had promised a C. li. sterlyng of rent to hym, that brought fyrst tydyngys of them to you, and they made me to promise that I shuld nat rest, tyl I had shewed you thys tydyngys, for they sayd they had as great desire to fyght with you, as ye had with theym: and ther shall ye fynde them without faulte. And as soone as the kyng had harde this tydynges, he assembled all his ooste in a fayre medowe to pasture theyr horses: and besidis ther was lytle abbey the whiche was all brent, called in the dayes of kyng Arthur, le Blanche lande. Ther the kyng confessed hym, and every man made hym redy. The kyng caused many masses to be song, to howsell all suche as had devotion therto; and incontynent he assigned a C. li. sterlyng of rent to the squyer that had brought hym tydyngis of the Scottis, accoreyng to his promys, and made hym knyght his owne handis, before all the oste. And
SYR JOHN FROISSART

when they had well rested them, and takyn repaste, than the trompet sounded to horse, and every man mounted, and the baners and standers foloweth thy newe made knyght, every battell by it selfe in good order, through mountaignes and dales, raynged as well as they myght, ever redy appareled to fyght: and they roode, and made suche hast, that aboute noone they were so nere the Scottys, that eche of theym myghte clerecly se other. And as soone as the Scottis sawe theym, they issued owte of theyre lodges a foote, and ordeyned iii. great battelles, in the avaylynyge of the hyll: and at the foote of thy mountaygne, there ranne a great ryver, full of great rokes and stones, so that none myght passe over, withowe greate daunger or jeopardye, and though the Englishmen hadde passed over the ryver, yet was there no place nor rowme, bytwene the hyll and the ryver, to sette the batayle in good order. The Scottis hadde stablysshed their two fyrete battelles, at the two corners of the mountaigne, joynynge to the rockes, so that none myght well mounte upon the hyll to assayle theym; but the Scottis were ever redy to beate with stones the assaylantys, if they passed the ryver. And whan the lوردes of Inglande sawe the behavynge and the maner of the Scottis, they made all their people to alght a foote, and to put of theyr spurrys, and araynged iii. great battelles, as they hadde done before, and there were made many newe knyghtis. And whan theyr battelles were sette in good order, than some of the lوردes of Inglande brought theyr yong kynge a horse backe, before all the battelles of the ost, to the entent to gyve therby the more courageous to all his people; the whiche kynge in full goodyly maner prayed and requyred them ryght graciously, that every man wolde payne theym to do theyr beste, to save his honour, and commone weale of his realme. And it was commaunded upon peyne of deth, that none shulde goe before the marshals baners, nor breke theyr arraye, without they were commaunded. And than the kynge commaunded, that they shulde advance towaerde their ennemyes, fayre and easely: and so they dyd, and every battell went forth in good array and order, a great space of grounde, to the descenlding of the mountaygne, where as the Scottis were. And this the Englishes ost dyd.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVIII

to thentent to se if their enemyes wolde breke their selde,
or nat, and to se what they wolde do, but they could nat
parcroye that they were about to remove in any wise; they
wer so nere toguyther, that they myght knowe eche others
armes. Than the oste stode styll to take other counsell.
And some of the oste mounted on good horses, and rode
forth to skrymyshe with theym, and to beholde the passage
of the ryver, and to se the countynaunce of theyre enemyes
more nerer. And there were herauldis of armes sent to the
Scottis, gyvyng them knowledge, if that they wolde come
and passe the ryver to fight with them in the playn selde,
they wolde drawe backe fro the ryver, and gyve theym suffi-
cient place to araynge theyr batelles, eyther the same day
or els the next, as they wold chose them selfe, or els to lette
them do lyke wyse, and they wolde come over to them.
And whan the Scottis harde this, they toke counsell among
theyselufe: and anon they answerd the herauldis, how they
wolde do nother the one, nor the other, and sayd, Syrs, your
kyng and his lordis se well how we be here in this realme,
and have brennt and wasted the countrey as we have passed
through, and if they be displeased ther with, lette them
amend it whan they wyll, for here we wyll abyde, as long as
it shall please us. And as soone as the kyng of Ingland
hard that answer, hit was incontynent cryed, that all the
oste shuld lodge there that nyght without reculyng backe.
And so the oste lodged there that nyght, with moche payne,
on the harde ground and stones, alwayes styll armed. They
had no stakes nor roddis, to tye withall their horses, nor
forage, nor busche to make withall any fyre. And whan
they were thus lodged, than the Scottis caused some of theyre
people to kepe styll the selde, where as they had ordeyned
their batelles, and the remnant went to their lodgyngs, and
they made suche fyers that it was merveile to beholde.
And biteme the day and the nyght, they made a merveilus
great brute, with blowyng of hornes all at ones, that it
seemed proprely that all the develles of hell had ben there.
Thus these two ostis were lodged that nyght; the whiche
was saynte Peters nyght, in the begynnyng of Augustine, the
yere of oure lorde M.CCC. xxvii. And the nexte monnyng,
the lordes of Inglande harde masse, and raynged agayne
theyre batelles, as they hadde done the dase before: and
the Scottis in lyke wyse ordred theyr batelles. Thus both
the ostis stooede styll in batell, tyl it was noone. The
Scottis made never semblant to come to the Englyshe
oste, to fyght with them, nor in lyke wyse the Englishe
men to them: for they coulde nat aproche to gther withowte
great damnage. There were dyverse compaignyons a horse-
back, that passed the ryver, and some a foote, to skrymishe
with the Scottis: and in like wyse some of the Scottis brake
oute, and skrymysshed with them; so that there were
dyverse on bothe partyes slayne, wounded, and takyn
prisoner. And after that noone was paste, the lordes of
Inglande commaunded every man, to drawe to theyr lodging,
for they sawe well the Scottis wolde nat fyght with theym:
and in like maner thus they dyd iii. dasyes togethery, and the
Scottis in lyke case kepte styll theyr mountaygnes. Howe
be it there was skrymysshyng on bothe partyes, and dyverse
slayne, and prisoners takyn. And every nyght the Scottis
made great fyres, and great brute with showtyng and
blowyng of hornes. The entencion of the Englyshe men
was, to holde the Scottis there, in maner as beseged: (for
they coulde nat fyghte with theym there as they were)
thynkyng to have famysshed theym. And the Englisshemen
knewe well by suche prisoner as they hadde takyn, that the
Scottis hadde nother bredde, wyne, nor salte, nor other
purveyaunce, save of beastsis they had great plentye, the
whiche they hadde takyn in the countrey, and myght eate
at their pleasure without bredde, whiche was an evyll dyette,
for they lacked oten meale to make cakes withall, as is sayde
before, the whiche dyet some of the Englissh men used,
when they hadde nede, specially Borderers, whom they make
rodes into Scotlande. And in the mornynge the ii. i. day,
the Englysh men loked on the mountaigne wher as the
Scottis were, and they coulde se no creature, for the Scottis
were departed at mydnyght. Than was there sent men a
horse backe, and a foote over the ryver, to knowe where
they were become; and about noone they founde theym
lodged on another mountaigne, more stronger than the other
was, by the same ryver syde, and where there was a great
wodde on the one syde, to goo and come secretly, whan they
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVIII

Howe the kyng of Eng-land made his first journey agaynst the Scottis.

1327

lyst. Than incontynent the Englisshye oste dislodged, and drewe to that parte inbatelled in good order, and lodged theym on a nother hyll ageynst the Scottis, and raynged their battelles, and made semblant to have come to theym. Than the Scottis issued out of their lodges, and set theyr batels along the ryver styde ageynst them, but they wolde never come toward the Englisshye oste, and the Englishmen could nat go to them, without they wold have ben slayn, or taken at avantage. Thus they lodged ech e ayenst other, the space of xviii. daies; and often bym the kyng of Ing-land sent to them his harauldis of armes, offerynge them, that yf they wolde come and fyght with hym, he wolde gyve them place sufficient on the playn ground, to pytche theyr felde: or elles lette theym gyve hym rowme and place, and he assured theym, that he wolde come over the ryver and fyght with theym; but the Scottis wolde never agree therto. Thus both the oostis suffered moche Payne and travayle, the space that they laye so nere togyther; and the fyrst nyght that the Englishe ost was thus lodged on the second montaigine, the lorde William ¹ Duglas toke with hym aboute CC. men of armes, and past the ryver farre of fro the oste, so that he was nat perceyved, and sodenyly he brake into the Englyshe ooste, about mydnyght, cryng Duglas, Duglas, ye shall all dye, theves of Inglande: and he slewe, or he seassed CCC. men, some in their beddis, and some skant redy: and he strake his horse with the spurres, and came to the kyngis owne tent, alwayes cryng Duglas, and strake a sundre ii. or iii. cordis of the kyngis tent, and so departed, and in that retret he lost some of his men. Than he returned agyyn to the Scottis, so that ther was no more done: but every nyght the Englishe oste made good and sure watche, for they doubted makynge of skryes: and ever the most part of the oste laye in their harneys; and every day ther were skry-mysshes made, and men slayne on both parties; and in conclusion, the last daye of xxiii. ther was a Scottisshye knyght takyn, who ageynst his wyll shewyd to the lordes of Ingland, what state and condition the Scottis were in: he was so sore examyned, that for feare of his lyfe, he shewyd howe the lordes of Scotland were accorded among themselfe, that the same nyght every man shuld be redy armed, and to folowe
the baners of the lorde William Douglases, and every man to kepe hym secrete; but the knyght could nat shewe them what they intended to do. Than the lordis of Ingland drewe them to counsale, and ther it was thought among them, that the Scottis myght in the nyght tyme, come and assaile their ooste on both sydes, to adventure themselfe other to lyve or dye, for they could endure no longer the famyne: James.

Than the Englyshe lordes ordeyned iii. great batels, and so stode in iii. parties without their lodgynge, and made great fyres, therby to se the better; and caused all their pages to kepe ther lodgynge and horses. Thus they stode styll all that nyght armed, every man under his owne standard and baner: and in the brekyng of the daye ii. trompettis of Scotland mette with the Englishe scoutwatche, who toke the trompettis, and brought them before the kyng of Ingland and his counsale, and than they said openly; Sirs, what do ye watche here, ye lose but your tyme, for on the jeopardy of our heedis, the Scottis are gone and departed before myndyght, and they are at the lest by this tyme iii. or iiiii. myle on theyr way, and they left us ii. behynd to thentent that we shulde shewe this to you. Than the Englishe lordes said, that it were but a foly to folowe the Scottis, for they sawe well they could nat overtake theym: yet for doubt of decevynge, they kept styll the two trompettis pryvely, and caused their batailes to stande styll arrayd, tyll it was nere prime. And when they sawe for truth, that the Scottis were departed, than every man had leave to retraye to their lodgynge, and the lordes toke counsale to determen what shulde be best to do. And in the meane tyme dyverse of the Englishe ooste mounted on their horses, and passed over the ryver, and came to the mountaigne, where as the Scottis had ben, and ther they founde mo than v. C. great beatis redy slayne, because the Scottis could nat dryve them before theyr ooste, and because that the Englishe men shulde have but small profit of them; also ther they founde CCC. caudrons made of beastis skyynes, with the heare styll on them, strayned on stakkes over the fyre, full of water and full of fleshe, to be sodden, and more than a M. spyttis full of fleshe to be rosted; and more than x. M. olde shoos
THE CRONYCLE OF

made of rawe lether, with the hesre stylle on them, the
whiche the Scottis had left behynd them; also there they
founde v. poore Englyshemen prisoners bounde faste to
certayne trees, and some of their legges broken: than they
were losed and let go, and than they returned agayn, and
by that tyme al the oste was dislodged, and it was ordyned
by the kyng, and by the advyce of his counsaile, that the
hole oste shulde folowe the marshals banyes, and drawe
homewarde in to Ingland: and so they dyd, and at the last
came into a fayre medow, where as they founde forage suf-
cient for their horses and cariagis, wherof they had great
nede, for they were nigh so feble that it shulde have ben
great peyne for them to have goon any furthe. The
Englishe Cronicle sayth, that the Scottis had ben foughit
with all, and syr Roger Mortymer, a lorde of Inglande, had
nat betraied the kyng, for he toke mede and money of
the Scottis, to thentent they myght departe prvely by
nyght, unfoughte withall, as hit maye be seen more playnely
in the Englishe Cronycle, and divers other maters, the
whiche I passe over at this tym, and folowe myn auctor.
And so than the nexte day the oste dislodged agayn and
went forth, and abowte noone they came to a great abbey,
two myle fro the cite of Durham, and there the kyng lodged,
and the oste there about in the feldis, where as they founde
forage sufficient for theymselfe, and for theyr horses: and
the nexte day the oste lay theyr stylle, and the kyng went to
the cite of Durham to se the churche, and there he offered :
and in this cite every man founde their owne cariagis the
whych they hadde lefte xxxii. dayes before in a wodde, at
mydnyght, whan they folowed the Scottis fyrst, as it hath
ben shewed before, for the burgesses and people of Durham,
had founde and broughte theym into theyr towne at theyr
owne costis and chargis. And all these cariagis were sette
in voyde granges and barnes, in savagearde, and on every
mannes cariage his owne cognissance or arnes, wherby every
man myght knowe his owne. And the lorde and gentylmen
were gladd, whan they hadde thus founde their cariages.
Thus they aboode two dayes in the cite of Durham, and the
oste rounde about, for they could nat all lodge within the
cite, and there theyr horses were newe shooede. And than
Syr John Froissart

they toke theyr way to the cite of Yorke, and so within iii.

CAP. XVIII
dayes they came thither, and ther the kyng founde the quene Hows the
his mother, who receyued hym with great joye, and so dyd
all other ladys, damozelles, burgesses, and commons of
the cite.

The kyng gave lycence to all maner of people, every
man to drawe homewarde to theyr owne countreys. And
the kyng thanked greatly the erles, barones, and knyghtis,
of theyr good counsaille and ayde, that they had done to
hym in hys journey; and he retayned styll with hym syr
John of Heynaulte, and all his company, who were greatly
feasted by the quene, and all other ladys. Than the
knyghtis and other straungers of hys company, made a byll
of their horses, and suche other stufte as they had lost in
that journey, and delveredy it to the kyngis counsaille, every
man by it selve: and in trusste of the kyngis promysye, syr
John of Heynaulte lorde Beamont, bounde hymselfe to all
his company, that they shulde be content for every thyng
comprised in theyr owne bills, within a short space; for the
kyng nor his counsaille coulde nat so soone recover golde or
sylver to content theyr desyres; but he delveredy them
sufficient by reason, to pay all their small charges, and to
bryng them home withall into theyr owne countreys; and
anon after within the same yere, they were payd for every
thyng they coulde desyre. Than they of Heynaulte bought
lytle nagges to ryde at theyr ease, theyr lacketis, and
pagis, and all their harneyes and baggages by water in ii.
ships, that was delveredy to them, the whiche shyppes
with theyr stufte arryved at Sluce, in Flaundres; and syr
John of Heynaulte, and his companye, toke theyr leve
of the kyng, of the olde quene, of the erle of Kent, of
the erle of Lancastre, and of all the other barones, who
greatly dyd honour theym. And the kyng caused xii.
knyghtis, and CC. men of armes to company them, for doubt
of the archers of Ingland, of whome they were nat wel
assured, for they must needis passe through the busbopryke
of Lincoln. Thus departed sir John of Heynaulte, and his
rowte, in the conduct of these knyghtis, and rode so long
in theyr journey, that they came to Dover, and ther entred
into the see in shippis and vessels, that they founde redy
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XVIII
Howe the kyng of Inglande made his first journey agaynst the Scottis.

1 Heynaultes.

ther apparyled for them. Than the Englishe knyghtis departed fro thens, and returnd to their owne houses, and the Henous arrived at Wysant, and ther they sojourned ii. dayes, in makyng redy theyr horses and harneys. And in the mean tyme syr John of Heynault, and some of his company rode a pylgrimage to our lady of Bollayn, and after, they returned into Heynaulte, and departed eche fro other, to their owne howses, and countrees: syr John of Heynaulte rode to therle his brother, who was at Valenciennes, who receyved hym joyously, for greatly he loved hym, to whom he recounted all his tydyngis that ye have hard here before.

CAP. XIX
Howe kyng Edward was maryed to my lady Philyp of Heynaulte.

IT was nat long after, but that the kyng, and the quene his mother, therle of Kent, his uncle, therle of Lancaster, sir Roger Mortymer, and all the barones of Inglande, and by the aduyce of the kyngis counsaile, they sent a busshop, and ii. knyghtis banerettis, with ii. notable clerkis, to syr John of Heynaulte, prayeng hym to be a mean, that theyr lorde, the yong kyng of Ingland, myght have in mariage one of the erles daughters of Heynaulte, his brother, named Phyllyp; for the kyng, and all the nobles of the realme, had rather have her than any other lady for the love of hym; syr John of Heynault lord Beaumont, feasted and honored greatly these ambassadours, and brought them to Valenciennes to therle his brother, who honorably receved them, and made them suche chere, that it were over long here to rehere; and whan they had shewed the content of theyr message, therle said, Sirs, I thynke greatly the kyng your prynce, and the quene his mother, and all other lordes of Ingland, syth they have sent suche sufficient personages as ye be, to do me suche honor as to treat for the mariage, to the whiche request, I am well agreed, if our holy father the pope wyll consent theerto; with the whiche answer these ambassadours were right well
content. Than they sent ii. knyghtis, and ii. clerkis, incon-
tinent to the pope, to Avygon, to purchase a dispensation
for this mariage to be had, for without the popes licence
they might nat marié, for the linage of France they were
so nere of kyn, as at the iii. degree, for the ii. mothers were
cosyn jermayns issued of ii. brethern; and whan these am-
bassadours were come to the pope, and their requestis and
considerations well hard, our holy father the pope, with all
the hole colledge, consentyd to this mariage, and so feasted
them. And than they departed and came agayne to Valen-
ciennes with their buls. Than this mariage was concluded
and affirmed on bothe parties. Than was there devysed and
purveyed for theyr apparaile, and for all thyngis honorable,
that belonged to suche a lady, who shuld be quene of Ing-
land: and there this princesse was maryed, by a sufficient
procuration, brought fro the kyng of Ingland; and after
al feastis and triumphes done, than thys yonge quene entred
into the see at Wysant, and arryved with all her company
at Dover. And syr John of Heynaulte lorde Beaumont, her
uncle, dyd conduct her to the cite of London, where there
was made great feast, and many nobles of Ingland, and the
quene was crownd. And there was also great justes,
tourneys, daunysng, carolyng, and great feastis every day;
the whiche endured the space of iii. weekis. The Englishe
Chronicle saith, this mariage, and coronation of the quene,
was done at Yorke, with moche honour, the Sunday in the
evyn of the conversion of saynt Paule, in the yere of our
lorde M.CCC.xxxvii. In the whiche Chronicle is shewed many
other thynges, of the rulynge of the realme, and of the deth
of kyng Edwarde of Carnarvan, and dyverse other debates
that were within the realme: as in the same Chronicle more
planya hit appereth, the whiche the auctor of this boke
spaketh no worde of, because peraventure he knewe it nat,
for it was hard for a stranger to knowe all thyngis. But
accordyng to his wrytyng, this yong quene Philyp aboode
styll in Inglande, with a small company of any parsones of
her owne country, savyng one who was named Wandelet \( ^1 \) of \( ^1 \) Wandelet.
Manny, who aboode styll with the quene, and was her karver,
and after dyd so many great prowesses in dyverse places,that
it were harde to make mencion of them all.
THE CRONYCYLE OF

CAP. XX

Howe kyng Robert of Scotland dyed.

And whan that the Scottis were departed by nyght from the mountaigne, where as the kyng of Ingland hadde beseged them, as ye have harde here before, they went xxii. myle throuthe the savage countrey without restynge, and passed the river of Tyne, right nere to Carlyle; and the nexte day they went into theiryn owne lande, and so departed every man to his owne manse; and within a space after there was a peace purchased bitwene the kyngis of Ingland and Scotland, and as the Englyssh Cronicle sayth, it was done by the speciall counsell of the olde quene, and syr Roger Mortymer; for by theyr meanes there was a parliament holden at Northampton, at the whiche the kyng being within age, granted to the Scottis to release all the feasultes, and homages that they ought to have done to the Crowne of Inglande, by his Charter ensealed; and also there was delveryed to the Scottis an endenture, the whiche was called the Ragmon, wherin was conteyned all the homages and feasultes that the kyng of Scottis, and all the prelatis, erles, and barones of Scotlande, ought to have done to the crowne of Inglande, sealed with all their sealis, with all other rightis, that sondry barones and knyghtis ought to have hadde in the realme of Scotland. And also they delivered to them again the blakke crosse of Scotlande, the whiche the good kyng Edwarde conquered, and brought it out of the aubbe of Scone, the whiche was a precious relique: and all rightis and enteresses that every baron had in Scotlande, was than clene forgven. And many other thyngis were done at that parlament, to the great hurt and prejudice of the realme of Ingland, and in maner ageynst the wyls of all the nobles of the realme, save onely of Isabell the olde quene, and the busshop of Ely, and the lorde Mortymer; they ruled the realme in suche wyse, that every man was mynscontent. So the erle Henry of Lancastre, and syr Thomas Brotherton erle marshall, and syr Edmund of Wodstocke, the kyngis uncles, and dyverse
SYR JOHN FROISSART

other lorde and commons, were agreed together to amende these faultes, if they myght. And in that meane tyme, the quene Isabell, and syr Roger Mortymer, caused another parliament to be holden at Salysbury, at the whiche parliament, syr Roger Mortymer was made erle of Marche, ageynst all the barons wyls of Ingland, in prejudice of the kyng and his realme: and sir John of Eltham, the kyngis brother, was made erle of Cornwall; to the whiche parliament therel Henry of Lancastre wold nat come, wherfore the kyng was broughte in beleve, that he wold have distroyed his parson, for the whiche they assembled a great hoste, and went to warde Bedforde, where as the Erle Henry was with his companye. Than the Erle Marshall, and therel of Kent, the kyngis brother, made a peace bitwene the kyng and the erle of Lancastre, on whose part was syr Henry lorde Beamont, syr Powke Fitzwarin, syr Thomas Rocellin, syr William Trussell, syr Thomas Wyther, and abowte a C. knyghtis, who were all expelld out of Inglande, by the counsaile of quene Isabell, and the Erle Mortymer: for he was so covetous that he thought to have the most part of all their landis into his owne handis, as it is more playnly shewed in the Inglishe Cronicle, the whiche I passe over and folowe myn auctour. The forsaid peace bitwene Ingland and Scotland, was to endure iii. yere; and in the meane tyme it fortuned that kyng Robert of Scotland was right sore aged, and feble; for he was greatly charged with the great sickenes, so that ther was no way with hym but deth; and when he felte that his ende drew nere, he sent for suche barones and lordis of his realme as he trusted best, and shewed them, how there was no remedy with hym, but he must nedis leve this transitory lyfe: commaundyng them on the faith and trouth that they owed hym, truly to kepe the realme, and ayde the yong prince David his sonne, and that when he wer of age, they shulde obey hym, and crowne hym kyng, and to mary hym in suche a place, as was convenient for his astate. Than he called to hym the gentle knyght sir William Guglas, and sayde before all the lorde, Syr William, my dere frend, ye knowe well that I have had moche ado in my dayes, to uphold and susteyn the ryght of this realme, and when I
had most ado, I made a solemn vow, the which as yet I have not accomplisshed, wherof I am right sorry: the which was, if I might achieve and make an end of all my warres, so that I might ones have brought this realm in rest and peace, than I promised in my mynd to have gone and warr’d on Christes enemie’s, adversaries to our holy christen faith. To this purpose myn hart hath ever entended, but our Lorde wolde nat consent therto; for I have had so moche a do in my dayes, and nowe in my last entreprise, I have takyn suche a malady, that I can nat escape. And syth it is so that my body can nat go, nor achieve that my hart desireth, I will sende the hart in stede of the body, to accomplysse myn avowe, and bycause I knowe nat in all my realme, no knyght more valyaunt than ye be, nor of body so well furnysshed to accomplysse myn avowe in stede of my selfe, therefore I require you, myn owne dere aspecial frende, that ye will take on you this voyage, for the love of me, and to acquite my soule agaynst my Lorde God; for I trust so moche in your noblenes and trouth, that and ye will take on you, I doubt nat, but that ye shall acheve it, and than shall I dye in more ease and quiete, so that it be done in suche maner as I shall declare unto you. I woll, that as soone as I am trepassed out of this worlde, that ye take my harte owte of my body, and enbawme it, and take of my treasure, as ye shall thyneke sufficient for that entreprise, both for yourselfe, and suche company as ye will take with you, and present my hart to the holy Sepulchre, where as our Lorde laye, seynge, my body can nat come there; and take with you suche company and purveyaunce, as shal be aparsteyning to your astate. And where so ever ye come, let it be knowne, howe ye carry with you the harte of kyng Robert of Scotland, at his instauce and desire, to be present to the holy Sepulchre. Than all the lords of kyng harde these wordes, wept for pitie. And whan this kyght, syr William Duglas, myght speke for wepyng, he sayd, A gentle and noble kyng, a C tymes I thanke your grace of the great honour that ye do to me, sith of so noble and great treasure ye gyve me in charge: and syr, I shall do with a glad harte, all that ye have commaundede me, to the best of my true power; howe be it, I am nat worthy nor
sufficient to achyeve suche a noble entreprise. Than the kyng sayd, A gentle knyght, I thanke you, so that ye wyl Howe kyng promyse to do it. Syr, sayd the knyght, I shall do it un doubtedly, by the faythe that I owe to God, and to the ordre of knyghthodde. Than I thanke you, sayd the kyng, for nowe shall I dye in more ease of my mynde, sith that I know that the most worthy and sufficient knyght of my realme shall achyeve for me, the whiche I could never atteyne unto. And thus soone after thyse, noble Robert de Bruse, kyng of Scotland, trepassed out of this uncertayne worlde, and hors hart taken out of his body, and enbaumed, and honorably he was entred in the abbey of Donfremlyn, in the yere of our Lord God, M.CCC.xxvii. the vii. daye of the moneth of Novembre.

And when the sryngyng tyme began, than syr William Duglas purveyed hym of that whiche apartheyned for his entreprise, and toke his ship, at the port of Morais, in Scotlande, and sailed into Flanders, to Sluce, to here tydyngis, and to knowe, if there were any noble man in that countrey, that wolde go to Jerusalem, to thentent to have more company. And he lay styll at Sluce, the space of xii. daies, or he departed, but he wold never come a lande, but kept styll his shyppe, and kept alwaies his port and behavoure with great tryumph, with trumpetts, and clariouns, as though he had ben kyng of Scotiss hynselfe. And in his companye, there was a knyght baronet, and vii. other knyghtis, of the realme of Scotland, and xxvi. yong squiers, and gentylmen to serve hym; and all his vessell was of golde and silver, potiss, basons, ewers, dyshes, flagonis, barelis, cups, and all other thyngis: and all suche as wolde come and se hym, they were well served, with two maner of wynes, and dyverse maner of spices, all maner of people, accordyng to their degres. And when he had thus taryed there the space of xii. dayes, he hard reported, that Alphons, kyng of Spainghe, made warre ageynst a Sarazyn kyng, of Granade; than he thought to draw to that partie, thynkyng suerely he could nat bestowe his tyme more nobly, than to warre ageynst Goddis ennemies; and that entreprise done, than he thought to go forth to Jerusalem, and to acheve that he was charged with. And so he departed, and toke
the se toward Spaigne, and arryved at the port of Valence, the great; than he went straight to the kyng of Spaigne, who helde his host ageynst the kyng of Granade Sarayyn, and they were nere together, on the fronters of his lande; and within a while after that, this knyght syr William Duglas was come to the kyng of Spaigne, on a day, the kyng issued out into the feld, to aproche nere to his enemies. And the kyng of Granade issued out in like wyse on his parte, so that ech kyng myght se other with al their baners displayed. Than they arenged their batels eche ageynst other. Than syr William Duglas drewe out on the one syde, with all his company, to the entent to shewe his proves the better. And whan he saw these batels thus ranged on both partes, and sawe that the bataile of the kyng of Spaigne, began somewhat to adventage towards their enemies, he thought than verelye that they shulde soone assemble to gether to fyght at hande strokes; and than he thought rather to be with the forrest than with the hynde-moost, and strake his horse with the spurre, and al his company also, and dashe into the batelle of the kyng of Granade, criyng ‘Duglas, Duglas’: wenyng to hym, the kyng of Spaigne and his host had folowed, but they dyd nat; wherfore he was diseeyed, for the Spaignysshe host stode styl. And so this gentle knyght was enclosed, and all his company with the Sarayyns, where as he dyd mervelles in armes, but finallly he coulde nat endure, so that he and all his company were slayne. The whiche was great dammage, that the Spaynyardys woulde nat rescue them.

Also in this season there were certeyn lordeys that treated for peace bitwene Ingland and Scotlande. So that at the last there was a mariage made, and solemnismed, bitwene the yong kyng of Scotland and dame Johan of the Towre, suster to kyng Edward of Ingland, at Berwyke, as the Ingrisshe Cronicle saith, on Mary Maudlyn day, the yere of our Lord, M.iii.C.xxviii. ageynst the asente of many of the nobles of the realme. But quene Isabell, the kyngis mother, and the erle Mortymer made that mariage, at the whiche (as myn auctor saith) there was great feast made on bothe partes.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. XXI

Howe Philypp of Valoys was crowned kyng
of Fraunce.

KYNG CHARLES of Fraunce, sonne to the sanye
kyng Philypp, was three tymes maried, and yet dyed
without issue male. The first of his wyves, was
one of the most sayeest ladys in all the world, and she
was daughter to the erle of Artoys. Howe be it she kept
but evill the sacrament of matrimony, but brake her wed-
loke; wherfore she was kept a long space in pryson, in the
castell Gaylarde, before that her husband was made kyng.
And when the realme of France was fallen to him, he was
crowned by the assent of the twelve dowsepiers of Fraunce;
and than, because they wold nat that the realme of France
shulde be long without an heyre male, they advised by their
counsell, that the kyng shulde be remaryed agayne, and so he
was to the daughter of the Emperour Henry of Lucenbourg,
suster to the gentle kyng of Bayhaigne, wherby the first
marriage of the kyng was fordoone bytwene hym and his
wyfe that was in pryson, by the licence and declaracyon of
the pope that was then; and by his second wyfe, who was
ryght humble, and a noble wyse lady, the kyng had a sonne,
who dyed in his yong age, and the quene also, at Issodun
in Berrey. And they both dyed suspiciouly; wherfore
dyers parsones were put to blame after, privelly. And
after this the same kyng Charles was maried agayn the
third tyme, to the daughter of his uncle, the lorde Loyes
erle of Dewreux, and she was suster to the kyng of Naverre,
and was named quene Johan. And so in tyme and space
this ladys was with childe, and in the meane tyme the kyng
Charles her husband fell sycke, and lay downe on his deth
bedde. And whan he sawe there was no waye with hym
but deth, he devised, that if it fortuned the quene to be
delyvered of a sonne, than he wolde, that the lorde Philypp
of Valoys shulde be his governour, and regent of all hys
realme, till his sonne come to suche age as he myght be
crowned kyng; and if it fortune the quene to have a
doughter, than he wold, that all the twelve piers of Fraunce shulde take advysye and counsell, for the forther ordering of the realme, and that they shulde gyve the realme and regally, to hym that had moost ryght therto. And so within a whyle after, the kynge Charles dyed, about Ester, in the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.xxviii. and within a short space after the quene was deliyverd of a doughter. Than all the peres of Fraunce assembled a counsell togyer at Parys, as shortly as they might conveniently, and there they gave the realme by commen acorde to sir Phylippe of Valoys, and put clene out the quene Isabell of Englande, and kynge Edwarde her sonne, for she was suster germane to king Charles last deed; but the opinyon of the nobles of Fraunce was, and sayed and maynteyned, that the realme of Fraunce was of so great nobles, that it ought nat by successyon to fall into a womans hande. And so thus they crowned kyng of Fraunce Phylipp Valoys at Raygnes,1 on Trinyte Sunday next after. And anone after he somoned all his barownes and men of warr, and went with all his power to the towne of Cassell, and layd sieg therto, in makyng warr agaynst the Flemmynges, who rebellede agaynst their owne lorde, and namely: they of Bruges, of Ippe, and of Franke, for they wolde nat obey therle of Flanders, but they had chased hym out of his owne countrey, so that he might nat abyde in no partie therof, but onely in Gaunt, and scantly ther. These Flemmynges were a sixteen thousande, and had a capytayne called Colen Dannequyn, a hardy man and a courageous. And they had made their garyson at Cassell, at the wages of dyverse townes in Flanders, to thentent to kepe the fronteres there about; but ye shall here howe the Flemmynges were dysconfeted, and all by their owne outrage.

CAP. XXII

Of the batell of Cassell in Flanders.

And on a day they of the garyson of Cassell departed out, to thentent to have dysconfyted the kyng and all his hoost. And they came priuely without any noyse in thre batels well ordred; wherof the first
SYR JOHN FROISSART

batayle toke the way to the kynges tentes, and it was a fayre grace that the kyng had nat ben taken, for he was at Of the batell souper, and all his company, and thought nothyng of them. of Cassell in Flaunders.

And the other batayle toke the streyght way to the tentes of the kyng of Behaygne, and in maner they founde hym in lyke case. And the thirde batayle went to the tentes of therle of Heynault, and in likewyse had nere take hym. These hoostes came so pesaably to the tentes, that with much payne they of thorost coude arm them, wherby all the lorde and their people had been slayne, and the more grace of God had nat ben; but in maner by myracle of God, these lorde dyconfyt all thrre batayls, ech batayle by it selfe, all in one hour. In such wyse, that of xvi. thousande Flemmynges, ther ascape never a person, captayns and all were slayne. And the kyng and lorde of France knewe nat nede of an other, nor what they hadde done, tyll all was finysshedde and atchyyved; for they lay in thre sondrie parties one fro an other; but as for the Flemmynges, there was nat one left a lyve, but all lay deed on hepes, one upon an other, in the sayed thre sondrie places. And this was done on saynt Bartylmewes day, the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.xxviii. Than the Frenchmen entred into the towne of Cassell, and set up the baners of Fraunce: and the towne yielded then to the kyng, and also the towne Pyepingne, and of Ipre, and all theye of the Castlayne of Bergues; and than they receyved therle Loys their lorde, and sware to hym faythe and loyaltie for ever. Than after the kyng and his people departed, and went to Parys, and he was moche honoured and prayed for this enterprise and ayd, that he had done to his cosyn Lois erle of Flaunders. And thus the kyng was in great prosperite and every day encreased his ryall estat; for as it was sayd, ther was never kyng in Fraunce that helde lyke estat, as dyd this kyng Philip of Valoys.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXIII

Howe the erle of Kent and the erle Mortymer in Englande were put to deth.

THIS yong kyng Edwarde of Englande was governed a great space, as ye have harde before, by the counsell of the quene his mother, and of Edmonde of Wodstoke, erle of Kent, his uncle, and by sir Roger Mortymer, erle of March. And at the last, envy began to growe bytwene therle of Kent and therle Mortymer; in so much that this erle Mortimer enformed so the yong kyng, by the consentynge of tholde quene Isabell his mother, beryng the kyng in hande, that therle of Kent wolde have enpoysoned hym, to thentent to be kyenge hymselfe, as he that was neste heyre apparaunt to the crowne: for the kynges yonger brother, who was called John a Gaunt, was newly deed. And than the kyng, who gave lyght credence to theym, causedde his uncle, the erle of Kent, to be taken, and openly to be beheded, without any maner of excuse to be harde; wherwith many of the nobles of the realme wer sore troubled, and bare a gruge in their hertes towarde the erle Mortymer: and, accordyng to thenglysshe cronycle, therle suffred dethate atte Winchester, the tenth day of Octobre, the thirde yere of the kynges raygne, and lyeth buryed at the friers in Winchester. But as myne auctour sayeth, within a whyle after, as it was reported, quene Isabell, the kynges mother, was with chylde, and that, by therle Mortymer; wherof the kyng was enforrmed, and how the sayd Mortymer had caused him to put to deth therle of Kent his uncle, without good reason or cause, for all the realme reputed hym for a noble man. Thanne by the kynges commandement, this erle Mortymer was takenne, and brought to London; and there, before the great lordes and nobles of the realme, was recyted by open declaratyon, all the dedes of the sayd Mortymer. Than the kynges demaunded of his counsell, what shuld be done with hym; and all the lordes by commen assent gave judgement, and sayed, Syr, he hath deserved to dye the same deth that sir
Syr John Froissart

Hewe Spenser dyed. And after this judgement there was no delacyon of sufferaunce nor mercy, but incontyment he was drawen throughout London, and then set on a scaffold, and his membres cut from hym, and cast into a fyre, and his hert also, bycause he had ymagned treason, and thanne quartered, and his quarters sent to foure of the best cyties of the realme, and his heed remayned styll in London. And within a lytle space after, the kyng commaundéd, by thadvyce of his counsell, that the quene his mother shulde be kept close in a castell; and so it was done; and she had with her ladyes and damosels, knyghtes and squiers, to serve her accordynge to her estat; and certayne landes assigned to her, to mentayne therwith her noble estat all dayes of her lyfe; but in no wyse, she shulde nat depart out of the castell, without it were to se suche sportes as was somtyme shewed before the castell gate, for her recreatyon. Thys this lady ledde forth her lyfe ther mekely; and ones or twyse a yere, the kyng her son woulde come and se her. Thenglyshe cronycle sheweth dyverse other consderations why therle Mortymer suffred deth, the which was on saynt Andrewes eyvn, in the yere of our Lorde, a thousande thre hundred xxix. : the whiche I passe over and folowe myne authoure.

CAP. XXIV

Of thomage that kyng Edwarde of Englande, dydde to the kyng of Fraunc, for the duchye of Guyen.

And after that the kyng had done these two execucyons, he toke newe counselours of the moost noblest and sajest persons of his realme. And so it was about a yere after that Phylip of Valoys was crowned kyng of France, and that all the barones and nobles of the realme had made their homage and fealtye to hym, except the yong king of England, who had nat done his homage for the duchy of Guyen, nor also he was nat somoned thereto, Than the kyng of France, by thadvyse of all his counsell, sent over into Englande the lorde Ancenis, the lorde Beausait, and two notable clerkes, maisters of the parlyae-
THE CRONYCLE OF

ment of Parys, named maister Peter of Orlaunce, and maister Peter of Masieres. These iii. departed fro Paris, and dyd so moch by their journeis that they came to Wysant, and ther they toke see and arvyed at Dover, and ther taryed a day to abyde the unshypping of their horses and bagages: and than they rode forth so long that they came to Wysore, where as the kyng and the yong quene of England lay; and than these foure caused to be known to the kyng the occasyon of their commynge. The kyng of Englande, for the honoure of the French kyng his cosyn, caused them to come to his presence, and receyved them honourably: and than they publysshed their message. And the kyng answered them, how that the nobles of his realme, nor his counsell was nat as than about hym, but desyred them to drawe to London, and ther they shulde be answered in such wyse, that of reason they shulde be content. And so they dynd in the kynges chambr, and after departed, and lay the same nyght at Colbroke, and the next day at London. It was nat long after but that the kyng came to his palace of Westymyster, and all his counsell was commandede to be ther at a certayne day limted; and when they were all assembled, than the Frenche embassadours were sent for, and there they declared the occasions of their commynge, and delveryed letters fro their maister. Than the kyng went a parte with his counsell, to take advys what was best for hym to do. Than was it advysed by his counsell, that they shulde be answered by thordynaunce and style of his predecessors, by the bysshoppe of London. And so the Frenchmen wer called into the counsell chambre: than the bysshop of London sayd, Lordes, that be here assembled for the kyng of Fraunce, the kyngis grace my soveraygne lorde hath harde your wordes, and redde the tenour of your letters; Syrs we say unto you, that we woll counsell the kyng our soveraygne lorde here present, that he go into Fraunce, to se the kynges your maister, his dere cosyn, who ryght amyably hath sent for hym: and as touchyng his faith and homage, he shall do his devour in every thynge that he ought to do of right; and syrs, ye may shewe the kyng your maister, that within short space, the kyng of Englande our maister shall arryve in Fraunce, and do all that reason shall
SYR JOHN FROISSART

reuyvre. Than these messangers were feastede, and the kynge rewarde them with many great gyftes and juelles, Of thomage and they toke their leave and dyd someche, that at last they came to Parys, wher they found kyng Phillippe, to whome they recountad all their newes; wherof the king was dyd to the right joyouse, and specially to se the kyng of Englande his kyng of cosyn, for he hadde never sene hym before. And whan these tidynge were spredde abrode in the realme of Fraunce, then dukes, erles, and other lorde aparelled them in their best maner; and the kyng of Fraunce wrot his letters to kyng Charles of Behaygne his cosyn, and to the kyng of Navarre, certifeyng theym the day and tyme whan the kyng of England shuld be with hym, desyringe them to be with hym at the same day; and so they came thryder with grete array. Than was it counselled the kyng of Fraunce, that he shulde receyve the kyng of Englande at the cyte of Amyas, and there to make provysion for his commyng.

There was chambers, halles, hosteries, and lodgynges made redy, and apparelled, to receyve them all, and their company; and also for the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Burbon, the duke of Lurren, and syr John of Artoyes. There was surveynce for a thousande horse, and for sise hundred horse that shulde come with the kyng of Englande. The yonge kyng of Englande forgat nat the voyage that he had to do into Fraunce; and so he aparelled for hym and his company, well and sufficientely; and there departed out of Englande in his company, two bayshoppes, besyde the bayshoppe of London, and foure erles, the lorde Henry erle of Derby, his cosyn germane, sonne to sir Thomas erle of Lancastre, with the wrie necke, the erle of Salisbury, therle of Warwyke, and the erle of Hereforde, and vi. barownes, the lorde Raynolde Cobham, the lorde Thomas Wage, the marshall of Englande, the lorde Peray, the lorde Manny, and the lorde Mowbray, and mo than xi. other knyghtes; so that the kyng and his company were about a thousand horse; and the kyng was two dayes in passing bytwene Dover and Wysant. Than the kyng and his company rod to Bullayne, and there taryed one day. This was about the myddes of August, the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred xxix. And anone the tidynge came to kyng
THE CRONYCLE OF

Phylip of Fraunce, howe the kyng of Englynde was at Bullayne. Than the kyng of Fraunce sent his constable with great plentie of knyghtes to the kyng of Englynde, who as thanne was at Monsternell by the see syde; and ther was gret tokens of love and good chere, made on bothe parties. Thanne the kyng of Englynde rodde forth with all his rowt, and in his company the constable of Fraunce; and he rodde so long that they came to the cytie of Amyas, wher as kyng Phylippe, and the kyng of Behaygne, the kyng of Mayllorgues, and the kyng of Navarre were redy aparelled to receyve the kyng of Englynde, with many other dukes, erles, and great barownes: for there was all the xii. peres of Fraunce, redy to feast and make chere to the kyng of Englynde, and to be there peasably, to bere wytnesse of the kyng of Englyndes homage. Ther was the kyng of Englynde nobly receyved; and thus these kynges and other princes taryd at Amyas the space of fifteen dayes, and in the meane tyme there were many wordes and ordynancces devysed; but as far as I coude knowe, kyng Edwarde of England made his homage to the kyng of Fraunce, all onely by worde, and nat puttyng his handes bytwene the kyng of Fraunce handes, nor none other prince nor prelate lymitted for hym; nor the kyng of Englynde wolde nat procede any farther in doyng any more concernyng his homage, but rather he was determyned to returne agayn into Englynde; and there was redde openly, the privleges of ancynct tyme graunted, [in] the which was declared in what maner the kyng shulde do his homage, and howe, and in what wyse he shulde do servyce to the kyng of Fraunce. Than the kyng of Fraunce sayd, Cosyn, we woll nat disceyve you: this that ye have done pleaseseth us rightwell, as for this present tyme, thyll such tyme as ye be returned agayn into your realme, and that ye have sene under the seales of your precedessoure, howe, and in what wyse ye shulde do. And so thus the kyng of Englynde toke his leave, and departed fro the kyng of Fraunce ryght amyably, and of all other princes that was there, and returned agayn into Englynde, and laboured so longe that he came to Wyndesor, where his quene receyvedde hym right joyously, and demaunded tidynes of kyng Phylippe her
SYR JOHN FROISSART

uncle, and of her lineage of Fraunce. The kyng shewed her CAP. XXIV all that he knewe, and of the gret chere and honour that he Of homage had there, and sayd, in his mynde, there was no reame that kyng coude be compared to the realme of Fraunce. And than coude the kyng of Fraunce sent into Englande of his specyall counsell, the byshoppe of Chartres, and the byshoppe of Beauvais, the lorde Loys of Clermont, the duke of Burbon, therie of Harcourt, and therie of Tankerville, with dyvers other knyghtes and clerkes, to the counsell of Englande, the which was than holden at London, for the parfournance of the kyng of Englandes homage, as ye have harde before. And also the kyng of England and his counsell, had well oversene the maner and fourme, how his auncyent predecessours had done their homage for the duchy of Acquitayne. There were many as than in Englande that murmured and sayd, how the kyng their lorde was nerer by true succession of herytage to the crowne of Fraunce than Phillipe of Valois, who was as than kyng of Fraunce. Howebeit the kyng and his counsell wolde nat knowe it, nor speke therof, as at that time. Thus was ther great assemble, and moch ado how this homage shulde be parfourned. These embassadours taryed styl in Englande all that wynter, tyll it was the moneth of May folowyng, or they had aunswere dyffinitive: howbeit finally, the kyngge of Englande, by the advyce of his counsell, and on the syght of his privyleges, where unto they gav great fayth, was determynd to write letters in the maner of patentes, sealed with his great seale, knowlegyng therin the homage that he ought to do to the kyng of Fraunce; the tenour and report of the which letters patentes foloweth:

Edward by the grace of God, kyng of England, lorde of Ireland, and duke of Acquitayne, to them that these present letters shall se or here, send gretyng: we wold it be known, that as we made homage at Amyas to the right excellent prince our right dere cosyn, Phyllyppe kyng of Fraunce; and there it was requyred by hym, that we shuld knowledge the sayd homage, and to make it to hym expressly, promysinge to bere hym fayth and trouth, the which we did nat as than, bycause we were nat enflourned of the
THE CRONYCLE OF

trouthe: we made hym homage by generall wordes, in sayeng
how we entred into his homage in lyke maner as our pre-
decessours, Dukes of Guyen, in tymes past, had entred into
homage of the kyng of Fraunce for that tymbe byng: and
syth that tymbe we have ben well enfourmed of the trouthe;
therfore we knowlege by these presente, that such homage
as we have made in the cyte of Amyas to the kyng of Fraunce
in general wordes, was, and ought to be understande this
worde, lyge man; and that to hym we owe, to bere faith
and trouthe, as duke of Acquitayne and pere of Fraunce,
erle of Poyters and of Moutterell, and to thentent in tymbe
commynge that there shulde never be dyscorde. For this
cause, we promyse for us and our sucessours, dukys of
Acquitayne, that this homage be made in this maner
folowyng: The kyng of Engelande, duke of Acquitayne,
holdeth his handes bytwene the handes of the kyng of
Fraunce; and he that shall addresse these wordes to the
kyng of Engelande, duke of Acquitayne, shall speke for the
kyng of Fraunce in this maner: Ye shal become lyge man
to the kyng my lorde here present, as duke of Guyen, and
pere of Fraunce; and to hym promyse to bere faythe and
trouthe, say, ye: and the kyng of Engelande, duke of Guyen,
and his sucessours, sayth, ye. And than the kyng of Fraunce
receyveth the kyng of Engelande, duke of Guyen, to this
sayd homage, as lyge man, with faythe and trouthe spoken
by mouth, sayynge his ryght and all other. And furthermore,
whan the sayd kyng entreteth in homage to the kyng
of Fraunce, for therldome of Poyters, and of Muttrell, he
shall putte his handes bytwene the handes of the kyng of
Fraunce, for the sayd eredome. And he that shall speke
for the kyng of Fraunce, shall addresse his wordes to the
kyng and erle, and say thus: Ye shal become lyge man to
the kyng of Fraunce, my lorde here present, as erle of
Poyters, and Muttrell, and to hym promyse to bere fayth
and trouthe, say, ye, and the kyng, erle of Poyters, sayth, ye.
Than the kyng of Fraunce receyveth the kyng and erle to
this sayd homage by his fayth, and by his mouth, sayynge
his ryght and all other. And after this maner it shal be
done, and reminded as often as homage shulde be done. And
of that we shall delver, and our sucessours, dukys of
Syr John Froissart

Guyen, after these sayd homages, made letters patentes, sealed with our great seale, if the kyng of Fraunce requyre of themage it; and beside that, we promyse in good faythe to holde, that kyng Edwarde of Englands, dydde to the kynges of Fraunce.

These letters the lordes of Fraunce brought to the kyng their lorde, and the kyng caused them to be kept in his chauncery.

CAP. XXV

Howe the lorde syr Robert of Artoysse was chased out of the realm of Fraunce.

THE man in the world that most ayded kyng Philyppe, to attayne to the Crowne of Fraunce, was syr Robert, erle of Artoysse, who was one of the most sagest, and greateste lordes in Fraunce, and of hygh lynage extraughte, fro the blodde royall, and hadde to his wyfe suster jermayn to the sayd kyng Philyp, and allwayes was his chiefe and speciall compagnyon, and lover in all yhs astatis. And the space of iii. yere, all that was done in the realm of Fraunce was done by his advyse, and without hym nothing was done. And after it fortuned, that this kyng Philyppe tooke a mervailouse great displeasure and hatred ageynst this noble man, syr Robert of Artoysse, for a plee that was moved before hym, wherofe the Erle of Artoysse was cause: for he wolde have wonne his entent, by the vertue of a letter that he layd forth, the whiche was nat true, as it was sayde; wherfore the kyng was in suche displeasure, that yf he hadde takyn hym in his ire, surely it hadde coste hym his lyfe, without remedy. So this syr Robert was fayne to voyde the realm of Fraunce, and went to Namure, to the Erle John his Nephewe: than the kyng toke the Erles wyfe, and her two sonnes, who were his owne nephewes, John, and Charles, and dyd put them in prison, and were kept straytly, and the kyng swere that they shulde never come out of prison, as long as they lyved; the kyngis mynde wolde nat be turned by no maner of meanes.
THE CRONYCLE OF

the kyng in his fureye sente hastely to the busshopp Raoul of Liege, and desired hym, at his instansse, that he wolde defe and make warre agaynst the erle of Namure, without he wolde put out of his countrey syr Roberte erle of Artoysse. And this busshoppe, who greatly loved the kyng of Fraunce, and but lytle loved his neyghbours, dyd as the kyng desired hym. Than the erle of Namure, sore ageynst his wyll, caused the erle of Artoysse to avoyde his lande. Than this erle, syr Robert, went to the duke of Brabant, his cosyn, who right joyously receyved hym, and dyd hym great confort; and as soone as the kyng of Fraunce knew that, he sent worde to the duke, that if he wold susteyne, maynteyn, or suffre, the erle of Artoysse in his countrey, he shulde have no greater ennemy than he wold be to hym, and that he wolde make warre ageynst hym, and al his, to the best of his power, with all the realme of Fraunce. Than the duke sent the erle of Artoysse pryvely to Argentuel, to thentent to se what the kyng wolde do forther in the case; and anon the kyng knew it, for he had spyes in every corner. The kyng had great dispyte, that the duke shuld so dele with hym, and within a brief space after, the kyng pourchased, so by reason of his golde and sylver, that the kyng of Behaigne, who was cosin jermayn to the duke of Brabant, and the busshop of Liege, the arche bysshop of Coleyn, the duke of Guerles, the marques of Julyers, the erle of Bare, the lord of Los, the lorde Fawkmount, and divers other lordes, were aliéd togyther, al aynst the duke of Brabant, and defyed hym, and entred with a great ooste in to his countrey by Ebsayng, and so cam to Hanut, and bren twyse over the countrey where as it pleased them. And the kyng of Fraunce sent with them therle of Ewe, his Constable, with a great oaste of men of armes. Than the erle William of Heynaulte, sent his wyfe, suster to the kyng, and his brother, syr John of Heynaulte, lorde Beaumont, into Fraunce, to treat for a peace, and sufferaunce of warr, bitwen the kyng and the duke of Brabant. And at last the kyng of France, with moche warke, consented therto, upon condition, that the duke shulde put hymselfe utterly to abyde the ordynaunce of the kyng of Fraunce, and of his counsaile, in every mater that the kyng, and all
SYR JOHN FROISSART

suche as had defyed hym, had ageynst him; and also within a certayn day lymitted, to avoyde out of his countre y the erle of Artoysse, and to make shorte; al this the duke dyd sore ayenst his wyll.

CAP. XXV

Howe syr Robert of Artoysse was chased out of Fraunce.

CAP. XXVI

Howe kyng Edwarde of Ingland toke the towne of Berwyke ageynst the Scottis.

YE have harde here before recited, of the truce bitwene Inglande and Scotland, for the space of iii. yere; and so the space of oone yere, they kept well the peace, so that in CCC. yere before, there was nat so good peace kept: howbeit, kyng Edward of Ingland was enformed, that the yong kyng David, of Scotland, who had wedded his suster, was seaced of the towne of Berwyke, the whiche ought to apperteyn to the realme of Ingland; for kyng Edward the first, his graufather, had it in his possess-ion peassably. Also the kyng was enformed, that the realme of Scottelande shulde holde in chiefe of the Crowne of Inglande, and how the yong kyng of Scottis had nat done as than his homage; wherfore the kyng of Ingland sent his ambassad to the kyng of Scottis, desyryng hym to leve his handis of the towne of Berwyke, for it parteyned to his heritage, for kyngis of Inglande, his predecessours, have ben in possession therof: and also they somoned the kyng of Scottis, to come to the kyng of Ingland, to do his homage for the realme of Scotland. Than the kyng of Scottis toke counsaile, howe to answere thyss mater: and finally, the kyng answerde the Englishe ambassadours, and sayd, Syrs, both I and all the nobles of my realme, mervaeil greatly of that ye have required us to do, for we fynd nat auncientely, that the realme of Scotelande shulde any thyng be bounde, or be subjiet to the realme of Ingland, nother by homage, or any other wayes: nor the kyng of noble memorye, our father, wold never do homage to the kyngis of Ingland, for any warre that was made unto hym, by any of them; no more in likewyse I am in wyll to do: and also kyng
Robert, our father, conquered the town of Berwyke, by force of arms; against king Edward, father to the king, your master, that now is; and so my father held it all the days of his life as his good heritage; and so in like manner we think to do, to the best of our power. Howebeit lorde, we require you to be means to the king your master, whose sister we have married, that he will suffer us peaceably to enjoy our franchises and rights, as his auntsours have been here before; and to let us enjoy that our father hath wonne, and kept it peaceably all his life days; and desyre the king your master, that he wold nat believe any evil counsel, gyven hym to the contrary: for if there were any other prince that wold do us wrong, he shuld aide, succour, and defende us, for the love of his sister, whom we have married. Than these ambassadours answerd and said, Syr, we have well understande your answere: we shall shewe it to the king our lorde, in lyke maner as ye have said; and so toke theyr leave, and returned into Englande to the kyng; with the whiche answere the kyng of Ingland was nothyng content. Than he somoned a parliament, to be holden at Westminster, where as all the nobles, and wyse men of the realme were assembled, to determine what shuld be best to be done in this matter. And in this meane tym, syr Robert, erle of Artoys, came into Inglande, dysguysed lyke a marchaunt, and the kyng receyed hym right joyously, and reteyned hym as one of his counsaile, and to hym assigned the erledom of Rychemount. And whan the daye of the parliament aproched, and that all the nobles of the lande were assembled about London, than the kyng caused to be shewed the message, and howe he had wrytten to the kyng of Scottis, and of the answere of the same kyng. Wherfore the kyng desyreth all the nobles of his realme, that they wolde gyve hym suche counsaile, as shulde aperteyne to the savyng of his honour and ryght. And whan they were all assembled in counsaile, they thought that the kyng myght no lenger bear by his honour, the injuries and wronges, that the kyng of Scottis dyd hym dayly; and so they reported their advise to the kyng, exortyng hym to provyde for his force and strength of men of warre, to atteyne therby the towne of Berwike, and to
SYR JOHN FROISSART

entre into the realm of Scotland, in suche wyse, that he shulde constrayne the kyng of the Scottis, to be joyfull to come and do his homage to hym. And so all the nobles and commons of the realm of Ingland, sayd they wold gladly, and willingly, go with hym in that journey: and of theyr good wyls, the kyng thanked them greatly, and desired them to be redy apparaied, at a daye assigned, and to Scottis assemble togethe at Newcastle upon Tyne. And than every man went home and prepared for that journey. Than the kyng sent agayn other ambassadours, to the kyng of Scottis, his brother in lawe, sufficiently to sommon hym; and if he wolde nat be other wyse advised, than the kyng gave them full auctorite to defe hym. And so the day of the assembly of the kyngis oste aproched, at the whiche day, the kyng of Inglande, and all his oste, aryved at Newcastle upon Tyne, and ther taried iii. dayes, for the residue of his oste, that was comyng after. And on the fourth day, he departed with al his oste toward Scotland, and passed through the landes of the lorde Persy, and of the lorde Nevell, who were two great lordes in Northumberland, and marched on the Scottis. And in lyke wyse so dyd the lorde Rosse, and the lorde Ligy,1 and the lorde Mombray.2 Than the kyng and his oste, drewe toward the cite of Berwyke; for the kyng of Scotland made no other answere to these ii. messengers, but as he dyd to the fyrst; wherfore he was openly defied, and somoned. And so the kyng of Ingland and his oste entretd into Scotland, for he was counsailed, that he shuld nat tary at siege at Berwike, but to ryde forth, and to burne the countre, as his graund father dyd: and so he dyd. In whiche journey he wasted and destroyed all the playn countrey of Scotland, and exiled diverse townces that were closed with dykes, and with pales, and toke the strong castell of Edynghurth, and sette therin a garison. And so passed the second ryver in Scotland, under Douffremlyn,3 and ran over all the countrey there abowte to Scone, and destroyed the good towne of Douffremlyn,4 but they dyd no eyll to the abbey, for the kyng of Ingland commaundeth that no hurt shuld be done therto. And so the kyng conquered all the countrey to Dondeu,5 and to Doubreten,6 a strong castell, standyng on the marches ayenst 7Dumbarton.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXVI
Howe kyng Edwarde of Ingland toke the towne of Berwyke agaynst the Scottis.

1332
the wylde Scottis, where as the kyng of Scottis, and the quene his wyfe, were withdrawn unto for suretie; for there were no Scottis that wolde appere afore the Englishemen, for they were all drawn into the forest of Gedworth, the whiche wer inhabitable, and specially for them, that knew nat the countrey, wherein all the Scottis wer, and all theyr gooddis; and so they set but a lytle by all the remnant. And it was no marvaille, though they were thus dryven: for the kyng their lorde was but xv. yere of age, and the erle of Morrey was but yong, and the nephew of Willyam Duglas, that was slayne in Spayn, was also of the same age: so as at that tyme, the realme of Scotland was dispyveyed of good capiteyns. And whan the kyng of Ingland had ron over all the playne countrey of Scotlant, and taried ther the space of vi. monethes, and sawe that none wold come agaynst hym, than he garnysshed divers castells that he had wonne, and thought by them to make warre to all the other. Than he withdrew fayre and easely toward Berwike; and in his returnynge, he won the castell of Aluest, parthyng to the heritage of the erle Duglas: it was a v. leaxis fro Edenburge, and therin the kyng set good capiteyns, and than rode small jorneis, tyll he came to Berwikke, the whiche is at the entre of Scotlant, and ther the kyng layd rounde about his siege, and sayd, he wolde never depart thens, tyll he had wonne it, or els the kyng of Scottis to come, and to reyse his siege parforce. And within the towne there were good men of warre, set there by the kyng of Scottis: before this cite ther were many assaultis, and sore skrymysshes, nygh every daye, for they of the cite wolde nat yelde them up symply, for alwayes they thought to be rescued; howe be it, there was no succour appered. The Scottis, on mornynge and nyghtis, made many skryes to trouble theoste, but lylle hurt they dyd, for the Englishheoste was so well kep, that the Scottis coude nat entre, but to theyr dammage, and offten tymes loste of theyr men. And whan they of Berwike sawe that no comfort, nor ayde, came to them fro any part, and that theyr vitayles began to fayle, and howe they were enclosed both by water and by lande; than they began to fall in a treate with the kyng of Ingland,
SYR JOHN FROISSART

and desired a truce to endure a moneth; and if within the moneth, kyng David, theyr lorde, or some other for hym, come nat by force to reys the seige, than they to rendre up the cite, their lyves and gooddis saved, and that the souldiers within, myght saftly go into theyr countrey, without any dammage. This treaty was nat lightly graunted: for the kyng of Ingland wolde have had them yelded symply, to have had his pleasure of some of them, because they had hold so long ayenst hym: but finally he was content by the counsaile of his lordes. And also syr Robert of Artoys dyd put therto his payne, who had ben all that journeye with the kyng, and had shewed hym always, howe he was next enheriter to the crowne of Fraunce; he wolde gladly that the kyng shuld have made warre into Fraunce, and aleft the warres of Scotland. So his wordes, and others, inclined greatly the kyng to condiscend to the treaty of Berwyke; so this truce and treaty was graunted. Than they within the cite sent worde to their kyng, in what case they stode, but for all that, they could fynde no remedy to reys the siege; so the cite was delveryed up at thende of the moneth, and also the castell; and the Marshals of the ost toke possession for the kyng of Ingland, and the burgesses of the cite came and dyd theyr feaute and homage to the kyng, and aware to hold of hym. Than after the kyng entred with great solemnite, and taryed there xii. dayes, and made a capitayn ther, called syr Edward Bailleul: and whan the kyng departed, he lefte with the sayde knyght, certayn yong knyghtis and squiers, to helpe to kepe the landis, that he had conquered of the Scottis, and the fronters therof. Than the kyng and his people returned to London, and every man into theyr owne countres; and the kyng went to Wyndesoare, and syr Robert of Artoys with hym, who never ceased daye nor nyght, in shewing the kyng what ryght he had to the crowne of Fraunce: and the kyng harkened gladly to his wordis. Thus in this season, the kyng of Ingland wanne the most parte of the realme of Scotland, who had many expert knyghtis about hym, among other was sir Wylliam Montague, and syr Walter of Manny; they were hardy knyghtis, and dyd many dedis of armes aynst the Scottis. And the better to have their entre into Scotland, they
fortified the bastyle of Rosebourge, and made it a strong castel; and syr Wylliam Montague dyd so well in all his entrepisses, that the kyng made hym erle of Salysbury, and maried hym nobly. And also the lorde of Manny was made of the kyngis pryve counsaile, and well advaunsed in the courte.

True it was, that some of the knyghtis of Scotland, dyd ever the anoyaunce they coulde to the Englishemen, and kept them in the wyde countrey, among marisshes and great forestis, so that no man coulde folowе them. Some season, the Englishemen folowed them so nere, that all day they skrymymbshed toguyther; and in a skrymymbse, this said lorde Wylliam Montague lost one of his yen. In the said forest, the olde kyng Robert, of Scotland, dyd kepe hym-selvе, whan kyng Edward the fyrst conquerd nygh al Scotland; for he was so often chased, that none durst lodge hym in castell, nor fortresse, for feare of the sayd kyng. And ever whan the kyng was returned into Englan, than he wolde gather together agayn his people, and conquer townes, castells, and forteresses, juste to Berwike, some by bataile, and some by fayre speche and love: and whan the sayd kyng Edward hard therof, than wolde he assemble his power, and wyn the realme of Scotlantd agayn; thus the chaunce went bitwene these two forsaid kyngis. It was shewed me, howe that this kyng Robert wan, and lost his realme v. tymes. So this contynued tyll the sayd kyng Edwarde died, at Berwike: and whan he sawe that he shulde dye, he called before hym his eldest sonne, who was kyng after hym, and there before all the barones, he caused hym to swere, that as soone as he were deed, that he shulde take his body, and boyle it in a caudron, tyl the fleshe departed cleene fro the boones, and than to bury the fleshe, and kepe styll the boons; and that as often as the Scottis shuld rebell ayenst hym, he shulde assemble his people ayenst them, and cary with hym the boones of his father; for he belived verely, that if they had his boones with them, that the Scottis shulde never attayne any victory ayenst them. The whiche thyng was nat accomplisshed, for whan the kyng was dead, his son caried hym to London, and there he was buryed.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. XXVII

Howe kyng Philyp of Fraunce and divers other kyngis made a Croysey to the Holy Land.

NOWE let us returne to our first purpose. Whan kyng Philyp returned fro Paris, after that the kyng of Ingland had been there, he went to visyte his realme, and in his company, Loys, the kyng of Behaigne, and the kyng of Naverre, with many dukis, erles, and lوردes, for he helde great astate and noble. So he rode through Burgoyne, tyll he came to Avignon, where he was honorably receyved of pope Benedicte, and of all the College, and dyd hym as moche honour as they coulde; and he taried a long space there, and was lodged at Wylnfe,\(^1\) without Avignon. In the same season the kyng of Aragon came to the court of Rome, and ther was great chere and fest made at theyr metyng, and ther they were all the Lent season; and in that season tydnyngis came to the court of Rome, that the enemys of God were greatly strong, and had nygh conquered all the realme of Ras, and takyn the kyng there, who was before become christen, and made hym to dye by a great martyrdom: and also these infidels sore dyd manysshe christendome. And on the Good Fryday, the pope hymselfe preched of the passyon of God, before these kyngis, exortynge them to take on them the Crosse ageynst the Sarazyns; so that the Frenche kyng moved with pite, toke on hym the Crosse, and desired the pope to agree therto. The pope accorded, and'confirmed it with his absolution, de pena et culpa, clene confessed and repentaunt. So thus the kyng toke on hym this voyage, and with hym the kyng Charles of Behaigne, the kyng of Navarre, and kyng Peter of Aragone, with many dukis, erles, barones, knyghtis, and squyers; and also the cardinal of Napoles, the cardinal of Pierreport, the cardinal Blanc, and the cardinal of Ostie. And anon after, this Croisy was preched and published abroode in the worlde: the whiche tydnyngis was great pleasure to many lوردis, and specially to suche as were in mynde to dyspende their season in dedis of armes.

Whan the Frenche kyng, and these said lوردes, had ben M

\(^1\) Villeneve.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXVII

a certayn space with the pope, and had devysed and con-
formed their entreprise; than they departed fro the courte, 
and toke their leve; and the kyng of Aragone went into 
his countrey, and the Frenche kyng in his company, tyll they 
came to Montpellier, and there taryed a certayn space: and 
there kyng Philip of France made a peace bitwene the kyng 
of Aragon, and the kyng of Mallorques, and than returned 
to Fraunce by small journeis, at great dispence, and visited 
his townes and castels, and passed through Auvergne, Berry, 
Beauce, and Gastinois, and so came to Paris, wher as he 
was receyved with great feast and glory. At that tyme, 
Fraunce was ryche, in great puiuance, and in good rest and 
peace, there was no warre spoken of.

This Croisy thus taken by the Frenche kyng, wherof he 
was as chiefe, there were dyverse lorde in sondrie countrieis, 
by great devotyon, toke on them the same. The French kyng 
made the grettest apparayle for his voyage that ever was sene, 
other in Godfray de Bolcyns dayes, or any other; and had 
prepared in certayn portes, as at Marcille, Agwes mortes, at 
Narbon, and about Mountpellier, such a nombre of vessels, 
shyppes, careckes, and galyes, suffycient to passe over lx. M. 
men of armes, with all their purveaunces, well provyded of 
byssuet, wyne, fresh water, salt fleshe, and all other 
thynge necessarie for men of warre, to endure thre yeres, if 
nede were. And the French kyng sent certayn messengers 
to the kyng of Hungrie, desyringe hym to be redy, and to 
open the passages of his countrie, to receyve the pylgrimes 
of God; the kyng of Hungrie was gladde therof, and sayd, 
howe he was all redy. In lykewise the Frenche kyng sent 
to the kyng of Cyper,1 and also to the kyng of Sicyll, and 
to the Venecyans; in lyke maner they answered, that they 
were redy to obey; and the Genowayes, and all they on the 
ryver of Geane;2 and also the kyng sent the great priour of 
Fraunce to the ysele of Rodes, to preparye all thynge 
necessarie in those quarters; and they of the Rodes accorded 
with the Veneyans, to provyde thynge necessarie in the 
ysele of Creth, the which was under their sygnorie. Brevely, 
every countrie was redy prepared to receyve the pylgrimes 
of God. There were mo than CCC.M. persons that toke on 
them the crosse, to go in this noble voyage over the see.

1 Cyprus.

2 Riviera of Genoa.
Syr John Froissart

CAP. XXVIII

Howe kyng Edwarde was counselled to make warre agaynst the French kyng.

In this season, whan this croisy was in gret forwardnesse, for there was no spekyng but therof, syr Robert of Artoies was as than in England, banysshed out of Fraunce, and was ever about kyng Edward; and alwayes he counselled hym to defye the Frenche kyng, who kept his herytages fro hym wrongfully; of the whiche mater the kyng often tymes counselled with them of his secret counsell, for gladly he wolde have had his right, and yf he wist how. And also he thought, that if he shulde demaunde his ryght, and it refused, what he might do than to amend it. For if he shulde than styll, and do nat his devoyre to recover his right, he shulde be more blamed than before: yet he thought it were better to speke nat therof. For he sawe well, that by the puysaunce of his realme, it wolde be harde for hym to subdue the great realme of Fraunce, without helpe of some other gret lordes, outhere of the empyre or in other places for his money. The kyng often tymes desyred counsel of his chefe and speciall frendes and counsellours. Fynally, his counsellours answered hym and sayd, Syr, the mater is so weighty, and of so hygh an enterprise, that we dare nat speke therin, nor gyve you any counsell. But syr, this we wolde counsell you to do; sende suffycient messangers, well enourmed of your intencyon, to therle of Heynaulte, whose daughter ye have maryed, and to syr John of Heynalt, his brother, who hath valyantly served you at all tymes; and desyre them by way of love, that they wolde counsell you in this mater, for they knowe better what partyneth to suche a mater than we do; and syr, if they agree to your entent, than wyl they counsell you what frendes ye may best make. The kyng was content with this answere, and desyred the byshop of Lyncolne to take on hym this message, and with hym two banerettes, and two doctours: they made them redy, and toke shpping, and aryved at Dunkyrke, and rodde through
THE CRONYCLE OF

Flaunderes, till they came to Valencens, where they founde the erle lyng in his bedde, sycke of the gout, and with him sir John his brother. They were greatly feasted, and declared the cause of their commyng, and shewed all the reasons and doutes that the kyng their maister had made. Than therle sayd, As helpe me God, yt the kynges mynde might be brought to passe, I wolde be right glad therof: for I had rather the welth of hym that hath marayed my daughter, than of hym that never dyd nothyng for me, though I have marayed his suster. And also he dyd let the maryage of the yonge duke of Brabant, who shuld have marayed one of my daughters. Wherfore, I shall nat fayle to ayde my dere and wel beloved sonne, the kyng of England: I shall gyve hym counsell and ayde to the best of my power, and so shall do John my brother, who hath served hym or this. Howe be it he must have more helpe than ours: for Heynalt is but a small countrey, as to the regard of the realme of Fraunce, and Engelande is farr of to ayde us. Than the bysshoppe sayd, Syr, we thanke you in our maisters behalfe, of the comfort that ye gyve us: syr, we desyre you to gyve our maister counsell, what frendes he were best to labour unto to ayde hym. Surely sayd therle, I can nat devyse a more puissant prince to ayde hym, than the duke of Brabant, who is his cosyn germanye; and also the bysshoppe of Liege, the duke of Guerles, who hath his suster to his wyfe; the archbysshop of Colayne, the marques of Jullers, syr Arnold de Bauchenen, and the lorde of Faulquemount: these lorde be thei that may make moost men of warre in short space of any that I know: they arre good men of warre, they may well make x thousand men of warr, so they have wages thereafter; they arre people that wolde gladly wyne advauntage. Yf it were so that the kyng my sonne, your maister, might gette these lorde to be on his part, and so to come into these parties, he might well go over the water of Oysse, and seke out kyng Phylippe to fyght with hym. With this answere, these ambassadours retourned into England to the kyng, and reported all that they had done; wherof the kyng had great joy, and was well comforted. These tidyngis came into Fraunce, and multiplied lyttle and lyttle, so that kyng Phylippes enterprise
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of the sayd croyseye beganne to assmage and ware cold; and he countermaundd his officers to sease of makynge of any farther provision, tyll he knewe more what kyng Edward wolde do. Than kyng Edward ordayned x. banettes, and xl. other knyghtes, and sent them over the see to Valencennes, and the byshoppes of Lyncolne with theym, to thentent to treat with the lorde of thempyre, suche as therle of Heynalt had named. Whanne they were come to Valencennes, ech of them kep a grete estatte and port, and spared nothyng, no more than yt the kyngge of Englanede had bene there in proper persone, wherby they dyd gette great renowne and prayse. They had with them yonge bachelors, who hadde ech of them one of their eyen closedde with a piece of sylke: it was sayd, how they had made a vowe among the ladies of their contrey, that they wolde nat se but with one eye, tyll they had done some dedes of armes in Fraunce; how be it they wold nat be knownen therof. And whan thei had ben well feasted at Valencennes, than the byshoppes of Lyncolne, and part of his company, went to the duke of Brabant, who feasted them greatly, and agreed, and promysed to sustayne the kyngge of Englanede and all his company in his contrey; so that he might go and come, armed and unarmd at his pleasure, and to gyve him the best counsell he coude. And also, yt the kyngge of Englanede wolde defy the Frenche kyng, tha he wolde do the same, and entre into the countrye of Fraunce, with men of warre, so that their wages might be borne, to the nombre of a thousande men of armes. Thus than the lorde retourned agayne to Valencennes, and dyd so mony by messengers, and by promys of golde and sylver, that the duke of Guerles, who was the kynges brother in lawe, and the marques of Jullers, the archebishoppe of Colayne, and Waleran his brother, and the lorde of Faulqueymount came to Valencennes, to speke with these lorde of Englanede, byfore the erle of Haynalt, and the lorde John his brother. And by the meanes of a great somme of florens that ech of then shulde have for themselfe, and for their men, they made promys to defy the Frenche kyng, and to go with the kyngge of Englanede whan yt pleased hym, with a certayn men of warre; promysinge also, to gette other lorde to
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXVIII
Howe kyng Edwarde was counselled to make warre agaynst the French kyng.

1 Germany.

take their part for wages, such as be beyonde the ryver of Ryne, and be able to bringe good nombres of men of warre. Than the lorde of Almayne toke their leave, and retornned into ther owne contreis; and thenglisyshmen taryed stylly with therle of Heynalt, and sent certayne messangers to the bysshoppe of Lyge, and wolde gladly have hadde hym on their partie; but he wolde never be agaynst the French kyng, for he was become his man, and entred into his feautlie. Kyng Charles of Behaygne, was nat desyred, for they knewe well he was so fermely joyned with the Frenche kyng, by reason of the maryage of John duke of Normandy, who had to wyfe the kyngis daughter, wherby they knewe well he wold do nothyng agaynst the French kyng.

CAP. XXIX
Howe that Jaques Dartvell2 governed all Flausders.

In this season there was great dyscorde bytwene the erle of Flausders and the Flemmynges: for they wolde nat obey him, nor he durste nat abyde in Flausders, but in great parell. And in the towne of Gaunt, there was a man, a maker of honey, called Jaques Dartvell. He was entred into such fortune and grace of the people, that all thynge was done that he dydde; he might commaundede what he wolde through all Flausders, for ther was non, though he were never so great, that durste disobey his commaundement. He had always goyng with hym up and downe in Gaunt lx. or fourskore varlettes armed, and amonge them, there were thre or foure that knewe the secretnes of his mynde; so that if he mette a persons that he hated, or had hym in suspiccyon, incontynent he was slayne: for he had commaundede his secret varlettes, that whan ne soever he mette any persone, and made suche a sygne to thym, that incontynent they shulde see hym, whatsoever he were, without any wordes or resonynges; and by that meanes he made many to be slayne, wherby he was so doughted, that none durste speke agaynst any thynge that he wolde have done, so that every man was gladde to

94
SYR JOHN FROISSART

make hym good chere. And these varlettes, whan thei had brought hym home to his house, than they shulde go to dyner where they lyst, and after dyner returne agayne into the strete before his lodgyng, and there abyde tyl he come out, and to wayt on hym tyl souper tyme. These soulde yours had eche of them foure grotes Flemmysehe by the day, and were truely payd, wekely. Thus he had in every towe, souldeys, and servauntes at his wages, redy to do his commaundement, and to espy if ther were any person that wolde rebell against his mynde, and to enfourme hym therof; and assone as he knewe any suche, he wolde never cease tyl they were banysshed or slayn, without respYTE. All such great men, as knyghtes, squires, or burgesses of good towe, as he thought favourable to therle in any maner, he banysshed them out of Flandres, and wolde levey the moyte of their landes to his owne use, and thother halfe to their wyves and childer, such as were banyssshed; of whome there were a great nombre abode at saynt Omers. To speke properly, there was never in Flandres, nor in none other contrey, prince, duke, nor other, that ruled a countrey so pesably, so long as this Jaques Dartvellys dyd rule Flandres. He leyved the rentes, wynages, and rightes, that pertayned to therle through out all Flandres, and spended all at his pleasure, without any acompt makynge; and whan he wold sayt that he lacked money, they bylyved hym, and so it behoved them to do, for none durst say against hym; whan he wold borowe any thynge of any burgesse, there was none durst say hym nay. These Englyssh embassadours kept an honourable estate at the towe of Valencennes; they thought it shulde be a great comforte to the kynges their lord, yf they might gette the Flemmynges to take their part. Than they toke counsell of therle in that mater, and he answered, that truely it shulde be one of the grettest aydes that they coude have: but he sayd, he thought their labour in that behalfe coude nat prevayle, without they gette first the good wyll of Jaques Dartell. Than they sayd they wolde assay what they coude do: and so therupon they departed fro Valencennes and went into Flandres, and departed into thre or foure companies: some went to Bruges, some to Ipre, and some to Gaunt;
and they all kept such port, and made so large dispence, 
that it semed that silver and golde fell out of their handes, 
and made many great promyse and offers to them, that 
they speake to for that mater. And the byshoppe, with a 
certayne with hym, went to Gaunt, and he dyd so moch, 
what with fayre wordes, and otherwise, that he gat thacoide 
of Jaques Dartvell; and dyd gette great grace in the towne, 
and specially of an olde knyght that dwelt in Gaunt, who 
was ther right well beloved, called the lorde of Courtyesyn, 
a knight baneret, and was reputed for a hardy knight, and 
had alwayes served truely his lorde. This knyght dyd moche 
honour to thenglyshemen, as a valiant knyght ought to 
do to all strangers. Of this he was accused to the French 
kyng, who incontynent sent a strayt commandement to 
therle of Flandres, that he shulde send for this sayd 
kynght, and assone as he had hym, to strike of his hed. 
Therle who durst nat breke the kynges commandement, 
dyd so much, that this knyght came to hym at his sendyng, 
as he that thought non yvell: and incontynent he was 
taken, and his heed stryken of. Wherof many folkes were 
sorie, and were sore dyspleased with therle, for he was wel 
beloved with the lorde of the contrey. These Englysh 
lordes dyd so moche, that Jaques Dartvell, dyverse tymes, 
had togyder the counsellles of the good townes, to speke of 
the besynes that these lordes of Englande desyred, and of 
the fraynychyses and amyties that they offerd them in the 
kyng of Englandes byhalfe. So often they speake of this 
mater, that finally they agreed, that the kynge of Englande 
myght come and go into Flandres at his pleasure. Howe 
be it, they sayd they were so sore bounde to the French 
kyng, that they myght nat entre into the realme of Fraunce 
to make any warre, without they shulde forfayt a great 
sonme of florens: and so they desyred that they wold be 
content with this answere, as at that time. Thenglysh 
lordes retourned agayne to Valencennes with great joy; 
often tymes they sent worde to the kynge of Englande how 
they spedde, and ever he sent them golde and silver to 
bere their charges, and to gyve to the lorde of Almaygne, 
who desyred nothyng els. In this season the nobile erle of 
Heynalt dyed the vi. day of June, the yere of our lorde,
SYR JOHN FROISSART

M.CCC.xxxvii. and was buryed at the friers in Valencennes. CAP. XXIX
The bysshoppe of Cambray, sang the masse; ther were many dukes, erles, and barownes: for he was wel beloved, and honoured of all people in his lyfe dayes. After his dyscease, the lorde Wyllyam, his sonne, entred into the countees of Heynalt, Holland, and Zelande, who had to wyfe the daughter of duke John of Brabant, and had to name Jahane: she was endowd with the lande of Bynyche, the which was a right fayre heritage and a profitable; and the lady Jahan, her mother, went to Fontnels, on Lescault; and ther used the resydue of her lyfe in great devotion in thab bey ther, and dyd many good dedes.

CAP. XXX
How certayne nobles of Flandres kept the yle of Cagaunt against thenglysshemen.

Of all these ordynances and confortes that the kynge of England had get on that syde the see, Kyng Philipp of Fraunce was well enformed of all the mater, and wolde gladly have had the Flemmynges on his part. But Jaques Dartvell had so surmounted all maner of people in Flandres that none durst say agaynst his opinion, nor the erle hymselfe durst nat well abyde in the countrey, for he had sent the countesse his wyfe, and Loys his sonne, into Fraunce, for dout of the Flemmynges. In this season, ther were in the yle of Cagant, certayne knyghtes and squyers of Flandres in garson: as sir Dutres de Haluyyn, syr John de Radays, and the sonnes of Lestriefe. They kept that passage agaynst thenglysshmen and made covert warre, wherof thenglyshke lorde beyng in Heynalt, were well enformed, and how that if they went that way homewarde into England, they shulde be met withal to their dyspleasure; wherefore they were nat well assured; howbeit they rode and went about the countrey at their pleasure. All was by the confort of Jaques Dartvell, for he supported and honoured them as moche as he might: and after, these lorde went to Dondrech, in Holande, and ther they toke shyping to eschue the passage of Cagaunt,
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXX
How certayne nobles of Flandres kept the yle of Cagaunt agaynst thenglysshemen.

wher as the garrison was layd for them, by the commaundement of the Frenche kyng: so these Englishe lorde came agayn into England, as privel as they coude, and came to the kyng, who was right joyouse of their commyng; and whan he harde of the garyson of Cagaunt, he sayd he wolde provyde for them shortly; and anon after, he ordyned therle of Derby, syr Water Manny, and dyverse other knyghtes and squiers, with fyve hundred men of armes, and two thousande archers, and they toke shippyng at London, in the ryver of Tames. The first tyde they went to Gravesende, the next day to Margate, and at the thyrde tyde they toke the see, and sayled into Flandres. So they aparelled themselfe, and came nere to Cagaunt.

CAP. XXXI
Of the batell of Cagaunt bytwene thenglysshemen and the frenchmen.

WHAN thenglysshemen sawe the towne of Cagaunt before them, they made them redy, and had wynd and tyde to serve them. And so in the name of God and saint George, they approched and blewe up their trumpettes, and set their archers before them, and sayled towards the towne. They of Cagaunt sawe well this great shyppe aproche: they knewe well they were Englyshmen, and araynged them on the dykes and on the sandes, with their baners before them, and they made xvi. newe knyghtes. They were a fyve thousande men of warr, good knyghtes and squiers; ther was sir Guy of Flandres, a good and a sure knyght, but he was a bastarde, and he desyred all his company to do well their devoyre: and also ther was sir Dutres de Hauy, sir John de Rooedes, sir Gyles Lestriefe, sir Symon and syr John of Bonquedent,1 who were there made knyghtes, and Peter of Anglemomster,2 with many other knyghtes and squiers, expert men of armes. Thenglysshemen were desyrous to assayle, and the Flemmynges to defend. Thenglyssh archers began to shout, and cryed their cryes, so that suche as kepte the passage, were fayne perforce to recule backe. At this first assaunte there were

1 Bruquedent.
2 Ingelmonster.
dyverse sore hurte, and the Englysshenmen toke lande, and came and fought hande to hande. The Flemmynges fought valyantly to defende the passage, and thenglysshenmen assaunted chyvalrously. The erle of Derby was that day a good knyght, and at the first assaute he was so forarde, that he was sryken to the erth, and than the lorde of Manny dyd hym great confort, for by pure feat of armes, he releved hym up agayne, and brought hym out of paryll, and cryed Lancastre for the erle of Derby. Than they approched on every part, and many were hurt; but mo of the Flemmynges than of the Englysshenmen, for the archers shot so holly togyder, that they dyd to the Flemmynges moche damage. Thus in the havyn of Cagant ther was a sore batell, for the Flemmynges were good men of warre, chosen out by the erle of Flaunders, to defende that passage agaynst thenglysshenmen. And of Englande, there was the erle of Derby, sonne to the erle Henry of Lancastre with the wrynecke, therle of Suffolke, syr Robert Cobham, sir Lewes Reynolds. Byauchampe, sir Wylyam, sonne to therle of Warwyke, the lorde Boucher, syr Water Manny, and dyvers other. Berkeley. There was a sore batayle, and well foughten hande to hande: but finally, the Flemmynges were put to the chase, and were slayne mo than thre thousande, what in the havyn, stretes, and houses. Syr Guy the bastarde of Flanders was taken, and sir Dutres de Haluyn and sir John de Rodes wer slayn, and the two bretherne of Bonquedent, and syr Gyles de Lestrief, and mo than xxvi. knyghtes and squyers; and the towne taken and pylled, and all the goodes and prisoners put into the shippes, and the towne brent. And so thus the Englysshemen retourned into Englande without any damage; the kyng caused sir Guy bastarde of Flanders to swere and to bynde hymselfe prisoner; and in the same yere he became Englyssh, and dyd fayth and homage to the kyng of Englande.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXXII

How kyng Edwarde of England made great alyaunces in the empyre.

AFTER this dysconfeture at Cagaunt,1 tidynes ther-of spredde abrode in the countrey. And they of Flauunders sayd, that without reason and agaynst their wylles therle of Flanders had layd there that gybson; and Jaques Dartvell wolde nat it had ben otherwyse, and incontyment he sent messangers to kyng Edwarde, recomendynge hym to his grace with all his hert, counsellynge hym to come thyder, and to passe the see, certyfyeinge hym, how the Flemmynges greatly desyred to se hym. Thus the kyng of Englaonde made great purveyances; and whan the wynter was passed, he toke the see, well accompanied with dukes, erles, and barownes, and dyuers other knyghtes, and arryved at the towne of Andewarp,2 as than pertayninge to the duke of Brabant: thyther came people from all partes to se hym, and the great estate that he kep. Than he sent to his cosyn, the duke of Brabant, and to the duke of Guerles, to the marques of Jullers, to the lorde John of Heynalt, and to all such as he trusted to have any conforte of, sayeng, howe he wolde gladly speke with theym; they came all to Andewarp, bytwene Whytsonyde, and the feest of saynte John. And whan the kyng had well feasted them, he desyred to knowe their myndes, whane they wolde begynne that they had promyse: requiryngem them to dyspatche the mater brevely, for that intent, he sayd, he was come thyder, and had all his men redy; and howe it shulde be a great damage to hym to defarr the mater long. These lordes had longe counsell among them, and fynally they sayd, Syr, our commynge hyther as nowe, was more to se you, than for any thynge els: we be nat as nowe, purveyed to gyve you a full answere; by your lycence we shall retourne to our people, and come agayne to you at your pleasure, and thane gyve you so playne an answere, that the mater shall nat rest in us. Than they toke day, to come agayn a thre wekes after the feest of saynt John. The
SYR JOHN FROISSART

kynge shewed them what charges he was at, with so longe CAP. XXXII
abyding, thynkinge whan he came thyther that they had byng kyng
ben full purveyd to have made hym a playne answere, Edwarde of
sayng howe that he wolde nat returne into England, tyll he
had a full answere. So thus these lorde departed, and the
kynge taryed in the abbay of saynt Bernard, and some of
the Englyshe lorde taryed styll at Andewarpe, to kepe
the kynge company, and some of the other rode about the
countrey in great dyspence. The duke of Brabant went to
Lovane, and there taryed a long tyme, and often tymes he
sent to the Frenche kyng, desyryng hym to have no suspicions
to hym, and nat to byleve any yvell informacion made of
hym; for by his wyll, he sayd he wold make none aliance,
nor covenant agaynst hym: sayeng also, that the kynge of
Englande was his coseyn germayne, wherfore he might nat
deny hym to come into his countrey.

The day came that the kyng of Englande loket to have
an answere of these lorde: and they excused them, and
sayd, howe they were redy and their men, so that the duke
of Brabant wold be redy for his part, sayeng, that he was
nerethan then; and that assone as they might knowe that
he were redy, they wolde nat be behynde, but at the begyn-
nyng of the mater, assone as he. Than the kyng dyd so
moche, that he spake agayn the duke, and shewed
him the answere of the other lorde, desyryng him, by
amyte and lynage, that no faute were founde in hym, sayeng,
howe he perceyved well that he was but cold in the mater,
and that without he wer quicker and dyd otherwyse, he
douted he shulde lese therby the aye of all the other
lorde of Almayne, through his defaulte. Than the duke
sayd, he wolde take counsayle in the mater, and whan he
had longe debated the mater, he sayd howe he shulde be
as redy as any other, but firste he sayd, he wolde speke
agayn with the other lorde; and he dyde sende for them,
desyryng them to come to hym, wher as they pleased best.
Than the day was apoynpted about the mydles of August,
and this counsell to be at Hale, bycause of the yong erle of
Heynalt, who shulde also be ther, and with hym sir John of
Heynalt, his uncle. Whane these lorde were all come
to this parlyament at Hale, they had longe counsayle

101
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXXII

How kyng Edwarde of England made great alyauance in the empyre.

togyder; finally, they sayd to the kyng of Englande, Syr, we se no cause why we shulde make defance to the Frenche kyng, all thynges consyndred, without ye can gette thagreement of themperour, and that he wolde commaunde us to do so in his name; the emperour may well thus do, for of long tyme past there was a covenant sworne and sealed, that no kyng of Fraunce ought to take any thyng parteyning to thempyre: and this kyng Philippe hath taken the castell of Crevecure, in Cambreysis, and the castell of Alues, in Pailleull, and the cytie of Cambray; wherfore themperour hath good cause to defye hym by us: therfore sir, if ye can get his acord, our honour shal be the more; and the kyng sayd, he wolde folowe their counsayle. Than it was ordayne, that the Marques of Jullers shulde go to themperour, and certayne knyghtes, and clerkes of the kynges, and some of the counsell of the duke of Gwerles; but the duke of Brabant wolde sende none fro hym, but he lende the castell of Louayne to the kyng of Englande to lye in. And the Marques and his company founde the emperour at Florebetche, and shewed hym the cause of their commyng. And the lady Margarete of Heynault dydde all her payne to further forthe the matter, whom sir Lewes of Bavyer, than emperour, had wedde. And ther the Marques of Jullers was made an erle, and the duke of Guelders, who byfore was an erle, was than made a duke. And themperour gave commyssyon to foure knyghtes, and to two doctours of his counsell, to make kyng Edwarde of Englande, his ycarre generall throughout all the empyre; and therof these sayd lorde hadde instrumentes publyke, confyrmed and sealed sufficienctly by the emperour.

CAP. XXXIII

Howe kyng Davyd of Scotlande made alyauance with kyng Phyllyppe of Fraunce.

In this season, the yonge kyng Davyd of Scotlande, who had lost the best part of his lande, and coulde notte recover it out of the holde of thenglysshmen, departed privelvly with a small company, and the quene his wyfe
SYR JOHN FROISSART

with hym, and toke shyppyng, and arryved at Bolayne, and CAP. XXXIII
so rodde to Pares, to kyng Philippe, who gretly dyd feast Howe kyng
hym; and offred hym of his castels to abyde in, and of his
goodes to dyspende, on the condycion that he shulde make
no peace with the kyng of Engelande, without his counsell and his aagree:
and kyng Philippe knewe well, howe the
Madealysauncen of
kyng of Engelande apparelled greatly to make hym warre. Fraunce.
So thus the kyng ther retayned kyng Davyd, and the
queene, a long season, and they had all that they neded, at
his coste and charge: for out of Scotelande came but lytell
substance to mayntayne withall their estates. And the
French king sent certayne messangers into Scotelande, to the
lordes ther, such as kept warr agaynst thenglishmen,
offryng them great ayde and confort, so that they wolde
take no peace, nor truse, with the kyng of Engelande, with-
out it were by his aagreeement, or by thaccorde of their owne
kyng, who had in likewyse promysed and sworne. Than
the lordes of Scotelande counselled togyder, and joyously
they accorded to his request, and so sealed and swere with
the kyng their lorde. Thus this alyance was made bytwene
Scotelande and France, the which endured a long season
after. And the frenche kyng sent men of warr into Scoteland,
to kepe warr agaynst thenglishmen, as syr Arnolde Dan-
dregien, who was after marschall of Fraunce, and the lorde
of Garencieres, and dyverse other knyghtes and squyers.
The Frenche kyng thought that the Scottes shuld gyve so
moch ado to the realme of Engeland, that thenglishmen
shuld nat come over the see to anoy hym.

CAP. XXXIII

How kyng Edwarde of England was made vycare
generall of thempyre of Almaygne.

WHAN the kyng of England, and the other lorde
to hym alayed, wer departed fro the parlayment
of Hale, the kyng went to Lovan, and made
redy the castell for his abyding, and sent for the queene
to come thyder, if it pleased her: for he sent her
worde he wolde nat come thens of an hole yere: and sent
THE CRONYCLE OF

How kyng Edwarde of Englonde was made vycare generall of theempyre of Almaygne.

home certayne of his kyghtes to kepe his lande fro the Scottes. And the other lوردes and kyghtes, that were there stull with the kyng, rode aboute the realme of Flanders, and Henalt, makying grete dyspence, gyveng great rewarde and juels to the lordes, ladies, and damoselles of the countrye, to get their good wyll. They dyd so moche that they were greatly prayed, and specially of the common people, bycause of the port and state that they kept. And than aboute the feast of all sayntes, the marques of Jullers, and his company, sent worde to the kyng how they had sped; and the kyng sent to hym, that he shulde be with hym aboute the feast of saynt Martyn; and also he sent to the duke of Brabant, to knowe his mynde, wher he wolde the parlyament shulde be holde: and he answered at Arques, in the countie of Loze, nere to his countrey. And than the kyng sent to all other of his alyes, that they shulde be there. And so the hall of the towne was appareled and hanged, as though it had ben the kynges chamber; and there the kyng sette crowned with golde, v. fote hygher than any other: and there openly was redde the letters of theempourer, by the which, the kyng was made vycare generall, and lieftenaunt, for the emperour, and had power gyven hym to make lawes, and to mynstre justyce to every person, in theempours name, and to make money of golde and sylver. The emperour also thare commandad by his letters, that all persons of his empyre, and all other his subgiettes, shulde obey to the kyng of England, his vycare, as to hymselfe, and to do hym homage. And incontytent ther was clayme and answe made bytwene parties, as before the emperour, and right and judgement gyven. Also there was renued a judgement, and a statute affermed, that had been made before in the emperours courte, and that was this; that who soever wolde any hurt to other, shulde make his defyance thre dayes byforde his dede, and he that dyde otherwys, shulde be reputed as an eyyll doer, and for a vylans dede. And whan all this was done, the lordes departed, and toke day that they shulde all appere before Cambrey, thre wekes after the feast of saynte John, the whiche towne was become Frenche; thus they all doper, and every man went to his owne. And kyng Edwarde,
as vycare of thempyre, went than to Lovayne, to the quene, who was newly come thyder out of Engelande, with great noblenesse, and well accompanied, with ladyes and damosels of Engelande; so there the kyng and the quene kepeth their house ryght honorably all that wynter, and caused money, golde, and sylver, to be made at Andewarpe, great plentie. Yet for all this, the duke of Brabant lefte thempyre of nat, but with great dylingence, sent often messangers to kyng Philyppe, as the lorde Loys of Travelljen, his chefe counsellour, with dyvers other, ever to excuse hym, for the whiche cause, this knight was oftentymes sent, and at the laste, abode styll in the Frenche court with the kyng, to thentent always to excuse hym agaynst all informacions that myght be made of hym: the which knyght dyd all his devoyre in that behalfe.

CAP. XXXV

Howe kyng Edward and all his alyes dyd defye the Frenche kyng.

Thus the wynter passed and somer came, and the feest of saynt John Baptyst aproached: and the lorde of Engelande and of Almayne aparelled themselfe to accomplissin their enterprise; and the Frenche kyng wroght as moch as he coude to the contrary, for he knewe moch of their intentes. Kyng Edward made all his provision in Engelande, and all his men of warr, to be redy to passe the see, incontyment after the feest of saynt John, and so they dyde. Then the kyng went to Ylle-nort, and there made his company to be lodgde, as many as myght in the towne, and the other without, a long on the ryver syde, in tentes and pavylyons: and ther he taryed fro Maudelyn tyde till our lady day in Septembre, abyding wekely for the lorde of thempyre; and specially for the duke of Brabant, on whose commynge all the other abode. And whan the kyng of Engelande sawe howe they came nat, he sent great messangers to eche of them, sommonyng them to come, as they had promysed, and to mete with hym at
THE CRONYCLE OF

Machlyn, on saynt Gyles day, and than to shewe hym why they had taryed so long. Thus kyng Edwarde lay at Vylenort; and kepte dayly at his cost and charge, well to the nombre of xvi. hundred men of armes, all come fro the other syde of the see; and x. M. archers, besyde all other provysions; the which was a marveylous great charge, besyde the great rewardes that he had gyven to the lorde, and besyde the great armyes that he had on the see. The Frenche kyng, on his part, had set Genowayes, Normayns, Bretons, Pycardes, and Spanyardes, to be rede on the see, to entre into England, assone as the warr were openned. These lorde of Almayne, at the kyng of Engelande somons, came to Machlyn, and with moche besynesse finally they accorded, that the kyng of Engelande might well sette forward within xv. dayes after: and to thentent that their warr shuld be the more laudable, thei agreed to send their defaynses to the Frenche kyng: first, the kyng of England, the duke of Guerles, the marques of Jullers, sir Robert Dartoyse, sir John of Heynalt, the marques of Musse, the marques of Blanquebourc, the lorde of Paulquemont, sir Arnold of Baquhen, the archbysshop of Colayn, sir Galeas, his brother, and al other lorde of thempyre. These defaynses were written and sealed by all the lorde, except the duke of Brabant, who sayd he wold do his dede by hym-selfe, at tyme convenyent. To bere these defaynses into Fraunce, was charged the bysshop of Lyncolne, who bare them to Parys, and dyd his message in suche maner, that he coude nat be reproched nor blamed; and so he had a safe conduct to retourne agayne to his kyng, who was as than at Machlyne.

CAP. XXXVI

How sir Water of Manny after the defaynses declared, made the first journey into France.

In the firste weke that the Frenche kyng was thus defyed, sir Water Manny, assone as he knewe it, he gate to hym a xl. spores, and rode through Brabant, nyght and day, till he came into Heynalt, and entred into the wode of Blaton, as than nat knowing what he shulde
Syr John Froissart

do; but he had shewed to some of them that were moost privyest about hym, howe he had promysed before ladys and damoselles, or he came out of Engelande, that he wolde be the first that shulde entre into Fraunce, and to gete other towele or castell, and to do some dedes of armes. And than his entent was to ryde to Mortaigne, and to gete it if he might, the which partayned thane to the realme of Fraunce; and soo rode and passed the wode of Blaton, and came in a mornynge before the sonne risyng to Mortaygne, and by adventure he founde the wycket of the gate opynne. Than he alghtedde with his company and entred in, and dyd sette certayne of his company to kepe the gate, and so went into the hygh strete with his penon before hym, and came to the great towre, but the gate and wycket was fast closed. And when the watch of the castell harde the brunt, and sawe them, he blewhe his horne, and cryed, Treason, treason. Than every man awoke and made them redy, and kept themselfe stillyn within the castell. Than sir Water of Manny went backe agayne, and dyd set fyre in the strete joyninge to the castell, so that there were a therscore houses brennt, and the people sore afrayed, for they wende all to have been taken. Than sir Water and his company rode backe, streight to Conde, and ther passed the ryver of Hayne; than they rode the way to Valencennes, and cooasted on the ryght hande, and came to Denayne, and so went to the abbay, and soo passed forth towarde Bouhaigne, and dyd so moche, that the captayne dyd let them passe thorough by the ryver. Than thei came to a strong castell, parcteyning to the bysshoppes of Cambry, called the castell of Thynye, the which sodenly they toke, and the captayne and his wyfe within. And the lorde Manny made a good garyson, and set therin a brother of his, called sir Gyles Manny, who afterwarde dyd moche trouble to the cytie of Cambry, for the castell was within a leage of the towne. Than sir Water Manny retournd into Brabant, to the kyngue his soveraygne lorde, whom he founde at Machlyne, and ther shewed hym all that he had done.

1 Bouchain.

2 Thun t' Evagne.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XXXVII

How that after the sayd defyances made, the Frenchmen entred into England.

ASSONE as kyng Phyllope knewe that he was defyed of the kyng of England and of his alyes, he reteyned men of warre on every syde; and sent the lord Galoys de la Bausyne,1 a good knyght of Savoy, into the cyte of Cambray, and made hym captayne ther, and with hym sir Thybalt de Marueyle, and the lorde of Roy; so that they were, what of Savoy and of Fraunce, a ii. hundred spere. And kyng Philyppe sent and seased into his handes the countie of Pontyeu, the whiche the kyng of Engelande had before, by reason of his mother: and also he sent to dyvers lorde of thempyre, as to therle of Heynalt his neveue, to the duke of Lrrayne, therle of Bar, the byshop of Metz, the byshop of Liege, desyryng them that they wolde make no yvell purchase agaynst hym or his realme. The moost part of these lordes answered, howe they wolde do nothynge that shuld be agaynst hym; and the erle of Heynalt wrote unto hym right courteysly, how that he wolde be redy alyways to ayt hym and his realme agaynst all men: but seyng the kyng of Engelande maketh his warre, as vycare and lyeutenant of thempyre, wherfore he said, he might nat refuse to hym his countrey nor his confort, bycause he helde part of his countrey of themperour. And assone as sir Hewe Quyriell, sir Peter Bahuchet, and Barbe Noyre, who lay and kept the streightes bytwene England and Fraunce with a great navy, knewe that the warre was opyn, they came on a Sonday, in the fore noone, to the havyn of Hampton,2 whyle the people were at masse; and the Normayns, Pycardes, and Spanyerdes entred into the towne, and robbed and pilled the towne, and slewe dyvers, and defowled maydens, and enforced wyves, and charged their vessels with the pyllage, and so entred agayne into their shyppes. And whan the tyde came, they dysancred, and sayled to Normandy, and came to Depe,3 and there departed, and devyded their boty and pyllages.
Syr John Froissart

Cap. XXXVIII

How kyng Edwarde besieged the cyte of Cambray.

The kyng of England departed fro Machelyne, and went to Brussels, and all his people past on by the town. Than came to the kyng a xx. M. Almaynes, and the kyngse sent and demandyd of the duke of Brabant, what was his entenyon, to go to Cambray, or els to leave it. The duke answered and sayyd, that as some as he knewe that he had besieged Cambray, he wolde come thryder with xii. hundred spere, of good men of warre. Than the kyng went to Nyvell, and there lay one nyght, and the nexte day to Mons, in Heynalt; and there he founde the yong erle of Heynalt, who receyved him joyously. And ever sir Robert of Dartoyse was about the kyng, as one of his prive counsell, and a xvi. or xx. other great lordes and knightes of Engelande, the which were ever about the kyng, for his honoure and estate, and to counsell hym in all his dedes. Also with hym was the bysshopp of Lyncolne, who was greatly renomed in this journey both in wysdome and in prowes. Thus thenglyssmen passed forth, and lodged abrode in the countrey, and founde provysion ynoogh before them for their money; bowbeit some payed truly, and some nat. And whan the kyng had taryed twy dayes at Mons in Heynalt, thane he went to Valencennes, and he and xii. with hym entred into the towne, and no mo persons. And thryder was come therel of Heynalt, and syr John his uncle, and the lorde of Faguynelles, the lorde of Verchyn, the lorde of Havreth, and dyvers other, who were about therel their lorde. And the kyng and therel went hand in hande to the grete hall, which was redy appareld to receyve them; and as they went up the steares of the hall, the bysshopp of Lyncolne, who was there present, spake out aloude, and sayd, Wylyam, bysshopp of Cambray, I admonyshe you as procurer to the kyng of England, vycare of thempyre of Rome, that ye opyn the gates of the cyte of Cambray, and if ye do nat, ye
THE CRONYCLE OF

shall forsayt your landes, and we woll entre by force. Ther was none that answered to that mater, for the bysshopp was nat there present. Than the bysshopp of Lyncolne sayd agayn, Erle of Heynault, we admonysshe you in the name of themperour, that ye come and serve the kyng of England, his vycare, before the cyte of Cambray, with suche nombre as ye ought to do. Therle who was ther present, sayd, With a right good wyll I am reday. So thus they entred into the hall, and therle ledede the kyng into his chambre, and anon the supper was reday. And the next day the king departed, and went to Aspre, and ther taryed ii. dayes, and suffred all his men to passe forth; and so than went to Cambray, and loged at Wy, and besieged the cyte of Cambray rounde about; and dayly his power encreased. Thyder came the yong erle of Heynalt in great array, and syr John his uncle, and they lodged nere to the kyng, and the duke of Guerles, and his company, the marques of Musse, therle of Mons, the erle of Sauynes, the lorde of Falquemont, sir Arnolde of Bouqueheu, with all thother lordses of thempyre, suche as were alyed with the kyng of Englande. And the sixt day after the siege layd, thyder came the duke of Brabant, with a ix. hundred speres, besyde other, and he lodged toward Ostrenan, on the ryver of Lescaut, and made a bridge over the water, to thentent to go fro the one hoost to the other. And assone as he was come, he sent to defye the Frenche kyng, who was at Compyengne, wherof Loyis of Travehen, who had alwayes before excused the duke, was so confused, that he wold no more returne agayn into Brabant, but dyed for sorowe in Fraunce. This sege durynge, ther were many skirmyshesh; and sir John of Heynalt, and the lorde of Falquemont, rode ever lightly togyder, and brynt and wasted sore the countrey of Cambresys. And on a day, these lorders, with the nombre of v. C. speres, and a M. of other men of warr, came to the castell of Doisy, in Cambresys, pertayning to the lord of Coucy, and made ther a great assaut; but they within dyd defende them so valyantly, that thei had no damage; and so the sayd lorders retourned to their lodgynge. Therle of Heynalt and his company, on a Saturday, came to the gate towarde saynt Quyntines, and made ther a great
Syr John Froissart

assault. Ther was John Chandos, who was than but a squier, of whose prowes this boke speketh moch, he cast hymselfe bytwene the barraynes and the gate, and fough the valiantly with a squier of Vermandoys called Johanne of saynt Daeker; and ther was goodly feats of armes done bytwene them. And so the Heynows conquered by force the bayles, and ther was entred therle of Heynalt and his marshals, sir Gararde of Verchynye, syr Henry Dantoynge, and other, who adventured them valiantly to advaunce their honour. And at an other gate, called the gate Robert, was the lord Beamonde, and the lorde of Falquemont, the lorde Danighyen, sir Wyliyam of Manny and their companys made ther a sore and hard assaute. But they of Cambray, and the soudyers set there by the French kyng, defended themselfe and the cyte so valiantly, that thassauters wan nothyng, but so returned right wery and well beaten to their logynges. The yong erle of Namure came thysere to serve the yong erle of Heynalt by desyre, and he sayd he wolde be on their part as long as they were in thempyre; but assone as they entred into the realme of Fraunce, he sayd, he wolde forsake them and go and serve the French kyng who had retayned hym. And in likenysse so was threatent of therle of Heynalt, for he had commandad all his men on payne of dethe that none of them shulde do any thyng within the realme of Fraunce. In this season, whyle the kyng of England lay at siege before Cambray with xl. M. men of armes and greatly constrained them by assautes, kyng Philyp made hisomons at Peron, in Varmandoys. And the kyng of England counselleth with sir Robert Dartois, in whome he had great afaynance, demantuynge of hym whyther it were better for hym to entre into the realme of Fraunce, and to encounter his adversary, or els to abyde styll before Cambray, tyll he had won it biforme. The lorde of England and such other of his counsell sawe well howe the cyte was strong, and well furnysched of men a warr, and bytels, and artylary, and that it shuld be long to abyde ther tyll they had wonne the cytie, wherof they were in no certentie; and also they sawe well how that wynter aproched nere, and as yet had done no maner of entreprise, but lay at gret expence. Than they counselle the kyng to set forwarde into the realme, wher
THE CRONYCLE OF

as they might fynde more plentie of forage. This counsell was taken, and all the lorde ordayne to dyslodge, and trussed tentes, and pavylions, and all maner of harnes, and so departed, and rode towarde mount saynt Martyn, the which was at thentre of Fraunce. Thus they rode in good order, every lorde among his owne men: marshals of theng-lyeashe hoost were therle of Northampton and Glocetter, and therle of Suffolke, and constable of Englanede was the erle of Warwyke. And so they passed ther the ryver of Lescault, at their ease. And whan therle of Heynalte had accompanyed the kyng unto the departyng out of thempyre, and that he shuld passe the ryver, and entre into the realme of Fraunce, then he toke leave of the kyng, and sayd howe he wolde ryde no farther with hym at that tyme, for kyng Philippe his uncle had sent for hym, and he wolde nat have his yvell wyll, but that he wold go and serve hym in Fraunce, as he had served the kyng of England in thempyre. So thus therle of Heynalte and therle of Namure and their companyes rode backe to Quesnoy. And therle of Heynalte gave the moost part of his company leave to depart, desyringe them to be redy whan he sende for them, for he sayd that shortly after he wolde go to kyng Philippe his uncle.

CAP. XXXIX


ASSONE as kyng Edward had passed the ryver of Lescaut, and was entred into the realme of Fraunce, he called to hym sir Henry of Flanders, who was as than a yong squier, and ther he made hym knyght; and gave hym yerely CC. li. sterlyng, sufficiently assigned hym in England. Than the kyng went and lodged in thabbe of mount saint Martyn, and ther taryed two dayes, and his people abrode in the country; and the duke of Brabant was lodged in thabbe of Vaucellez.

Whan the French kyng, beyng at Compiengne, harde these tydynges, than he enformed his somones, and sent the erle of Ewe and of Gynes, his constable, to saynt Quyntines, to
SYR JOHN FROISSART

sent the lorde of Coucy into his owne contrey, and the lorde of Hem to his; and sent many men of armes to Guyse and to Rybemont, to Behayne and the fortresses joynyng to the trethere of the realme; and so went hymselfe towarde Peron. In the meane season that kyng Edward lay at thabbe of mount saynt Martyn, his men ran abrode in the contrey to Bapaume, and nere to Peron, and to saynt Quyntines. They founed the contrey plentyfull, for ther had ben no waer of a long season; and so it fortuned that syr Henry of Flanders, to avance his body, and to encrease his honour, [went] on a day with other knyghtis, wherof sir John of Heynalt was chefe, and with hym the lorde of Falquemont, the lorde of Bergues, the lorde of Vaudresen, the lorde of Lens, and dyvers other, to the nombre of v. C.; and they avysed a towne therby called Honneecourt, wherein moch peple wer gadered on trust of the fortresses, and therin they had conveyed all their goods; and ther had ben syr Arnold of Baquehen, and syr Wylyam of Dunor, and their company, but they attayned nothynge ther. Ther was at this Honnyecourt an abbot of grete wsdlome and hardynes, and he caused to be made without the towne a barrers overthwart the strete lyke a grate, nat past half a fot wyde every grate: and he made great provysions of stones and quicke lyme, and me redy to defende the place. And these lordes, whan they came thyder, they lighted afote, and entred to the barrers with their gleysys in their handes, and ther began a sore assaut, and they within valyantly defended themselfe. Ther was thabbot hymselfe, who receyved and gave many great strokes: ther was a ferse assaut; they within cast downe stones, peces of tymbre, pottes full of chalke, and dyd moche hurt to thassaylers. And syr Henry of Flanders, who helde his glayve in his handes, and gave therwith great strokes: at the last thabbot toke the gleve in his handes, and drewe it so to hym, that at last he set handes on syr Henres arme, and drewe it so sore, that he pulled out his arme at the barrers to the shulder, and helde hym at a great avantage, for and the barrers had ben wyde ynough, he had drawen hym through; but syr Henry wolde nat let his wepon go for savynge of his honour. Than thother

1 Ham.
2 Bohain.
3 Duwensoorde.
THE CRONYCLE OF

1339

CAP. XXXIX

knyghtis strake at thabbot, to rescue their felowe: so this
wrestlysing endured a long space; but fynally the knyght
was rescued, but his gleave abode with thabbot. And on a
day, when I wrot this boke, as I past by, I was shewed the
gleeve by the monkes ther, that kept it for a treasur. So
this sayd day, Honnycourt was sore assayled, the which
indured tyll it was nyght, and pryver wer slayne and sore
hurt. Syr Johann of Heynault lost there a knyght of
Holland, called sir Hermet. Whan the Flemynge,Heynowes,Englyshmen, and Almaygne sawe the fierce
wylles of them within, and sawe howe they coulde gette
nothynge there, withdrew themselve against nyght. And
the next day on the morning, the kyng departed fro mount
saynt Martyn, commaundynge that no person shulde do
any hurt to the abbey, the which commaundement was kept.
And so than they entred into Vermandoys, and toke that
day their lodging betymes on the mount saynt Quintyne, in
good order of batayle; and they of saynt Quyntines myght
well se them; howbeit they had no desyre to yssue out of
their towne. The fore ryders came rynnynge to the barrers
skyrmyshynge, and the host taryd styll on the mount tyll
the next day. Than the lorde toke counsell what way they
shulde drawe, and by thadyve of the duke of Brabant, they
toke the way to Thyerasse, for that way their provision
came dayly to them, and were determyned, that if kyng
Phlyppe dyd folowe them, as they supposed he wolde do,
that than they wolde abyde hym in the playnfe fele, and
gyve hym batayle. Thus they went forthe in thire great
batayles: the marshallnes and the Almayynes had the first,
the kyng of Englynde in the myddle warde, and the duke of
Brabant in the rewerarde. Thus they roode forthe,
bennynghe and pyllynghe the countrey, a thre or foure
leages a day, and ever toke their logynge betymes. And a
company of Englyshmen and Almayynes passed the ryver
of Somme by the abbey of Vermans, and wasted the countrey
al about; another company, wherof sir Johann of Heynalt,
the lorde Faulquemont, and sir Arnold of Bacquehen were
chefe, rode to Origny saynt Benoysye, a good towne, but it
was but easely closed: incontynent it was taken by assaut
and robbe, and an abbey of ladyes vyolated, and the towne

1 Thierach.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

brent. Than they departed and rode towards Guy and Rybemont, and the kynge of Englande lodged at Vchories, and ther taryed a day, and his men ranne abrode and destroyed the countrey. Than the kynge toke the way to the Flamengerie, to come to Lesche, in Thierasse; and the marshals, and the byshoppe of Lyncolne, with a fye hundred speres, passed the ryver of Trysague, and entred into Laonnoys, toward the lande of the lorde of Coucy, and Brent saynt Gouven, and the towne of Marle, and on a nght lodgedde in the valley besyde Laon: and the nexte day they drewe agayne to their hoost, for they knewe by some of their prisoners that the Frenche kynge was come to saynt Quyntines, with a C. thousand men, and there to passe the ryver of Somme. So these lordes in their retornynge brent a good towne called Creyc, and dyverse other townes and hamelettes ther about.

Now let us speke of syr John of Heynalt and his company, who were a fye hundred speres. He came to Guy, and brent all the towne, and bette downe the mylles; and within the fortresses was the lady Jane, his owne daughter, wyfe to therle of Bloys, called Lewes: she deseryd her father to spare therytage of the erle, his son in lawe: but for all that, sir John of Heynalt wolde nat spare his enterprise; and so than he retornned agayne to the kynge, who was lodged in thabbe of Sarraques; and ever his peple ran over the countrey. And the lorde of Falquemont, with a C. speres, came to Lonnion, in Thierasse, a great towne, and the men of the towne were fled into a great wood, and had all their goddes with them, and had fortifed the wood with fellyng of tymbre about them. The Almayns rode thyder, and there mette with them, Sir Arnold of Baquehen, and his company, and so ther they assayed them in the wood, who defendyd them as well as they might: but finally, they were conquered and put to flight; and ther wer slayne and sore hurt mo than xi, and lost all that they had. Thus the contrey was over ryden, for they dyd what they lyst.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XL

Howe the kyng of Englane, and the French kyng
toke day of journey to fight togyder.

\footnote{Montreuil.}

HE kyng of Englane departed fro Sarnaques, and
went to Muttrell, and ther lodged a nyght, and
the next day he went to the Flamengery, and made
all his men to loge nere about hym, wherof he had mo
than xi. thousande, and there he was counselled to abyde
kyng Philippe, and to fght with hym. The French kyng
departed fro saynt Quyntines, and dayly men came to hym
fro all partes, and so came to Vyronfosse. There the kyng
taryed, and sayd howe he wold nat go thens, tyll he had
fought with the kyngge of Englane, and with his alyes,
seyng they were within two leages togyther. And whan
therle of Heynalt, who was at Queynoy, redy purveyed
of men a warr, knewe that the Frenche kyng was at Vyronfosse,
thyngkyng there to gyve batayle to theynglysshmen, he rode
forthe tyll he came to the French hoost, with v. C. spere,
and presented hymselfe to the kyng, his uncle, who made
hym but small cher, bycause he had ben with his adversary
before Cambray. Howe be it the erle excused hymselfe so
sagely, that the kyngge and his counsayle were well content.
And it was ordayned by the marshals, that is to say by the
marshall Bertrame, and by the marshall of Try, that the
erle shulde be lodged next the Englyssh hoost.

Thus these two kynge were lodged bytwene Vyronfosse
and Flamengery, in the playne feldes without any advaungtage.
I thynke ther was never sene before so goodly an assemble
of noble men togyder, as was there. Whanne the kyngge of
England beynge in the chapell of Thyerasse, knewe how that
king Philippe was within two leages, than he called the
lordes of his host togyder, and demaunded of them what he
shulde do, his honour saved, for he sayd that his entencyon
was to gyve batayle. Than the lorde behelde che other,
and they desyredde the duke of Brabant to shewe first his
entent. The duke said, that he was of the accorde that they
shulde gyve batayle, for otherwise, he sayd, they coude nat
SYR JOHN FROISSART

depart, savyng their honours: wherfore he counsayled that they shulde sende haraude to the Frenche kyng, to demaunde a day of batayle. Than an haraude of the duke of Guerles, who coude well the langage of Frenche, was enformed what he shuld say, and so he rode tyll he came into the Frenche hoost. And than he drewe hym to kynge Philyppe, and to his counsaile, and sayd, Syr, the kynge of Englaunde is in the felde, and desyrreth to have batell, power agaynst power. The whiche thynge kyng Philyppe graunted, and toke the day, the Friday next after: and as than it was Wednesday. And so the haraude retourned, well rewarded with good furred gownes, gyven hym by the French kyng, and other lorde, bycause of the tidynges that he brought. So thus the journey was agreed, and knowledge was made therof to all the lorde of bothe the hoostes, and so every man made hym redy to the matter. The Thursday in the morning there were two knyghtes of therle of Heynaultes, the lorde Sanguinelles, and the lorde of Tupeney; they mounted on their horses, and they two all onely departed fro the Frenche hoost, and rode to aviewe the Englyssh hoost. So they rode costynge the hoost, and it fortuned that the lorde of Sanguinelles horse toke the bridell in the teth, in suche wyse, that his maister coude nat rule hym; and so wyther he wolde or nat, the horse brought hym into thenglysse hoost, and there he fell in the handes of the Almaynes, who perceyved well that he was none of their company, and set on hym, and toke hym and his horse; and so he was prisoner to a fyve or sixe gentylmen of Almayne: and anone they set hym to his ransome. And when they understode that he was a Haynowe, they demaunted of hym if he knewe syr John of Heynault, and he answered Yes, and desyreth them for the love of God to bring hym to his presens, for he knewe well that he wolde quyte hym his ransome; therof were the Almayyns joyous, and so brought hym to the lorde Beaumounde, who incontynent dyde pledge hym out fro his maisters handes: and the lorde of Sanguinelles retourned agayne to therle of Heynault, and he had his horse agayne, delyvered hym at the request of the lorde Beaumond. Thus passed that day, and none other thynge done that ought to be remembered.

1 Fagnolle.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XLI

How these kynges ordayned their batayls
at Vyronfosse.

WHAN the Friday came in the mornynge, both
hoostes appareled themselfe redy, and every lorde
harde masse among their owne companiyes, and
dyvers wer shriven.

First we wolle speke of thorder of thenglysshmen, who
drewen them forarde into the felde, and made iii. batells a
fote, and dyd put all their horses, and bagages, into a lytell
wood beynde them, and forcteyd it. The first batell,
ledde the duke of Guerles, the marques of Nusse, the
marques of Blauebourec, sir John of Heynalt, therle of
Mons, therle of Saunyes, the lorde of Faulquemont, sir
Guyllam du Fort, sir Arnold de Baquehen, and the
Almayns: and amonge them was xxii. bannes, and lx.
penons in the hole, and viii. M. men. The seconde batayle
had the duke of Brabant, and the lordeys and knyghtes of his
countrey; first, the lorde of Kusse, the lorde Bergues, the
lorde of Bredangh, the lorde of Rodes, the lorde of Vauce-
lare, the lorde of Borgnyvall, the lorde of Stonnevert, the
lorde of Wyten, the lorde of Elka, the lorde of Cassebegne,
the lorde of Duffle, sir Thyrre of Valcourt, sir Rasse of the
Grez, sir John of Cassebegne, sir John Fylyfe, sir Gyles of
Coterbe, sir Water of Hotebergue, the thre bretheren of
Harlebeque, sir Henry of Flandiers, and dyvser other
barownes, and knyghtes, of Flanders, who were all under the
duke of Brabantes baner: as the lorde of Hallayne, the
lorde of Guyten, sir Hector Vyllains, sir John of Rodes, sir
Vaffart of Guysters, sir Wylyam of Strates, sir Goswin
de la Mule, and many other; the duke of Brabant had a
xxiiii. baners, and lxxx. penons, and in all a vii. M. men.
The iii. bataile, and the grettest, had the kyng of Englelande,
and with hym his cosyn therle of Derby, the bysshoppes of
Lincolne, the bysshopp of Durame, therle of Salysbury, the
erle of Northamton and of Glotecetter, therle of Suffolke, sir
Robert Dartoyse, as than called erle of Rychmont, the lorde

1Oxyg.
2Breda.
Raynolde Cobham, the lorde Persy, the lorde Roose, the lord Montbray, sir Lewes and sir John Beauchame, the lorde Dalawarr, the lorde of Laucome, the lorde Basset, kynges or dayned their batayle at Vyronfose.

How these other was syr John Chandos, of whom moche honour is spoken in this boke. The kyng had with hym xxviii. baners, and lxxx. penons, and in his batayle a vi. M. men of armes, and vi. M. archers; and he had set an other batell, as in a wyng, whereof therle of Warwyke, therle of Penbroke, the lorde Barkley, the lorde Multon, and dyverse other were as cheyfe, and they wer on horsbacke. Thus whane every lorde was under his banner, as it was commaunded by the marshals, the kyngge of England mounted on a palfrey, acompanyed all onely with sir Robert Dartoyse, sir Raynolde Cobham, and syr Water of Manny, and rode along before all his batels, and right sweley desyred all his lordes and other, that they wolde that day aye to defende his honour. And they all promysed hym so to do. Than he returned to his owne batell, and set every thing in good order, and commaunded that non shuld go before the marshals baners.

Nowe let us speke of the lordes of Fraunce, what they dyd. They were xi. score baners, iii. kynges, vi. dukes, xxvi. erles, and mo than iii. M. knyghtes, and of the commons of Fraunce mo than lx. M. The kynges that were ther with kyng Philippe of Valoys, was the kyng of Behayne, the kyng of Naverr, and kyng Davyd of Scotland; the duke of Normandy, the duke of Bretayne, the duke of Burbon, the duke of Lorraine, and the duke of Athenes; of erles: therle of Alanson, brother to the kyng, the erle of Flandiers, therle of Heynault, the erle of Bloys, therle of Bare, therle of Forestes, therle of Foiz, therle of Armynacke, the erle Dophyn of Auvergne, therle of Longwyl, therle of Stampes, therle of Vadosme, therle of Harrecourt, therle of saynt Pol, therle of Guynes, therle of Bowlongue, therle of Roussy, therle of Dampmartyn, therle of Valentynois, therle of Aucer, therle of Sancerre, therle of Genve, the erle of Auzerre. Dreux, and of Gasconge and of Languedoc so many erles and y)coutes, that it were long to rehearse: it was a great beauty to beholde the baners and standerdes waynyng.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XII

Howe these kynges departed fro Vironfosse without bataye.

I have in the wynde, and horses barded, and knyghtes and squyers richely armed. The Frechemen ordayned thre great batayls, in eche of them fyftene thousand men of armes, and xx. M. men a fote.

CAP. XLII

Howe these two kynges departed fro Vironfosse without batayle.

It might well be marveyledde howe so goodly a sight of men of warr, so nere togyder, shulde depart without batayle. But the Frenchmen were nat all of one acorde; they were of dyvers opynyons; some sayed it were a great shame and they fought nat, seynge their enemys so nere them in their owne countre, raynged in the felde, and also had promysed to fyght with them: and some other sayd it shulde be a great folly to fyght, for it was harde to knowe every mannes mynde, and jeopardy of treason: for they sayd, if fortune were contrary to their kyng as to lese the felde, he than shuld put all his hole realme in a jeopardy to be lost; and though he dyd dysconfect his enemys, yet for all that, he shuld be never the nerer of the realme of Englande, nor of such landes parteynyng to any of those lordes that be with hym alyed. Thus in strivyng of dyvers opynions, the day past tyll it was past noone; and than sodenly ther started an hare among the Frenchmen; and suche as sawe her cryed and made gret bruit, wherby suche as were behynde thought they before had ben fightynge, and so put on their helmes, and toke their speres in their handes. And so ther were made dyvers newe knyghtes, and specially therel of Heynalt made xiii. who wer ever after called knyghtes of the hare. Thus that batell stode styll all that Friday; and bysde this stryfe bytwene the counsellors of France, ther was brought in letters to the hoost of recomendacion to the Frenche kyng and to his counsell, fro kyng Robert of Cicyle, the whiche kyng, as it was sayd, was a great astronomyer, and full of great science. He hadde often tymes sought his bokes on the state of the kynges of England and of France; and he founde by his astrology, and by thenfluens of the hevens, that if the French kyng ever
Syr John Froissart

fought with kyng Edwarde of England, he shuld be dis- 
comfited: wherfore he lyke a king of gret wysdome, and as 
he that doubted the peryll of the Frenche kyng his cosyn, 
sent often tymes letters to king Philippe and to his coun-
sayle, that in no wyse he shulde make any batayle agaynst 
themlysshmen, where as kyng Edwarde was personally pre-
sent. So that what for dout and for such writyng fro the 
kyng of Cecyle, dyvers of the great lordes of Fraunce were 
sore abashed: and also kyng Philippe was enfourmed 
therof. Howe be it, yet he had great wyll to gyve batayle; 
but he was so counselled to the contrary, that the day 
passed without batell, and every man withdrew to their 
lodgynges. And whan the erle of Heynalt sawe that they 
shulde nat fight, he departed withall his hole company, and 
gent backe the same nyght to Quesnoy. And the kyng of 
Englynde, the duke of Brabant, and all the other lordes 
retourned and trussed all their bagagis, and went the same 
nyght to Davesnes, in Heynalt. And the next day they 
toke leave ech of other; and the Almayns and Brabances 
departed, and the kynge went into Brabant with the duke 
is cosyn. The same Friday that the batell shulde have ben, 
the Frenche kynge, whan he came to his lodgyng, he was sore 
dyspleased, bycause he departed without batayle. But they 
of his cousayle sayd, howe right nobly he had borne hym-
selwe, for he had valyantly pursuied his enimyss, and had 
done so moche that he had put them out of his realme; and 
how that the kyng of Englynde shulde make many such 
vyles, or he conquered the realme of Fraunce. The next 
day kyng Philippe gave lycence to all maner of men to 
depart, and he thanked right courteusly the gret lordes, of 
their ayde and socour. Thus ended this great journej, and 
every man went to their owne. The Frenche kyng went to 
saynt Omers, and sent men of warre to his garyssons, and 
speically to Tourney, to Lysle, and to Doway, and to the 
other townes marchyng on thempyre; he sent to Tourney 
syr Godmart Dufay, and made hym captayne ther, and 
regent of that countrey ther about; and he sent syr Edwarde 
of Beaugewe to Mortayne; and whan he had ordred part of 
his besynes, than he drewe towards Parys.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XLIII

How kyng Edwarde toke on hym to bere the
armes of Fraunce, and the name to be called
kyng therof.

WHAN that kyng Edwarde was departed fro the
Flamengery and came into Brabant, and went
straight to Brussels, the duke of Guerles, the
duke of Jullers, the marques of Blanquebourc, the erle
of Mons, syr John of Haynelt, the lorde of Faulque-
mont, and all the lorde of thempyre, suche as had ben at
that journay, brought hym thyder to take advye and
counsell what shulde be done more in the mater that they
had been gone. And to have expedycion in the cause, they
ordayned a parlyament to be holden at the town of Brussels;
and thyder to come was desyred Jaques Dartvell, of Gaunt,
who came thyder with a great company, and al the counsels
of the good townes of Flanders. Ther the kyng of England
was sore desyred of all his alyes of hempyre, that he shulde
requyre them of Flanders to aye and to mentayne his warr,
and to defy the French kyng, and to go with him wher as he
wolde have them; and in their so doying, he to promyse
them to recover the Isle, Doway and Bethayne. This
request was well hard of the Flamynge; and therupon they
desyre to take counsell among themselfe; and so they toke
counsell at good leasere: and than they sayd to the kyng,
Syr, or this tymne ye have made to us request in this behalfe:
syr, if we myght well doo this, sayynge your honour, and to
save our selfe, we wolde gladly do this; but, syr, we be
bounede by faith and othe, and on the somme of two myllyons
of floreyns in the popes chaumbre, that we may make nor
move no warre agaynst the kyng of Fraunce, whosoever it
be, on payne to lose the sayd somme, and besyde that, to
ryn in the sentence of cursing; but, syr, if ye wyll take on
you the armes of Fraunce, and quarter them with the armes
of Engelinde, and call your selfe kyng of Fraunce, as ye
ought to be of ryght, than we wol take you for rightfull
kyng of Fraunce, and demaunde of you quyntance of our
SYR JOHN FROISSART

bondes: and so ye to gyve us pardon therof as king of France; by this meanes we shal be assured and dispensed withall; and so than we wyll go with you wyder soever ye wyll have us. Than the kyng toke counsell, for he thought it was a sore matter to take on hym the armes of France and the name, and as than had conquered nothing therof, nor coude nat tell what shuld fall therof, nor wyder he shuld conquer it or nat: and on thether syde, loth he was to refuse the confort and ayde of the Flemynge, who myght do hym more ayde than any other. So the kyng toke counsell of the lordis of thempyre, and of the lorde Robert Dartoyse, and with other of his speyall frendes; so that finally the good and the yvell wayed. He answered to the Flemynge, that if they wolde swere and seale to this accorde, and to promyse to mentayne his warre, howe he wolde do all this with a good wyll, and promysed to gette them agayne Lyle, Doway, and Bethayn: and all they answered howe they were content. Than there was a day assigned to mete at Gaunt, at which day the kyng was there, and the most part of the sayd lorde and all the counsayls generally in Flaunderes. And so than, all this sayd maters were rehearsed, sworn, and sealed: and the king quartred the armes of Fraunce with Engelande: and from thens forthe toke on hym the name of the kyng of Fraunce, and so contynued tyll he lefte it agayne by composicion, as ye shall after in this boke. And so at this counsayle they determinyd that the next somer after, they wold make great warre into Fraunce, promysing to besiege the cytie of Tourney; wherof the Flemynge were joyfull, for thei thought to be strong enough to gete it; and that ones gotten, they beleved shortly after to wynne agayne Lyale, Doway, and Bethayne, with thappurtenaunces partayning or holden of therle of Flaunderes.

Thus every man departed and went home: the kyng of Engelande went to Andwarpe, and the quene abode styl at Gaunt, and was ofte tymes vysited by Jaques Dartyll, and by other lordes, ladies, and damoseis of Gaunt. The kyng left in Flaunderes therle of Salysbury, and therle of Suffolke; they went to Ipre, and ther kept a great garyson, and made sore warre agaynst them of Lysle, and thereabout. And
when the kynges shyppes were redy, he toke the see, and so
sayled into Englane, and came to London about the feest
of saynt Andrewe, where he was honourably receyued. And
ther he had complayntes made hym of the dystrucion of
Hampton: and he sayd that he trusted or a yere lenger that
it shulde be well revenged.

CAP. XLIII

How the Frenchmen brent in the landes of
syr John of Heynault.

NOWE lette us speke of kyng Philyppe, who greatly
fortified his nayvy that he hadde on the see, wherof
syr Kery, Bahuchet, and Barbe Noyre were cap-
tayns; and thei had under them a great retynue of Geno-
wayes, Normayns, Bretons, and Pycarides. They dyd that
wytter great damage to the realme of Englane: somtyne
they came to Dover, Sandwyche, Wynchelse, Hastynges,
and Rye, and dyd moche sorowe to thenglysshe men, for
they were a great nombre as a xl. M. men. Ther was none
that coude yssue out of Englane, but they were robbed,
taken, or slayde; so they wan great pyllage, and spicially
they wan a great shyppe called the Christofer, laden with
wolles, as she was goyng into Flaunders, the which shyppe
had coost the kyng of Englane moch money; and all they
that were taken within the shyppe were slayne and drownem:
of the which conquest the Frenchmen were ryght joyouse.
The Frenche kyng than sent and wrote to the lorde of
Beamont, the lorde of Breme, to the Vidame of Chalon, the
lorde John de la Boue, the lorde John and Gararde of Loyre,
that they shulde make an armey, and to ryde into the landis
of syr John of Heynault, and to burne and dystroy there
asmoche as they might. They obeyed, and gathered togyder
to the nombre of v. C. speres; and so in a mornynge they
came before the towne of Simay, and gathered togyder there
a gret pray; for they of the countrey thought that the
Frenchmen wolde nat a come so farre, nor to have passed the
wode of Thyrach. So the Frenchmen burnt the suburbes of
Simay, and dyverse other vyllages there about, nygh all the
1339
SYR JOHN FROISSART

lande of Simay, except the fortresses; than they went to Aubenton, in Thyerach, and ther devyded their booty. In How the the same season the soudyours of Cambray came to a lytell strong house without Cambray, called Reniques, pertayning to syr John of Haynult: and a bastarde sonne of his kept the house, with a xv. soudyours with hym; so they were assayed a hole day togyder, and the dykes were so frozen, that a man might well come to the walles; and so they within trussed all that they ad, and about mydnight departed, and set fyre themselfe on the house. The next day, when they of Cambray came thysday agayne, and sawe howe it was bent, they dyd bete downe all that stode; and the capitayne of the house and his company went to Valencennes. Ye have well harde before howe sir Gualter of Mannye toke the castell of Thyne, and set therin a brother of his, called Gyles of Manny: he made many skirmyssh with them of Cambray, and dyd them mocch trouble. And so it hapened on a day, that he went fro his garyson with a sixscore men of armes, and came to the barrers of Cambray; and the brunt was so great, that many armed them within the cyte, and came to the gate wher as the skirmyssh was; wher as sir Gyles had put backe them of Cambray. Than they issuéd out, and among the Cambreses ther was a yong squyer, a Gascoyne, called Wyllyam Marchant, who went out into the felde well horesed, his sheld about his necke, and his speare in his hande. And whan sir Gyles of Mannye sawe him, he rode fiercly to hym; and ther sir Gyles was stryken through all his harnes to the hert, so that the speere went cleene through his body, and so he fell to the eth. Than ther was afyers skirymyshe, and many stryken downe on bothe partes; but finally they of Cambray obtayned the place, and drewe away their enimies, and toke with them sir Gyles of Mannye, hurt as he was, and so brought hym to Cambray with great joye. Than incontynent they dysarmed hym, and dyd gette surgions to dresse his wound, for they wold gladly that he might escaped; but he dyed the next day after. Than thei determyned to send his body to his two bretherne, John and Tyrrey, who were in the garyson at Bouhaye, in Ostrenant; for though that the countrey of Heinalt at that tyme was in no war, yet all the frontere.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XLIII

How the Frenchmen brent in the landes of syr John of Heynault.

towards Fraunce were ever in good awayt. So than they ordained a horse lytter right honorably, and put his body therin, and caused ii. freres to convey it to his bretherne, who received hym with great sorowe. And they bare hym to the freres at Valencennes, and there he was buryed: and after that the two bretherne of Manny came to the castell of Thyne, and made sore warre agaynst them of Cambray, in countervengyng the dethe of their brother.

In this season, captayne of Turney and Turnyeses was sir Godmar de Fay, and of the fortresses there about: and the lorde of Beauyeu was within Mortayn, on the ryver of Lescate; and the stuaarde of Carcassonne was in the town of saynt Amande; sir Amery of Poyters in Douay; the lorde Galois de la Baulme, and the lorde of Vyllars, the Marshall of Myrepons, and the lorde of Marueyl, in the cyte of Cambray. And these knyghtes, squyers, and soudyers of France desyred none other thyng but that they myght entre into Heynault, and to robbe and pyll the countrey. Also the bysshoppe of Cambray, who was at Parys with the kyng, complayned howe the Heynowes had done hym domage, brent and overron his contrey more than any other men. And than the kyng gave lycence to the soudiers of Cambresys to make a rode into Heynault: than they of the garsons made a journey, and were to the nombre of vi. C. men of armes. And on a Saturday in the mornynge they departed from Cambray; and also they of la Male Mayson rode forth the same day, and mette togyder, and went to the towne of Aspre, the which was a good towne and a great, without the walles. The people ther were in no dout, for they knewe of no warr towards them. So the Frenchmen entred, and founde men and women in their houses, and toke them and robbed the towne at their pleasur, and than sette fyre in the towne, and brent it so clene, that nothyng remayned but the walles. Within the towne ther was a priory of blakke monkis, with great byldinges bysyde the church, which helde of saynt Wast of Arras; the Frenchmen also robbed the place, and brent it to the yerth, and withall their pyllage they retournd to Cambray. These tidyngees anone came to the knowledge of therle of Heynault, who was a bedde and a slepe in his lodgyng,
SYR JOHN FROISSART

called the Sale: and sodenly he rose and armed hym, and CAP. XLIII

called up all such knyghtes as were about hym; but they

were loged so abrode that they were not so soone redy as

therle was, who, without taryeng for any person, came into

the market place of Valencennes, and caused the belles to be

sounded alaram. Than every man arose, and armed them,

and folowed therle their lord, who was ryden out of the
towne in great hast, and toke the way toward Aspre: and

by that tyme he had ryden a leage, tityngis came to hym

howe the Frenchmen were departed. Than he rode to thabby

of Founnces, where as the lady his mother was; and she

had moche a do to repayse hym of his dyspleasure, for he

sayd playnly that the dysstruction of Aspre shuld derely be

revenge in the realme of Fraunce. The good lady his

mother dyd as moche as she coude to swage his yre, and to

excuse the kyng of that dede. So whan therle had ben

ther a certayne space, he toke leave of her, and retourned to

Valencennes; and incontynent wrote letters to the prelats

and knyghtis of his countrey to have their advyce and coun-

sayle in that behalfe. And whan sir John of Heynalt knewe

herof, he toke his horse, and came to therle his nephe: and

as sone as the erle sawe hym, he sayd, A fayre uncle, your

absence hath sette the Frenchmen in a pride; A sir, quoth

he, with your trouble and anoyance I am sore displeased:

howe be it in a maner I am glad thereof; now ye be well

rewarded for the servyce and love that ye have borne to the

Frenchmen: nowe it behoveth you to make a journey into

Fraunce agaynst the Frenchmen. A uncle, quoth therle, loke

into what quarter ye thynke best, and it shall be shortly

done. So thus the day of parlyament assigned at Mons

came, and thyder resorted all the counsayle of the countr

and also of Holande and Zelande. Ther were dyvers opyn-
yons; some wolde that certayne suffycyent persons shulde be

tsent to the French kyng, to knowe if he were consentyng to

the hurt done in Henalt, or by what tyme he shulde make

warre into the erles lande, without any defiaunce; and some

other wold that therle shulde be revenged, in lyke maner as

the Frenchmen had begun. Howbeit, finally all reasons

debated, it was thought that therle coude do no otherwyse

but to make warr into Fraunce. And it was ordyned, that

127
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XLIII
How the Frenchmen brent in the landes of syr John of Heynault.

therle shulde make his defyaunce to the Frenche kyng, and than to entre byforce into the realme of France; and to bere these defyaunces was ordayne thabbot Thybalt of saynt Crispyn. So than the letters of defyaunces were written and sealed by therle, and by all the nobles of the contrey. Than therle thanked all his lourdes and other of their good confort, and of their proumyse to ayde to revenge him agaynst the Frenchmen. Thabbot of saynt Crispyn came into Fraunce, and brought these defyaunces to kyng Philippine, who made light thereoff, and sayd how his nephue was but an outraous foole, and howe that he was a marchant to have his contrey brent. Thabbot returned to therle, and to his counsayle, and shewed howe he had sped: and than therle prepared for men of warre in his contrey, and in Brabant, and in Flanders, so that he had a great nombre togyder: and so set forwarde, toward the lande of Symay; for therles intent was to go and brenne the landes of the lorde of Bremus, and also Aubenton, and Thyerach.

1 Chimay.
2 Vervins.

CAP. XLV

Howe therle of Heynault toke and distroyed Aubenton, and Thyerach.

THEY of Aubenton douted greatly therle of Heynault, and sir John his uncle; and so they sent for some ayde to the great bayleye of Vermandoys, and he sent to them the vydam of Chalons, the lorde Beaumont, the lorde de la Bove, the lorde of Lore, and dyvers other, to the nombre of CCC. men of armes; and so they repayed the towne in certayne places, and determyned to abyde the Heynowes, and to defende the towne, the which was a gret towne and full of drapery. The Heynowes cam on a Fridaye, and lodged nere to Aubenton, and advyseyd the towne, to se on what quarter it were moost best to be taken; and in the mornynge, they aproched in thre wardenes, their baners before them, right orlynatly, and also their cros bowes. The erle of Heynalt ledde the first batayle, and with hym great nombre of the knyghtes, and squiers, of his countrey; his uncle, sir John of Heynalt, had the seconde batayle, wher
SYR JOHN FROISSART

as he had plenty of men a warr; the thyrde had the lorde Faulquemont, with a good nombre of Almaynes. And so thus Howe therie
every lorde was under his owne baner; and there beganne
a sore assaut, and the bowes began to shote both within
and without, wherby dyvers were sore hurt: therle and his
company came to the gate, ther was a great assaut, and a
sore skirmyshe; ther the Vydame of Calons dyd marveylies,
and he made at the gate thre of his sonnes knyghtes. But
finally, therle and his company conquered the baylies, and
byforce made their enemys to withdrawe into the gate.
And also at the gate towards Symay, was sir John la Bove,
and sir John Beamont; ther was also a cruell assaut; they
with in wer fayne to withdrawe in at their gates, and to
leave the barrers, and the Heynows wane it, and the brige
also. Ther was a sore assaut, for suche as were fleede and
entred within, went up on the gate, and cast downe barres
of yron, stones, pottes full of quycke lyme, wherby many
were sore hurt. A squier of Henalt receyved suche a stroke
with a stone, on his targe, that it was clovyn cleane a sonder
with the stroke, and his arme broken, so that it was long
after or he was hole. The Saturday in the mornynge, ther
was a great assaut, and they within dyd their dever to
defende themselve; but finally, the towne was wonne byforce,
and their pales and defences broken. And first entred into
the towne, sir John of Heynalt with his baner, with great
cryeng and showyng; than the Vydame of Chalons with-
drewre hym and his company into the place before the
mynster, and there made semblant to defende hymselfe as
long as he myght endure. But the lorde of Bremus de-
parted without order, for he knewe well that sir John of
Heynalt was sore displeased with him, so that he thought if
he had ben taken, that no raunsome shulde have saved his
lyfe. And whan sir John of Heynalt knewe that he was
departed, that had done so moche displeasure in his lande
of Symay, he pursued after hym: but the lorde of Bremus
fledde fast, and founde the gate of his towne opyn, and so
entred in, and syr Johanne of Heynault pursued hym justete to
the gate, with his swerde in his hande; but whanne he sawe
that he was escaped, he retourned agayne to Aubenton;
and his men mette certayn of the lorde Bremus men as
Ferrina.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XLV

they followed their maister, and ther they were slayne without mercy. The erle and his company fought sore with them that were by the mynster, and ther the Vydam of Chalons dyd marweys in armes, and so dyd two of his sonnes: but finally they wer all slayn; there scaped none, but suche as fledde with the lorde of Bremus, but all were slayne or taken, and a ii. M. men of the towne, and all the towne robbed and pyllled, and all the goodes sent to Symay, and the towne brent. And after the burnyng of Aubenton, the Heynowe went to Mauber Fountaynes: and inconty- nent they wan it, and robbed and brent the towne, and also the towne of Daubecueyll, and Segny the great, and Segny the lytell, and all the hamelettes ther about, the which were mo than xl. Than the erle went to Mouns, and gave leave to his men of warre to depart, and thanked them in such wyse, that they were all well content. Than anone after, therle went to make a sure alyance with the kyng of England, to be the more stronger in his warre agaynst the Frenchmen. But first he made his uncle sir John of Heynault chefe maister and governour of Holande and Zelande: and sir John lay styl at Mons, and provyded for the contrey, and sent to Valencennes, to confort and ayde them, the lorde Antoyng, the lorde of Vergny, the lord of Gomegynes, and sir Henry of Huspharyce; and the stewarde of Heynault, with a hundred speares, to the towne of Landrechyys; and to Bouhayne, thre brethren, Almayns, called Courrrars; and to Escaudyme, sir Gararde Sasses- gynes; and into the towne of Davesynes, the lord of Falquemount. And thus he dyde into every fortresse on the fronters of Fraunce.

CAP. XLVI

Howe they of Tourney made a journey into Flaunders.

WHAN the Frenche kyng knewe howe the Haynowes had brest the contrey of Thyerache, taken and slayne his knyghtes, and distroyed the good towne of Aubenton, than he commaundd the duke of
Syr John Froissart

Normandy, his sonne, that he shulde make a journey into
Heynalt, and bring the countrey into that case, that it
shuld never be recovered agayne. Also the kyng ordainèd
therle of Layll Gastone, who was as than with the kyng at
Parys, that he shulde make a voyage into Gascouyne, as his
lyuentenent, and to make warre to Burdeux, and to Bor-
deloyes, and to all the fortressees that helde of the kyng of
Englande. And also the Frenche kyng enforced his great
navy that he had on the see, and commaundèd them to
kepe the bondes of Flanders, and nat to suffre the kyng of
Englande to passe over the see into Flanders, on payne of
their lyves. And whan the Frenche kyng understode that
the Flemynynges had made homage to the kyng of Engландe,
he sent unto them a prelèt under the colour of the pope;
shewyng them, that yt they wolde retourne and knowledge
themselves to holde of hym, and of the crowne of Fraunce,
and to forsee the kyng of Engランドe, who had enchaunted
them, than he sayd he wolde pardon them of all their
trespaces, and wolde quyte them of the gret somme of
money that they wer bound unto hym by oblygacion of
olede tyme, and also to gyve them many payre franchysees.
And the Flemynynges answered, howe they thought them
selfe right well assoyled and quyted in any thyng that
they were bounde to the kyng of Fraunce. Than the
Frenche kyng complayned to pope Clement the vi. wherupon
the pope dyd cast suche a sentence of cursyng, that no
preest durst syng or say ther any divyne servyce; wherof
the Flemynynges sent a great complaynt unto the kyng of
Engランドe, who to apeease them sent them worde that whan
he came over the see he wolde bring preestes out of his
contrey to syng masses, whyther the pope wolde or nat, for
he sayd he had privylege so to do; and so by that meanes
the Flemynynges were somewhat apeeased. And whan the
Frenche kyng sawe that he coude nat tourne the Flemynynges
fro their opynion, than he commaundèd them of the garysons
of Tourny, Lysle, and Doway, and other, to make warre
on the Flemynynges, and to overconme the contrey. And so
sir John du Roy, and syr Mathue de Trye, marshall of
Fraunce, and sir Godmar du Fay, and dyvers other lordees,
made an army of M. men of armes, and CCC. crosbowes,
THE CRONYCLE OF

what of Turney, Lyale, and Doway. And so in an evenyng
thei departed fro Turney, and by that it was day in the
mornyng, they were before Courtray. By that tyme the son
was up, they had gathered togyther all the catell ther
about; and some of them ran to the gates, and slewe and
hurt dyvers that they founde without; and thane they
retoured without any domage, and drove before them al
their prays, so that when they came to Turney, they had
mo than x. M. shepe, and as many swyne, beaes, and kyen,
wherof the Flemynge were sore troubled. Than Jaques
Dartvell sware that it shulde be derely revenged, and in-
contynent he commaunded the good townes of Flandres,
that their men a warr shulde be with hym before Turney, at
a day assigned; and he wrote to therle of Salysbury, and to
therle of Suffolke, who wer at Ipre, that they shulde be ther
at the same. And so agaynst the day lymitted, he went
out of Gaunt, and came to a place bytwene Andwarp¹ and
Turney, called le Pount de Sere,² and there he lodged and
taryd for therles of England, and for them of Franke and
of Bruges. The sayd two erles thought for their honour,
that the enterprise shulde nat be delayed by them, and so
sent to Jaques Dartvell, promysing hym nat to fayle, to be
at the day apoynted. And so on a day they departed from
Ipre, with a l. speares, and a fortie crosbowes, and went
toward the place where as Jaques Dartvell abode for them.
And as they passed by the towne of Lyle, they were per-
cyved, and they of the towne yssue out with a xv. C. men
a foote and a horsbacke, and went in iii. partes, to thentent
that therles shulde nat scape them. So these two erles rode
forth by the gyding of sir Vauflart de la Crox, who had kep
long warr agaynst them of Lyle, and he knewe all the
wayes of the contrey, and as than was at Ipre; and so he came
forthe with these erles to be ther gyde, and he had well
gyded them. And they of Lyle had nuely made a great
dyke, wher as there was never none before, and whan sir
Vauflart hadde brought them thyder, and sawe howe the
way was nuely stopped, he sayd to therles of Engelnde, Sirs,
I se well we can nat passe without the danger of them of
Lyle; wherfore I counsell, let us turne agayne and take
some other way. Than the lorde sayde, Nay sir Vauflart, it

¹ by mistake for
² Pont de Fer

1339
Syr John Froissart

shall never be sayd that we woll go out of our way, for feare of them of Lysle; therfore ryde on byfore, we have promysed Jaques Dartvell to be with hym this day; and so thenglyshmen rode forth without feare. Than sir Vauffart sayd, Sirs, ye have taken me in this vyage to be your gyder, and I have ben with you all this wynter in Ipre, wherof I am moch bounde to you; but if they of Lyle yssue out upon us, have no trust that I wyll abyde them, for I wyll save myselfe assone as I can, for if I wer taken it shulde cost me my lyfe, the which I love better than your company. Than the lorde dyd laugh at hym, and sayd, Well, and ye it be so, we holde you well excused. And as he ymagined, so it be fell: for or they wer ware, they were in danger of the Frenche bussheym, who cryed Stoppe sirs, for ye shall nat passe this way without our lycence, and so began to shote and to ronne on the Englyshmen. And assone as syr Vauffart sawe the maner, he had no lyst to ryde any farther, but retournd assone as he myght, and gate hymselfe out of the preece; and the ii. erles fell in the handes of their enemmes, lyke fysshes in a nette, for they were closed rounde about in a narowe strayet passage, among hedges, busshes, and dykes, so that they coude scape no maner of way, forwarde nor backewarde. So whan they sawe that they wer so hardly bestad, they alghted a fote, and defended themselfe as well as they myght, and dyd hurt dyvers of them of Lysle; but finally, their defence coude nat avayle them, for ever newe freshe men of warre came on them. So ther they wer taken byforce, and with them a yong squyer of Lymostyne, nephe to pope Clement, called Remon, who after that he was yelded prisoner, was slayne for covetyse of his fayre harness and freshe appareyle. These two erles were set in prison in the hall of Lysle, and after sent to the Frenche kyng, who promysed to them of Lysle a great rewarde, for the good servyce that they had done hym. And whane Jaques Dartvell, who was at Pont de Ferre, kneue those tidynge, he was sore dyspleased, and so seased his enterprise for that tyme, and retournd agayne to Gaunt.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. XLVII

Of the journey that duke John of Normandy made into Heynault.

DUKE JOHN of Normandy, eldyst sonne to the French kyng, made his assemble to be at saynt Quyntines; and with hym was the duke of Athenes, therle of Flaunders, the erle of Aucerr, the erle of Ewe and constable of Fraunce, therle of Porcyen, therle of Roussy, therle of Bresne, therle of de graunt Pre, the lorde Coucy, the lorde Craon, and dyvers other nobles of Normandy, and of the lowe marches. And whan they were all assembled, anon after Easter, the yere of our lorde M.CCC.xl. the constables and the two marshals nombred their company to be a vi. thousand men of armes, and viii. M. of other folowyng the hoost; and so they went forthe into the feldes, and went towarde the castell of Cambresis, and passed by Bohayn, and rode tyll they passed the sayd castell in Cambresis, and lodged in the towne of Montays, on the ryver of Sels: and sir Rycharde of Verchyn, stewart of Henalt, knewe by his spyes, how the duke of Normandy was at Montays. Than he desyred certayne knightes and squyers, suche as wer nere about hym, to go with hym thyder as he wolde bringe them, and they graunted hym so to do; and so departed for his house at Verchyn, and with hym a lx. speares, and rode forthe fro the sonne settyng, tyll he came to a forest in the yssuyng out of Heynalt, a lytell leage fro Montays, and by that tyme it was night. Than he rested hym in a feld, and sayde to his company, howe he wolde go and awake the duke at Montays, wherof they were right joyouse, and sayd, howe they wolde adventure with hym to lyve and dye: he thanked them: and with hym there was sry Jaques de Sart, sir Henry of Phalyse,1 sir Olpharte du Guystelles, sir John du Chastellet, and sir Bertrande; and of squyers, there was Gyles and Thyerry of Sommayne, Baudwyn of Beaufort, Colebrier of Brule, Moreau of Lescuyer, Sawdart de Stramen, Johann of Robersat, Bridouf de Thyalx, and dyverse other; they rode prively

1 Houffaliz.
and came to Montays, and entred into the towne. The CAP. XLVII
Frenchmen had made no watche, and so the stewarte and all Of the
his company alightted before a fayre great lodgyng, wenying journe that
to theym that the duke had lodg'd ther, but he was in
another house; but ther were loged ii. great lorde of Nor-
mandy, the lorde of Bayleuill, and the lorde of Beauite,1 and
they were quickly assayled, and the gate broken openne;
When they hard the cry of Heynalt, they were abashéd,
and defended themselfe as well as they might, and ther the
lorde of Bayleuill was slayn, and the lorde of Beauit taken,
and was fayne to promysse the seneshall, on his fayth and
trouth, to yelde hymselfe prisoner, within three days after
at Valencenz. Than the Frenchmen began to stir in the
towne, and came out of their logynges, and made fiers,
and lighted up torches and candels, and eche of them rayesd up
other, and awoke the duke, who rose and armed hym in
hast, and displayed his baner before his logyng, and every
man drue thyder. Then the Heynoues2 withdrue abacke
sagely to their horses and mounted, and when they wer all
togyder, they had x. or xii. good prisoners, and so returned
without any damage, for they wer nat pursued it was so
darke; and so they came by that it was day to Quesnoy,
and there they rested them, and than rode to Valencenz.
In the mornynge the duke commanded to dysloge, and to
entre into Heynalt, and to bren the contrey without mercy.
So the fore ryders went forthe, a ii. C. speares, and captayns
of them were sir Thylbalt of Marueyle, the Galoys of
the Beaume, the lorde of Myrypois, the lorde of Rayneval, the
lorde of Sempy, the lorde John of Landas, the lorde of
Hange, and the lorde of Tramel; and after them rode
the two marshals, with fyve C. spere, and than the duke
with other lorde and knyghtes. And so the fore ryders
burnt Forestbertran,3 Bertynquinell,4 Escarmayn, Vendege5
in the wod, Vendege on the sandes, upon the ryver of
Cynell; 4 and the next day they went forwarde, and brent
Osmelain,7 Vyler, Gommegynes, Marchepoys,8 Pestell,8
Anfroy, Frypreux,9 Fresnoy, Obeys, the good towne of
Bannoy,10 and all the contrey to the ryver of Hommell;12 and
the same second day, the marshals company made a gret
assaut and skirmyshe, at the castell of Verchynye, but they 13
THE CRONYCLE OF

wan nothyng ther, it was so well defended. Than they went
and lodged by the ryver of Selz, 1 bywene Ausey and Sansoy,
and sir Valeron, lorde of Falquemont, was captayne of the
towne of Maubeuge, and with hym a C. speares of Almayns
and Heynowes; and whane he knewe that the Frenchmen
rode and brent the contrey, and sawe howe the poore peple
wemp, he armed hym and his company, and left the towne
in the kepyng of the lorde of Beau Revoyr, and the lord
Montigny, and he sayd he wolde gladly fynde the French-
men; and so he rode all that day, coostyng the forest of
Morivall; 2 and agaynst nyght he harde howe the duke of
Normandy was loged by the ryver of Sels: than he sayd he
wolde go and awake them. And so he rode forthe, and about
myndight he passed the ryver by a gyde, and whan he was
over, he made hym and his company redy, and so rode fayre
and easely tyl he came to the dukes logyng, and whan they
were nere, they spurred their horses, and dasshed into thooth,
and cryed Falquemont, and cut downe tente, and pavilions,
and slewe dyvers men and dyd great hurt. Than the hoost
began to sterre and armed them, and drewe to that part
where as the noyse was, and the lorde of Falquemont whan
he sawe it was tymes, he drue abacke; and of the Frenchmen
ther were slayne, the lorde of Pyquegy, and taken prisoners,
the vycont of Quesnes and the Borgne of Rouvory, and sore
hurt, sir Antony of Coudune. And whan the lorde Falque-
mont thought best, he departed and all his company, and
passed the ryver of Sels without damage, for they wer nat
folowed; and so by the sonne risyng they came to Quessnoy,
where as sir Thyerie of Vallecourt opyned to them the gate.
The next day after this dede, the duke of Normandy caused
his trumpettes to be blown, and so passed the ryver of
Sels, and entred into Heynalt. And suche as rode before,
as the marshall of Mirpoys, the lord of Noysiers, the Galloys
of the Baulme, and sir Thybal of Maruyle, and iii. C.
speares, bysyde the brigantes, came before Quessnoy to the
bariers, and made semblant to gyve assaut, but they within
were so well provyded with good men of warre and artillery,
that they shulde have lost their payne. Howbeit they made
a lytell skirmyash before the bayles, but at last they were
fayne to withdrawe, for they of Quessnoy dyscharged certayne
SYR JOHN FROISSART

pieces of artillery, and shotte out great quarels, wherof the CAP. XLVII
Frenchmen were afrayd for sleying of their horses, and so of the
withdrue backe. And in their goyng, they brent Vergyn the
jouney that duke John
great, and Vergyn the lytell, Frelanes, Samuers,2 Artes,
Semeries, Artuell, Saryten, Turgies,4 Estynen,5 Aulnoy, and
dyvers other, so that the smoke came to Valencennes; and
than the Frenchmen ordained their batels on the mount
of Casters, nere to Valencennes. And certayne of them, as
the lorde of Cazon, the lorde of Mauluryer, the lorde of
Mathelon, the lorde of Davoyr, and a two C. speares with
them, rode towards Mayng, and came and assayed a great
towe, partering to John Vernyer of Valencens, and after
warde it was parteyning to John Nevell.6 Ther was a great
and a fierce assaut, endurynge nygh all day, so that of the
Frenchmen, or they departed, were slayne a v. or vi. but they
within defended themselfe so well, that they took no damage.
Then some of the Frenchmen went to Try, wenying at their
first commyng to have past the water;7 but they of the
towne had broken the bridge, and defended the passage,
so that the Frenchmen coude never have won it that way.
Thanne ther were some among them that knewe the passages
and the contrey, and so they brought a two C. men afofe,
and passed the plankes at Ponny,8 and assone as they were
over they came on them of Try, who were but a small
nombre, and coude nat endure agaynst them, and so they
fledde, and dyvers were slayne and hurt. The same day the
seneshall of Heynalt was departed out of Valencens, with a
C. men of armes, to socour them of Try; and a lytell fro
saynt Wast, they met with a xxv. curroures of the French-
men, and the lorde Boucyqualt, who was after marshall
of France, and the lorde of Surgeres, and sir Wylyam Blandeau
was their captayns, and they had passed the bridge by
Valencennes, called the bridge de la Tourell. And whan the
seneshall of Heynalt sawe them, he ranne out at them and
bare downe with his speare the lorde Boucyqualt and toke
hym prisoner, and sent hym to Valencens: the lorde of
Surgeres scaped, but syr Wylyam Blandeau was taken by
sir Henry Duysphalyse; and all the other wer taken and
slayne, but a fewe that scaped; and so than the seneshal
went towards Try: but he came to late, for the Frenchmen

1 Warny. 2 Sansara. 3 Saultain. 4 Curges. 5 Estreuc. 6 Newesville. 7 The Scheldt. 8 Frosey.
had wonne it or he came, and were beastynge downe of the
mylles, and of a lytell castell that was ther: but when
the seneshall came they had no leser, for they wer put abacke,
slayne, and put to flight, and chased so nere that many lept
into the ryver of Lescalt, and some drowned. So thus the
towne of Try was delyverd, and than the seneshall went
and passed the ryver of Lescalt, at Denayng, and than he
and all his company rode to his castell of Verchyn, and entred
into it, to kepe and defende it, yf nede were.

All this season the duke of Normandy was on the mount
of Casters nygh all day, thinkynge ever that they of Valen-
cennes wolde have yssued out, to have fought with hym.
And so they wolde fayne have done, and sir Henry Dantoynge,
who had rule of the towne, had nat ben: for he wolde suffre
no man to yssue out; and he was at the gate Cambresen,
and had moch ado to kepe the peple within, and the provost
of the towne with him, who with fayre wordes, and great
reasons, apeesed the peple. And whan the duke sawe that
they wolde nat yssue out to gyve hym batayle, than he sent
to the duke of Athenes, and the marshals of Fraunce, therle
of Auchere, and the lorde of Chastelon, with a thre hundred
speares, to rynne to Valencens. And so they rode in good
order, and came to the bayls on the syde of Tourell, but
they taryed nat there long, they feared so the shot, for
selynge of their horses; howbeit, the lorde of Chastelon rode
so forwarde, that his horse fell under hym, so that he
was fayne to leape on another; than they retourned by
the marches, and brent and bete downe the mylles on the
ryver of Vyncell, and so came by Chartreux, and than to
their hoost agayne. Ther were some of the Frenchmen that
taryed behynde, at Marley, to gette forage more at their
ease; and such as kept a towre therby partyning to the
heyres of Heynault, and somtyme it was belonging to sir
Robert de Namur, by the right of the lady Isabell his wyfe,
whan they parceyved these frenchemen that werf behynde
their hoost, and howe that thoost was farre of fro them,
they yssued out and set on them, and slewe many, and toke
all their pillage, and entred agayn to their toure. All this
season, yet the great batayle was styll on the mount of
Castres, and whan the currers came in on every syde, than
they toke counsayle what they shulde do. The lordes sayd, CAP. XLVII
how they were no nombre suffycient to assault such a towne as Of the
Valencennes, and finally, they determynd to go to Cambray: journei that
and so that nyght they went and lodged at Monyng, and dukes John
at Fountenelles, and made good watche. The next mormonyng
made into
they departed, and as they went, brent Monyng and Fount-
neles, and the abbay parteyng to the lady of Valoys,
suster germaine to the Frenche kynge: wherof the duke was
sore displeased, and caused them to be hanged that beganne
the fyre. And than at their departhyng they brent the towne
of Try, and the castell, and beate downe the mylles, and
brent Prony, Romminy, Thyaux, Mouceaulx, and all the
playne contrey bytwene Cambray and Valencennes; and
than the duke came to Escandure, to a castell parteyn-
ynge to the erle of Heynault, standing strongly on the
ryver of Lescault, the whiche garyson hadde gryved sore
the towne of Cambray, and captyayne therof was sir Gararde
of Sassegynes. And when the duke had ben before that
castell a six dayes, it was gyven up, wherof all the countrye
hadde great marveyle, and had great suspicyt of treason to
the captayne, sir Gararde, and to a squyer of his, called
Robert Marmeaulx; and after they bothe dyed shamefully
at Mons in Heynault. And they of Cambray bete downe
the castell, and bare all the stones into their towne to
make reparacyons withall.

CAP. XLVIII
Howe they of Doway made a journey into
Ostrenan, and howe therle of Heynault was
in England.

After the dystryction of Escandure, the duke of
Normandy went to Cambray, and gave leave to
some of his company to depart, and some he sent
to the garysons of Doway, and other. And the first weke
that they came to Doway, they issued out, and they of
Lysle with them, so that they were a thre hundred speares,
and their captyaynes were sir Loyes of Savoy, therle of
Geneve, therle of Vyllars, the Galoys of the Baulme, the
THE CRONYCLE OF

lorde of Waurayne, the lorde of Vasyers: and so they went and bren the fyre contrey of Ostrenan in Heynault, and left nothynge without the fortresses, wherwith they of Bouhayn were sore dyspleased, for they sawe the fyers and smokes, and coude nat remedy it; and soo they sent to them to Valencennes, that if they wolde yssue out a sixe hundred spers in the night, the shuld do moche damage to the Frenchmen, who were spredde abrode in the playne country; howe be it, they of Valencennes wolde natte go out of the towe. So the Frenchmen had great pry, and bren the towne of Nyche, Descoux, Escaudan, Here, Monteny, Senayne, Verlayne, Vargny, Ambreycourt, Lourg, Salx, Ruette, Newfuylle, Lyeu saynt Amande, and all the vyllages in that contrey, and wan great pyllage. And whan they of Doway were gone home, than the soudyers of Bohayne yssued out and bren the halfe of Descoux, whiche was Frenche, and all the vyllages perteyning to France, juste to the gates of Doway, and the towne of Desquerchyn. Thus as I have devysed, the garysons in those countreys were provyded for, and dyverse skirmysshes and feastes of warre used amonge them. The same tyme there was certayne soudyers of Almaygne sette by the bysshoppes of Cambrey in the fortresse of Male Mayson, a two leages fro the castell Cambresien, and marchyng on the other parte nere to Landreich, wherof the lorde of Poytrel was captayne; for therle of Bloys, though he wer lorde therof, yet he had renderd it to therle of Heynalt, bycause he was as than Frenche. So on a day the Almayns of Male Mayson came to the bayles of Landreich, and drove away a gret pry; and whan they of Landreich knewe therof, the lorde of Poytrel armed him and all his company, and yssued out to rescue the pry: the lorde of Poytrel was formast hymselfe, and layd his spere in the rest, and cryed to the Frenchmen, and sayd, Sirs, it is shame to fye away. And there was a squyer called Albert of Colayne; he turned and couchd the spere in the rest, and came rennyng agaynst the lorde of Poytrel, and gave hym suche a stroke on the targe, that the spere fiewe all to peace; yet the sayd squyer stroke hym agayn suche a stroke, that the spere entred through his harnes, and into
SYR JOHN FROISSART

his body, just to the hert, so that he fell fro his horse deed. Than his companyons, Heynous, as the lorde of Bansiers, Garard de Mastyn, and John of Mastyn, and other, pursued the Frenchmen in suche wyse, that they were taken and slayne the moost part, but fewe that scape, and their pray rescued, and suche prisoners as they had of Landreches, and so returned agayne with the lorde of Poytrels deed; after whose deshe, the lorde of Floron1 was long tyme captayne of Landreches, and of the castell ther. Thus some day rode forthe the Frenchmen, and some day the Heynous, and dyvers encontrynges was bytwene them. Thus the country of Heynault was in great trybulacion, for parte therof was brent; and the duke of Normandy was styl on the fronters, and no man knewe what he wolde do, and they coulde here no tidynge of therle of Heynalt; true it was, he was in Engelande, wher as the kyng and the lorde made hym great chere, and made great alyance with the kyng there; and so departed out of Engelande, and went to themerour Loys of Bayyer: and so these were the causes why that he taryd so long out of his owne country. And also sir Johanne of Heynalt was gone into Brabant, and into Flandres, and shewed to the erle of Brabant, and to Jaques Dartell, the desolacyon of the country of Heynalt, prayeng them in the name of all the Heynowes, that they wold gyve them some counsell and aye; and they answered, that they were sure that therle wolde shortly returne, at which tyme they sayd, they wolde be redy to go with hym wherther as he wolde.

CAP. XLIX

Howe the duke of Normandy layed siege to Thyne Levesque.

IN the mean season that the duke of Normandy was at Cambray, the bysshoppe and the burgesses of the towne shewed the duke how the Heynowes had get by stelth the strong castell of Thyne, desyeng hym for the common profet of the contrey that he wolde fynde some remedy, for the grayson ther dyd moche hurt to their contrey. Than the duke called agayne toguyder men of
warre out of Artosye and Vermandoys, and so departed from Cambry, and came before thyne, on the ryver of Lescal, in the fayre playne medowes toward Ostrenan.\footnote{Ostrenan.}

The duke caried with hym out of Cambry and Doway, dyverse great engynes, and specially vi. and made them to be reared agayne the fortres, so these engynes dyd cast night and day great stones, the which bete downe the roffes of the chambers, halles, and towres, so that they within were fayne to kepe vauets and sellars. Thus they within suffred great payne, and captayns within wer sir Rycharde Lymosyn, Englyshe, and two squyers of Heynault, bretherne to therle of Namur, Johanne and Thyerry; these thre that had the charge, sayd often tyme to their company, Sirs, surely one of these dayes therle of Heynault wyl come agaynst these Frenchmen, and delvyer us with honour, and ryd us out of this paryll, and shal can us great thanke, that we have kept this fortres so longe. The ingens without dyd cast in deed horses, and beeastes stynking, wherby they within had great[er] dystres thane with any other thynge, for the ayre was hote as in the myddes of somer: the stynke and ayre was so abomynable, that they consydered howe that finally they coude nat longe endure. Than they toke advyse to desire a truse for xv. dayes, and in that space to sende and adertyse syr John of Heynalt, who was ruler of the contrye in therles absence, and without that he dyde socour them in that space, to yelde up the fortres to the duke. This treaty was put forth and agreed unto. Than they within sent a squyer, called Estrelart de Sommanye, to sir John of Heynalt: and at Mons in Heynalt the squyer founde hym, who had nuely harde fro his nephue therle, howe that he was commyng homwarde into his countrye, and hadde been with themperour, and made great alyance with hym, and with the kyng of Englynde, and with the other lordes of thempyre; all this sir John of Henault shewed to this squyer, sendyng worde to them of Thyne, that shortly they shulde be conforted at the returme of his nephue therle. This truse duryng, therle of Heynalt returned home, wherof all his peple wer gretyly rejoysed. Than the lorde Beamonde his uncle, shewed hym all maters that was done syth his departyn, and howe that the duke
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of Normandy had layne on the frontiers, and brent and CAP. XLIX
destroyed a great part of his countrey; there answered, Howe the
dowe it shulde be well amended, sayng, Howe the realme duke of
Normandy was great enowgh to make satisfaction of all
forfeturs by them done: and deternyned brefelye, to go
and ayde his men at Thyne, who had so honorably defended
their fortesse. Then the erle sent for men into Almayne,
into Flanders, and in his owne contrey, and so came to
Valencennes, and daylie his nombre encreased, and departed
thens in great aray, with caryages, tentes, and pavilions,
and went and lodged at Nans, on the playne along by the 1 Nave.
ryver of Lescalt. Ther were lorde of Heynalt, sir John
of Heynalt, the lorde of Denglyn, the lord of Verchyn, the
senehall of Heynalt, the lorde Dantoyng, the lorde of
Barbenson, the lorde of Lense, sir Wyllyam of Baylleull,
the lorde of Havereth chatelayne of Mons, the lorde of
Montegny, the lord of Barbays, sir Thyrrie of Valecourt,
marshall of Henalt, the lorde of Dalmed, and of Gomegne,
the lorde of Brefiuell, the lorde of Roysine, the lorde of
Trasegms, the lorde de Lalayne, the lorde of Mastyne,
the lorde of Sars, the lorde Vargny, the lorde of Beauryeu,
and dyverse other, who were all ther to serve therle their
lorde: also thyder came therle of Namur, with ii. hundred
speares, and after came the duke of Brabant, with vi.
hundred speres, the duke of Guerles, therle of Mons, the
lorde of Falquemont, sir Arnold Baquechen, and dyverse
other lorde, and men a warre of Almaygne and Whye-
thall; and so all these loged along by the ryver of Lescalt. 2 Westphalia.
agaynst the Frenche hoost, and plentie of vytails came to
them out of Heynalt. And whane these lorde were thus
lodged bytwene Nauns and Illoys, the duke of Normandy,
who was on the other part with a goodly nombre of men a
warre, he sende worde to his father, howe that therls hoost
dayly encreased. Than the Frenche kyng, beyng at Feron,
raysed up mo men of warre, and sende to his soune a xii.
hundred speares; and so hymselfe came to his sonnes hoost
lyke a noodyer, for he myght nat come with an arny upon
themperour, without he shulde breke his othe as he dyde.
So the duke of Normandy was named to be cheife of that
army, but he dyd nothyng but by the counsayle of the
THE CRONYCLE OF

kyng, his father. Whan they within Thyne sawe therle of Heynalt of suche puysance, they were right joyeous; and the fourth day after that the erle was come thyder, they of Valencennes came thyder in great aray, and John de Boyssey, provost of the towne, was their captyayne. Than ther was a skimyshe made agaynst the Frenchmen, and dyvers hurt on bothe parties: and in the meane season, they within the fortres had bottes and barges redy, and so paste over the ryver of Lescault, and were brought to the erle of Heynalt, who joyously and honourably recyeyd them. In this tyme that these two hostes were lodged on the ryver of Lescault, the Frenchmen towarde Fraunce, and the Heynowes towarde their owne contreis, their forages rode forthe, but they met nat, bycause the ryver was ever bytwene them; but the Frenchmen went and brent the contrye of Ostrenan, that was nat brent before; and the Heynowes in likewyse the contrye of Cambreses. Also to the ayde of therle of Heynault, at the desyre of Jaques Dartvell, came thytther a lx. thousande Flemynge, well armed. Than therle of Heynalt sent to the duke of Normandy, by his haraldes, that ther might be batell bytwene them, and howe that it shulde be a great shame, so many men of warre assembled togyder, and no batayle. The duke answered, howe he wolde take advyse and counsell in that mater, the which counsell was so long, that the haraldes departed without answere. Than the third day after, therle sent agayne to knowe the dukes intencyon, and the duke answered, howe he was nat yet fully counselled to fight, nor to assigne a day of batayle; sayng moreover, how that therle was very hasty: whan the erle harde that, he thought that it was but a delay. Than he sent for all the gret lordes of his hoost, shewyng them what he had done, and what answere the duke had made hym: desyryng them to have their counsell; than every man loket on other, and no man wold speke first. At last the duke of Brabant spake for all, and sayd, as to make a bridge, and go over to fight with the Frenchman, is nat myne opynion, for I knowe certaynly, that shortly the kyng of Engelande wyll come over the see and lay sege to Turney, and we all have sworne to ayd and confort hym in all that we canne: wherfore if we
Syr John Froissart

Shulde nowe fyght with the Frenchmen, and fortune to be agayne us, that we happe to lese the felde, he shulde lose his vyage, and all the helpe that he shulde have of us: and if we had the vyctorie he shulde can us no thanke: wherfore my intencyon is, that without hym, who is chefe of this warre, that we fyght nat with the power of Fraunce; but when we shal be before Turney with hym, and the Frenche kynge agaynst us, I thinke it wyll be harde to depart without batell; wherfore I wolde counsell let us depart, for here we lye at great coost and charge, for I am sure within these x. dayes, we shall here fro the kynge of Englande. To this advyce the moost part of the lordes agreed, but therle of Heynault desyred them all in generaall nat to depart so sone: and so they agreed to tary somewhat lenger; they of Brussels wolde fayne have ben gone, and they of Lovane. On a day, therle called to hym sir John of Heynault his uncle, and sayd, Fayre uncle, I pray you rynye downe along by the ryver syde, and call over the ryver to speke with some persone of the French hoost, and desyre hym to shewe the Frenche kynge fro me, that I wyll make a brydge over the water, so that I may have thre dayes respyte, and than I wolle come over and gyve hym batell. Than the lorde Beamond rode downe along by the ryver of Lescalt, and a xiii. knyghtes with hym, and his penon before hym, and at last he parcyved on the other syde a knyght of Normandy, he kneved hym by his armes. Than he called to hym and sayd, Sir Maubousson, I pray you speke with me. Than the knyght sayd, Sir, what wold you with me. I desyre you, quod the lorde Beamonde, that ye wyll go to the Frenche kynge, and to his counsayle, and say how the erle of Heynault hath sende me hyther to take a truse, all onely whyles that he might make a brige over this ryver, wherby he and his myght passe over; I pray you bring me agayne an answere, and I shall tary here tyll ye retoure. Than the lord of Maubousson strake his horse with the spurres, and rode to the kynges tent, where as the duke of Normandy and many other lordes were. Ther he shewed his message, and he had a short answere, for he was commanded to tell hym that sent him thyder, that in the same case as they had helde the erle, in likewyse so they wold contynue;
sayng, how they wold make hym to sell his lande, and that
he shuld have warr on every syde, and when we lyst, we woll
entre into Heynalt so farr that we woll bren all his contrey.
This answere the lorde of Maubusson reported to the lorde
Beaumont, who thanked hym of his labour, and so retourned
to therle, whom he found playng at cheesse with therle of
Namur: and assone as therle sawe his uncle, he arose and
harde the answere, that the Frenche kynge had sent hym,
werewith the erle was dyspleased, and sayd, Well, I trust it
shall nat be as he purposeth.

CAP. L

Of the batell on the see before Sluse in Flaunders
bytwene the kyng of England and the Frenchmen.

OWE let us leave somwhat to speke of therle of
Henalt, and of the duke of Normandy, and speke
of the kyng of England, who was on the see to
the intent to arryve in Flaunders, and so into Heynalt, to
make warr against the Frenchmen. This was on mydso
er in the yer of our lorde M.CCC.xl. all thenglyssah flete
was departed out of the ryver of Tames, and toke the way
to Sluse. And the same tyme bytwene Blanqueberque 1 and
Sluse, on the see, was sir Hewe Kyryell, 2 sir Peter Bahuchet,
and Barbnoyr, and mo than sixscore great vessels, besyde
other; and they wer of Normayns, bydaux, Genowes, and
Pycardes, about the nombre of xl. M.; ther they wer layd by
the French kyng to defend the kyng of Englandes passage.
The kyng of England and his came saylyng tyll he came
before Sluse; and when he sawe so great a nombre of shippes
that their mastes semed to be lyke a gret wood, he de-
maunded of the maister of his shyp what peple he thought
they were. He answered and sayd, Sir, I thynke they be
Normayns layd here by the Frenche kyng, and hath done
gret dyspleasur in Englande, bren your towne of Hampton,
and taken your great shyppe the Christofer. A quoth the
kyng, I have long desyred to fyght with the Frenchmen, and
nowe shall I fyght with some of them, by the grace of God
and saynt George, for truly they have done me so many

1 Blanken-
bergh. 2 Quiéret.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

dysplasures, that I shall be revenged, and I may. Than the
king set all his shyppes in order, the grettest befor, well Of the batell
furnyshed with archers, and ever bytwene two shyppes of
archers he had one shypp with men of armes; and than
he made another batell to ly alofe with archers, to confort
ever them that wer moost very, ye nede were. And ther
were a great nombre of countesses, ladyes, knyghtes wyves,
and other damosels, that were goyng to se the quene at
Gaunt; these ladyes the kyng caused to be well kept with
thre hundred men of armes, and v. C. archers.

Whan the kyng and his marshals had ordered his batayls,
he drewe up the seales, and cam with a quarter wynde, to
have the vauntage of the sonne: and so at last they tourned
a lytell to get the wynde at wyll. And whan the Normyns
sawe them recule backe, they had marvell why they dyde so;
and some sayd, They thynke themselfe nat mete to medyll
with us, wherfore they woll go backe: they sawe well howe
the kyng of England was ther personally, by reason of his
baners. Than they dyd appareyle their flete in order, for
they wer sage and good men of warr on the see, and dyd set
the Christofer, the which they had won the yer before, to be
formast, with many trumpettes and instrumentes, and so set
on their enemies. Ther began a sore batell on bothe
partes; archers and croesbowes began to shote, and men of
armes aproched, and fought hande to hande; and the better
to come to gyder, they had great hokes and grapers of
yon, to cast out of one shyppe into another, and so tyed
them fast to gyder. Ther were many dedes of armes done,
takyng, and rescuyng agayne: and at last, the great
Christofer was first won by thenglyshmen, and all that
were within it taken or slayne. Than ther was great
noyse and crye, and thenglyshmen aproched and fortifi
d the Christofer with archers, and made hym to passe
on byfore to fyght with the Genoweyys. This batayle was
right fierce and terrible: for the batayls on the see ar more
dangerous and fierser, than the batayls by lande; for on the
see ther is no recyling nor flyeng; ther is no remedy but
to fight, and to abyde fortune, and every man to shewe
his prowes. Of a trouthe, sir Hewe Kyriell, and sir
Bahuchet, and Barbe Noyer, were ryght good and expert
men of warre. This batayle endured fro the mornynge till it
was noone, and thenglyssmen endured moche payne, for their
ennemies were foure agaynst one, and all good men on the
sea. Ther the king of England was a nobile knight of his
owne hande, he was in the flouer of his yongth; in lykewise
so was the erle of Derby, Pembroke, Herforde,\(^1\) Hantung-
don, Northampton and Glocetter, sir Reynolde Cobham,
sir Rycharde Stafford, the lorde Percy, sir Water of Manny,
sir Henry of Flanders, sir John Beauchamp, the lorde
Felton, the lorde Brassetton,\(^2\) sir Chandos, the lorde Dela-
warre, the lorde of Mulon, sir Robert Dartmoys called erle
of Rychmont, and dyverse other lordes and knyghtes, who
bare themselvse so valyantly with some socours that they had
of Bruges, and of the countrey there about, that they
obtayned the vctorie. So that the Frenchmen, Normayns,
and other were dysconfetted, slayne, and drownde: there
was nat one that scape, but all were slayne. Whane this
vctorie was atchyved, the kyng all that nyght abode in his
shyppe before Sluse, with great noyse of trumpettes and
other instrumentes. Thyder came to se the kyng, dyvers
of Flanders, suche as had herde of the kynges commyng.
And than the kyng demaunded of the burgesses of Bruges,
howe Jaques Dartvell dyd: they answered, that he was gone
to the erle of Heynault, agaynst the duke of Normandy, with
lx. M. Flemynges. And on the next day, the which was myd-
somer day, the kyng and all his toke lande, and the kyng
on fote went a pylgrimage to our lady of Ardenbourge, and
there herd masse and dyned, and thane toke his horse and
rode to Gaunt, where the queene receyved hym with great
joye; and all his caryage came after, lytell and lytell. Than
the kyng wrote to therle of Heynault, and to theym within
the castell of Thyne, certysien them of his arrayall; and
whan therle knewe therof, and that he had dysconfyted the
army on the see, he dysloged, and gave leave to all the
souldyours to depart; and toke with hym to Valencennes,
all the great lordes, and ther feasted them honourably, and
specially the duke of Brabant, and Jaques Dartvell. And
ther Jaques Dartvell, openly in the market place, in the
presence of all the lordes, and of all such as wold here hym,
declared what right the kyng of Englande had to the crowne
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Of France, and also what puyssaunce the thre countreis were of, Flandres, Heynault, and Brabant, surely joyned in one alyance. And he dyde so by his great wysdome, and plesaunt wordes, that all people that harde hym, prayes hym moche, and sayd howe he had nobly spoken, and by great experyence. And thus he was greatly prayes, and it was sayd, that he was well worthy to governe the countie of Flandres. Than the lorde departed, and promysed to mete agayne within viii. dayes at Gaunt, to se the kyng of England: and so they dyd. And the kyng feasted them honorably, and so dyd the quene, who was as than nuly purifyed of a sonne called John, who was after duke of Lancastre, by his wyfe, daughter to duke Henry of Lanncastre. Than ther was a counsell set to be at Vyllenort, and a day lymitted.

CAP. LI

Howe kyng Robert of Cicyll dyd all that he might to pacyfe the kynges of Fraunce and Englane.

WHAN the French kyng harde howe his army on the see was dysconfyted, he dysloged and drewe to Arras, and gave leave to his men to depart tyll he harde other tidynes: and sent sir Godmar du Fay to Tourney to se that there lacked nothyng. He feared more the Flemynge than any other, and sent the lord of Beujewe to Mortayn to kepe the fronters agaynst Heynalt; and he sent many men of warr to saynt Omers, to Ayre, and to saynt Venaunt, and purveyed suffyciently for all the forteresses frontynge on Flanders. In this season ther rayngde a kyng in Cicyll called Robert, who was reputed to be a great astronomyer, and alwayes he warned the Frenche kyng and his counsell, that in no wyse he shulde fight agaynst the king of Englane: for he sayd, it was gynven the king of Englane to be right fortunate in all his dedes. This kyng Robert wold gladly have sene these two kynges at a good acorde, for he loved so much the crowne of Fraunce, that he was right sore to se the desolacyon therof.
THE CRONYCLE OF

This kyng of Cicyl was at Aygnone with pope Clement, and with the colledge ther, and declared to them the perils that were likely to fall in the realme of France by the warren between the sayd two kynges, desiring them that they wold help to fynde some means to appease them; wher unto the pope and the cardynals answered, howe they wolde gladly intende therto, so that the two kynges wolde here them.

CAP. LII

Of the counsayle that the kyng of Englane and his alyes helde at Vyllenort.

At this counsayle holden at Vyllenort, were these lordes as followeth: the kyng of England, the duke of Brabant, thener of Henalt, syr John his uncle, the duke of Guerles, thener of Jullers, the marques of Faulqueboure, the marques of Musse, thener of Mons, sir Robert Dartois, thener of Falquemont, sir Wylyam of Dunort, thener of Namur, Jaques Dartvell, and many other great lordes, and of every good towne of Flanders, a thre or iii. personages in maner of a counsayle. Ther was agreement made bytwene the thre contres, Flanders, Brabant, and Heynalt, that fro thensforth ech of them shulde ayde and confort other in all cases. And ther they made assurance ech to other, that if any of them had to do with any countrey, thother two shulde gyve ayde; and herafter if any of them shulde be at dyscorde one with another, the thyrde shulde set agreement bytwene them: and if he were nat able so to do, than the mater shulde be put unto the kyng of England, in whose handes this mater was sworne and promysed, and he to agre them. And in confyrmacion of love and amyte, they ordayne a lawe to run throughout those iii. contres, the which was called the lawe of the companyons or alyes. And ther it was determyned that the kyng of Englane shulde remove about Maudelentyde after, and ley siege to Turney, and ther to mete all the sayd lordes and thers, with the powers of all the good townes: and than every man departed to their owne houses, to aparell them in that behalfe.

150
SYR JOHN FROISSERT

CAP. LIII

Howe the kyng of England besieged the cyte of Tourney with great puysance.

The Frenche kyng after the departure of these lordees fro the counsell of Vyllenort, he knewe the most part of their determynacion. Than he sent to Tourney the chefe men of warr of all Fraunce, as therle of Ewe, the yong erie of Guynes, his sonne, constable of Fraunce,1 therle of Poytz,2 and his bretherne, therle Amery1 of Narbon, sir Aymer of Poyters, sir Geffray of Charney, sir Gararde of Mountfacon, the two marshals, sir Robert Bertrand, and sir Mathue de Troy,3 the lorde of Caieux, the seneschall of Poyctou, the lord of Chastelayn, and sir John of Landas, and these had with them valyant knyghtes and squyers. They came to Tourney, and founde there sir Godmar du Fay, who was ther before: than they toke regarde to the provision of the towne, as well to the vytels, as to thartillerye and fortificacion, and they caused to be brought out of the contrey there about, whete, otes, and other provision.

Nowe let us retourne to the kyng of Englane. Whan the tyme aprooched that he and his alyes shuld mete before Tourney, and that the corne beganne to rype, he departed for Gaunt with vii. eres of his contrey, viii. prelates, xxviii. baronettes, ii. C. knyghtes, foure thousande men of armes, and ix. M. archers, besye fotemen. All his boost passed through the towne of Andewarpe,4 and so passed the ryver of Leucal, and lodged before Tourney, at the gate called saynt Martyne, the waye towarde Lysele and Doway. Than anone after came the duke of Brabant with mo than xx. M. men, knyghtes, squyers, and commons, and he lodged at the brige of Aryes, by the ryver of Lescalt, bytwene thabbey of saynt Nycholas, and the gate Valensteinys. Next to hym came therle of Heynault, with a goodly company of his contrey, with many of Holande and Zelande, and he was lodgd bytwene the kyngge and the duke of Brabanct. Than came Jaques Dartuell, with mo than ix. thousande Flemmynges,
THE CRONYCLE OF

besyde them of Ipre, Propingne, Cassell, Bergues, and they were set on the other syde, as ye shall here after. Jaques Dartell lodged at the gate saynt Fountayne; the duke of Gueres, therle of Julliers, the marques of Blanquebourc, the marques of Musse, therle of Mons, therle of Sauynes, the lord of Falquemount, sir Arnold of Baquechen, and all the Almayns, were lodged on the other syde, towarde Heynalt. Thus the cytie of Tourney was envyroned rounde about, and every hoost myght resort eche to other, so that none coulde yssue out without spyeng.

CAP. LIV

Howe therle of Heynalt distroyed the townes of Seclyne and Dorchyes.

THE sige enduring, they without wer well provyded of vytels, and at a metely price; for it came to them fro all partes. On a mornynge the erle of Heynalt, with v. hundred speres, deperte fro the hoost and passed by Lysle, and brent the good towne of Seclyne, and many vyllages there about; and their currous ranne to the subarbes of Lens, in Artoyse. And after that, the erle toke an other way and rode to the towne of Dorchies, the whiche was taken and brent, for it was nat closed. And also they burnt Landas, Lyceill, and dyvers other good townes there about, and over ranne the countrey, and gate great pyllage, and than retourned agayne to the hoost before Turney: also the Flemynge often tymes assayled them of Tourney, and had made shyppes, belfoys, and instrumentes of assault; so that every day lightly there was skyrmyschynge and dyverse hurt of one and other. The Flemynge toke moche payne to trouble them of Tourney: among other assautes, ther was one endured al a day; ther was many feates of armes done, for all the lorde and knygh tes that were in Tournay were therat; for thassaut was made in shyppes and vessels wrought for the same intent, to have broken the baryres and the posterne of the arche: but it was so well defended, that the Flemynge wanne nothing: ther they lost a shypp, with a sixscore men, the which were
SYR JOHN FROISSART
drowned, and at night they withdrew, right sore travelied.
Also this siege enduryng, the soudyours of sauynt Amande
issued out, and came to Hanon, in Heynalt, and burnt the
towne, and violeted the abbey, and dystroyed the mynster,
and carryed away all that they might to sauynt Amande: and
an other tyme the same Frenche soudyours passed the wood
of sauynt Amande, and came to the abbey of Vycongne, and
made a great fyre at the gate, to have burnt it. Whan
thabbot saw what parell his house was in, hastely he toke
his horse, and rode out prively through the wood, and came to
Valencennes, desyryng the provost ther to lend hym a certayne
crosbowes. And whan he had his desyre, he brought them
behynde Rames, and set them in the wood toward the hyghe
waye to Procelet; 1 and ther they shotte agaynst the Geno-
wayes and Frenchmen, beyng before the gate of Vycongne:
and whan they sawe and felt the queares lyght among them
comynge fro the wood, they were afrayed, and retourned as
fast as they myght: and so the abbey was saved.

CAP. LV

How the Scottes wan agayne gret part of Scot-
lande whyle the siege was before Tournay.

NOWE it is to be remembred how sir Wylyam Duglas,
sonne of Wylyam 2 Duglas brother, who dyed in
Spayne, and therle of Patris, 3 therle of Surlant, 4 sir
Robert of Hersey, 5 sir Symonde Fresyell, 6 and Alysander
Ramsay, they were captayns in suche parte of Scottlande as
was left unwonne by thenglyssmen. And they had con-
tynued in the forest of Gedeours 7 the space of vii. yere,
wynter and somer; and as they might they made warre
agaynst thenglyssmen byeng ther in garson. Somtyme
they had good adventure, and somtyme yvell: and whyle
the kyng of Englande was at siege before Tournay, the
French kyng sent men of warr into Scottlande, and they
arryved at sauynt Johannstowe. 8 And they desyred the
Scottes, in the French kyngis name, that they wolde set on
and make such warr in the realme of England, that the kyng
might be fayne to returme home to rescue his owne realme,

1 Pourcelet.
2 James.
3 Earl Patrick,
4 of Dunbar.
5 Sutherland.
6 Brakine.
7 Frazer.
8 Jedworth.
and to leave up the sige at Tourney; and the Frenche kyng
promysed them men and money to ayde them so to. And
so the Scottes departed out of the forest of Gedeours,1 and
passed thorough Scotlansde, and wanne agayne dyverse fort-
resses, and so past the towne of Berwyke and the ryer of
Tyne, and entred into the contrey of Northumberlande, the
which somtyme was a realme. Ther they founde gret plentie
of beeastes, and wasted and brent all the contrey of Durame;
than they retourned by an other way, dystroyeng the countrye.
In this voyage they destroyed more than thre dayes journey
into the realme of Englande, and thane retourned into Scot-
lansde, and conquered agayne all the fortresses that were
holden by the Englysshmen, except the cyte of Berwyke and
thre other castles, the which dyd them great trouble. They
were so stronge, that it wolde have ben harde to have founde
any suche in any countrye; the one was Strumelyn,2 an other
Rosbourg,3 and the third the chyefe of all Scotlansde, Edon-
borowe; the whiche castell standeth on a hygh rokke, that a
man must rest ones or twys or he come to the hyest of the
hyll; and captnay ther was sir Water Lymosen, who before
had so valiantly kept the castell of Thyme agaynst the
Frenchmen. So it was that sir Wylylam Duglas deuyed a
feate, and dyscovered his intencyon to his companyons, to
therle Patria, to sir Robert Fresyll, and to Alysander
Ramsay; and all they agreed togyder. Than they toke a
ii. C. of the wylyde Scottes, and entred into the see, and made
provision of otes, mele, coles, and wood; and so pesably thei
arryved at a port, nere to the castell of Edendorowe. And
in the night they armed theym, and toke a x. or xii. of their
company, suche as they dyd tryst best, and dyde dysgyse
theym in poore torne cotes and hattes, lyke poore men of
the contrey; and charged a xii. small horses with sackes,
some with otes, some with whete mele, and some with coles;
and they de set all their company in a bussheunt, in an
old destroyed abbey therby, nere to the fote of the hyll.
And when the day began to apere, covertly armed as they
were, they went up the hyll with their marchandysye. And
than they were in the mydde way, sir Wylylam Duglas and
sir Symode Fresyll, dysgyse as they were, went a lytell
before, and came to the porter, and sayd Sir, in gret fere
we have brought hyther otes and whetemele; and if ye have any nede therof, we wolle sell it to you gode chepe. Mary, sayd the porter, and we have nede therof; but it is so erly, that I darre nat awake the captayne nor his stuard; but let them come in, and I shall opyn the utter gate: and so they all entred into the gate of the bayles; Sir Wylyam Duglas sawe well how the porter had the keys in his handes of the great gate of the castell.

Than whan the firste gate was opynned, as ye have harde, their horses with caryages entred in; and the two that came last, laden with coles, they made them to fall downe on the groomsyll of the gate, to thentent that the gate shulde nat be closed agayne. And than they toke the porter, and swepe hym so pesably that he nevyr spake warde. Than they toke the great keys, and opynned the castell gate; than sir Wylyam Duglas blewe a horne, and dyd cast away their torne cotes, and layed all the other sacces overthwarde the gate, to thentent that it shulde nat be shyte agayne. And whan they of the busschement harde the horne, in all hast they might they mounted the hyll. Than the watchman of the castell, with noyse of the horne, awoke, and sawe how the peple wer commyng all armed to the castell warde. Than he blewe his horne, and cryed, Treason, treson; sirs, arse, and arme you shortly, for yonder be men of armes aprochyng to your fortresse. Than every man arose, and armed them, and came to the gate; but sir Wylyam Duglas and his xii. companyons defended so the gate, that they coude nat close it; and so by great valiantnesse they kept thentre opyn, tyll their busschement came. They within defended the castell as well as they might, and hurt dyvers of them without; but sir Wylyam and the Scottes dyd so mouch that they conquered the fortresse, and all thenglyssh-men within slayne, excepte the captayne and sixe other squyers. So the Scottes taryd ther all that day, and made a knyght of the contrey captayn ther, called Symonde Vessey, and with hym divers other of the contrey. These tidyngez came to the kyng of Englande before Tourney.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LVI

Of the great hoost that the Frenche kyng assembled
to rayse the siege before Tourney.

YE have harde before howe the kyng of Englande had
besieged the cyte of Tourney with mo than six-score
thousande men of armes with the Flemmynges. And
bycause the vytayles within the cytie beganne to mynishe,
the Frenche lorde within caused to avoyde out of the towne
all maner of poore people, such as were nat furnysshed to
abyde the adventure of the siege. They were put out in the
opynne day, and they passed through the duke of Brabantes
hoost, who shewed them grace,1 for he caused them to be
safely brought to the Frenche hoost at Aras, where as the
kyng lay. And ther he made a gret assemble of men of his
owne contrey, and part out of the empyre. Thyder came
to hym the kyng of Behaygne, the duke of Loraygne, therle
of Bare, the byshoppe of Mets and of Coerdune,2 therle of
Mountbelieu,3 sir John of Chalon, the erle of Geyyne,4 the
erle of Savoy, and the lorde Lewes of Savoy his brother.
All these lorde came to serve the Frenche kyngge with all
their powers. Also thyder came the duke of Bretaygne, the
duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Borbone, therle of Alans-
on, therle of Flanders, therle Forestes, therle Arminacke,
therle of Bloyes, sir Charles of Bloyes, therle of Harcourt,
therle Dammartyn, the lorde Coucy, and dyvers other lorde
and knightes. And after came the kyng of Navarr with a
goodly nombre of men a warre out of the contrey in France
that he helde of the Frenche kyng, and therby he came to
serve hym: also there was the kyngge of Scottes, with a
certayne nombre apoynted to hym.
Howe the soudyers of the garyson of Bohayne, dystruss ed certayne soudyers of Mortayne before the towne of Conde.

Whan all these sayde lordes were come to Aras to the Frenche kyng, than he removyd and came to a lytell ryver, a thre leages fro Tourney: the water was depe, and rounde about full of marysshes, so that no man coude passe but by a lytell way, so narowe, that two horses coude nat passe a fronte; there the kyng lay and passed nat the ryver, for he durst nat. The next day the hoostes lay styl: some of the lordes counsayled to make bridges to passe over the water at their ease: than ther wer men sent to advyse the passage; and whan they had well advysed every thyng, they thought it was but a lost labour, and so they shewed the kyng, howe that ther was no passage but at the brige of Cressyn. Thus the mater abode in the same case; the tidynge anone spred abrode howe the Frenche kyng was lodged bytwene the bridge of Cressyn, and the bridge of Bouvines, to thentent to fight with his ennemies; so that all maner of people, suche as desyred honoure, drue to the one part and to the other, as they owed their seruycye or favoure. Ther were thre Almayns, bretherne in Bouhaygne: whan they harde howe these two kynges aproched nere togyder, be likelybode to fight, than two of them desyred the iii. to abyde styl and kepe the fortress, and they sayd, they wolde go se what chere there was before Tourney. So these two knyghtes departed, one of them was called sir Courrat Dastra, and the other, sir Courrat Lancenuch, and they rode tyll they came to Escampons, besyde Valencens, thinkyng to passe the ryver of Lescalt, at Conde. And bytwene Fresnes, andEscampons, they harde a gret brunt of men, and sawe howe some came fleyng to themwarde: the two bretherne had with them to the nombre of xxv. speares, and they encountred the first, and demaund what they ayled, so to fle away; In the name of God, sir, quoth they, the soudyers of Mortayne...
THE CRONYCYCLE OF

CAP. LVII
Howe the soudyers of the garson of Bohayne dystrusse certyane soudyers of Mortayne.

ar yssued out, and they have get a great pray, and are goyng therwith towarde their fortresse, and also have taken dyvers prisoners of this countrey. Than the two bretherne sayd, Sirs, can ye lede us ther as they be; and they sayde Yes. And so they went after the Frenchmen by the gyding of those poore men, and the Frenchmen were as thane to our lady in the wood, and wer a sixscore soudyers, and drave before them C. great beestes, and certyane prisoners of the men of the contrey; and their captayne was a knyght of Burgone, called John de Frelays, parteyninge to the lorde of Beaujeu. Assone as the Almayns sawe them, they ascryed them, and ran in fiersly among them; ther was a sore fight; the Burgonyon knyght dyd put hymselfe to defence, and some of his company, but nat all, for ther were dyvers that fled, but they were so nere chased, what with the Almayns, and with the men of the countrey, that ther scaped but a fewe, other slayne or taken; sir John de Frelays was taken, and all the pray rescued, and rendred agayne to the men of the contrey: and after that adventure, the Almayns came before Tourney, wher they were welcome.

CAP. LVIII
Of the journey that sir Wylyam Baylleull and sir Valfart de la Croyse made at the bridge of Cressyn.¹

NONE after, the Frenche kynge was lodged thus at the bridge of Bouves, a company of Heynous, by the settyng on of sir Wylyam Baylleull, and the lorde Vaufart de la Croyse, who sayd howe they knewe all the contrey, and that they wolde bring them into such a place on the Frenche hoost, that they shulde have some wynnynge. And so on a mornynge they departed fro hoost, about six-score compañions, knyghtes, and suqyers, and they rode towardde Pont de Cressyn, and made the lorde Baylleull to be as chefe, and that to his baner every man shulde drawe. Nowe the same mornynge rode forthe certyane nombre of the Legoys of the French party, wherof syr Robert de Baylleull,
brother to the foresayd sir Wylym Baylleull, was chefe CAP. LVIII captayn; so ther were two bretherne on dyverse parties: the Lyegois had passed the bridge of Cressyn, and were a forag- journey that yng for their horses, and to se if they coude fynde any ad- venture profitable for them. The Heynowes rode all that mornung without fynding of any adventure, and they also passed the bridge; ther was such a myst, that a man coude made at the nat se the length of a spere before hym: and when the Heynowes were all over, than they ordayned that sir Wylym Baylluell, with his baner, shulde abyde on the bridge, and sir Vaulfat, sir Raffet de Monceaux, and sir John de Ver- chyne shulde adventure on farther. And so they went so farr, that they dassed into thoose of the kyngg of Behayne, and the bysshopp of Liege, for they were lodged nere to the bridge, and the lorde of Rademache had made watche the same nyght, and it was at the poyn of his departynge. So bytwene them ther was a sore conflict. Howbeit, fyinally, the Heynow drue back towarde the brige, and the Liegoys, and Lucembourzins, folowed them, and sir Wylym Bavl- leull was counselled to repasse agayne the bridge with his baner, for thei had dyvers of their company to repasse; so the Heynow repassed agayne as well as they might, and in their passynge ther were many deedes of armes done, in takynge, and rescuyng agayne. So it fortuned that sir Vaulfat coude nat repasse the brige, and so was fayne to save hymselfe as well as he might: he yssued out of the preace, and toke a way that he knewe well, and so entred into the marshes, among bushes and rockes, and ther taryed. The other fought styll at the brige, and ther the Liegoys overcame syr Wylym Baylleuls company. And ther- with, sir Robert Baylleull, whan he harde that noyse in that parte, he came rynning thryder with his baner before hym, and whan the Heynowes sawe the baner of Moraynes, they byleved it had ben the baner of sir Wylym Bayllule, and drue thryder, for ther was but a small difference bytweene their baners: for the armes of Morians be barres, counter- barres, two chevron gowles; and in the chevron of syr Robert Baylleull ther was a lytell crosse golde, which the Heynowe toke no hede of, wherby they were disconurte, and slayne John de Vergny, sir Water du Pont de Large, sir
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LVIII

Wyllyam of Pyempoiex, and dyvers other, and taken sir
John de Soyre, sir Danyell de Bleze, sir Race de Monceaux,
sir Loys Dampelen, and dyvers other, and sir Wyllyam
de Baylleul scaped as well as he might, but he lost moche of
his company: syr Vauffart de la Croyse, who was in the
marysche, trustyng to have ben ther tyll it had ben night,
and so to have scaped, was spayed by some that rode alonge
by the marese; and they made suche an outcry on hym,
that he came out and yelded hymselfe prisoner; they toke
and brought hym to the hoost, and delyvered hym to their
maister, who wolde gladly have saved him, for he kneue
well he was in jeopardy of his lyfe. Anone, tidynes of
hym was brought to the French kyng, who incontynent dyd
send for hym, and the kyng immediately sent hym to Lyle,
because he had done to them moche damage; and so within
the towne they dyd put him to deth: they wold in no wyse
have pyte of hym, nor put hym to any ransome.

CAP. LIX

Howe therle of Heynault assyled the fortresse of
Mortayne in Picardy by dyvers maners.

Of this dede that sir Robert Bayllieull had done the
Frenche kyng was ryght joyouse; and within a
season after, the erle of Heynault, sir John, his
uncle, and the seneshall of Heynault, with a vi. hundred
speares, Heynowes, and Almayns, deported fro the siege of
Turney. And thare sent to them of Valencens, that they
shulde come and mete with hym before Mortayne, and to
come bytwene Lescharpe, 1 and Lescault, to assayle Mor-
tayne: and they came thyder in great array, and brought
with them great engyns. The lorde of Besujeu, who was
captayne within Mortayn, greatly douted assaytyng, bycause
the fortresse stode nere to the ryver and nere to Heynault,
as on all partes; theryfore he caused xii. C. pyles to be
driven in the ryver, to thyntent that no passage shulde be
that way. Howbeit, for all that the erle of Heynault, and
the Heynous came thyder on the one syde, and they of
Valencens on the other part, and incontynent they made an

1 The Scarpe.
assaut, and aproched the barrers; but ther were suche depe

trenches, that they coude nat come nere. Than some advysed
to passe the ryver of Lescharpe, and so to come on the syde
toward saynt Amand, and to make an assaut at the gate
toward Maulde; and as they devysed, a foure hundred
passed the ryver: so than Mortayne was closed in three
partes, the wekyst syde was towarde Maulde; howbeit, ther
was strength ynoogh. To that parte came the lorde Beuajeu
hymselfe to defende it, for he feared none of the other sydes.
He had in his hande a great glave, sharpe and well stelyd,
and above the blade, ther was a sharpe hoke of stele, that
when he gave his stroke, the hoke shulde take holde: and
loke on whome that it fastened, he came to hym, or els fell
in the water; by that meanes the same day he cast into the
water mo than xii. at that gate the assaut was ferest.
The erle of Heynalt, who was on the other syde, knewe
nothyng of that assaut; he was arayned alonge the ryver
syde of Lescault, and devysed howe they might get out of
the ryver the pylyes byforce, or by subtiltie, for than they
might come just to the walles. They ordyned to make a
shyppe and a gret engyn to drawe out the pylles, ech one
after other; their carpenters were set awarke, and the engyn
made in a shyppe; and the same day, they of Valencens
rayed on their syde a gret engyn, and dyd cast in stones,
so that it sore troubled them within. Thus the first day
passed, and the night, in assayling and devysing howe they
might greve them in the fortresse; the nexte day they went
to assaut on all partes, and the thirde day the shyppe was
redy, and thengyn to drawe out the pylles, and than dyd set
awarke to drawe them out, but ther were so many, and
suche labour in the doyng, or they coude drawe out one,
that they were wery of that craft, and the lorde wolde
they had never begon it, and so commaundde to cease their
warke. On the other part within Mortayne, there was a
connynge maister in makyng of engyns, who sawe well howe
thengyn of Valencens dyd greatly greve them. He rayed an
engyn in the castell, the which was nat very great, but he
trymed it to a poynct; and he cast therwith but three
tymes, the first stone fell a xii. foot fro thengyn without,
the seconde fell nere, and the thirde stone hit so evyn, that
X
THE CRONYCLE OF

it brake cleene asonder the shaft of thegyn without. Than
the soudyers of Mortaygne made a great shout; so thus the
Heynous coude get nothyng ther. Than therle sayd, howe
he wolde withdrawe, and go agayne to the siege of Tourney:
and so they dyd, and they of Valencens retourned to their
towne.

CAP. LX

HOWE THERL OF HEYNULT TOKE THE TOWNE OF SAYNT
AMANDE DURING THE SIEGE BEFORE TOURNAY.

THREE dayes after that therle of Heynault was re-
tourned fro Mortayne, he desyred certayne com-
panyons to go to saynt Amande, for he had dyvers
complayntes, how the soudyers of saynt Amand had
burnt thabbe of Hanon, and had nere brent Vycoigne,
and had done many dispuytes to the fronter of Heynalt.
So therle departed fro the sige with a iii. M. men, and came
before saynt Amand, on the syde towardo Mortayne. The
towne was nat closed but with pales, and captayne ther was
a knyght of Languedoke, the seneshall of Carcassone, who
had sayd to the monkes of thabbe ther, and to them of
the towne, that it was nat able to holde agaynst an hoost;
howbeit, he sayd, rather than he wolde depart, he wolde
kepe it to the best of his power: but that he sayd was in
the maner of counsell, howbeit, his wordes was nat byleved.
But long before the juels of the abbey were caried to
Mortayne, for the more suretie, and thyder went the abbot
and all his monkes, for they were no men of warr. And
they of Valencennes came at therles commaundement with
a xii. thousande men, and all the croboswe, kept the gate
toward the bridge of Lesharpe; ther began a ferse assaut,
and many sore hurts on bothe parties. This assaut endured
all the day; they of Valencens coude get nothyng ther;
they within scorned and mocked them, and sayd, Sirs, go
your way, and drink your good ale; and agaynst night,
they of Valencennes withdrewe right wery, and had gret
marveyle that they coude here no tidinges of therle their
lorde, and therfore they dysloged, and drewe towardo their
towne. The next mornying betymes, therle departed fro
Syr John Froissart

Turney and came to saynt Amand, on the syde towrade Mortayne; and incontyment they made assaynte, feers and cruell, and wan at the first the bayles, and came to the gate towrade Mortayne; and ther therle and his uncle made a great assault, and ech of them had such a stroke on the heede with stones, that their basenettes were cloven, and their heedes sore astonyed. At last, one sayd to therle, Sir, this way we shall never entre, the way is strayet and strongly kept; but sir, make great rammes of wood, like pyles, and let us ronne with them agaynst the abbey walles, and we shall peerse it through in dyvers places, and if we get thabbey, the towne is ours; than therle commaundde so to be done. And anone, gret peaces of tymber wer gote, and made sharpe before, and to every pece, twentie or xxx. persons, ronnyng therwith agaynst the wall, so that they brake the wall in dyvers places, and valyantly entred ther, and passed a lytell ryver that ranne within. And ther was redy the seneshall of Carcassone, his baner before hym, the which was goules, a sheffe sylver, thre chevrons in the sheffe, bordred sylver indented; and he and his company defended valyantly the Heynowes as long as they might, but their defence coude nat avayle, for the Heynowes wer so many: and in their entryng into thabbey, ther was a monke called danne Frossart, who dyde marvels, for he kyld and hurt at the hole ther as he stode an xviii. so that none durst entre in at that place, but finally he was fayne to depart, for he sawe howe the Henous entred into the abbey in dyvers places: and soo the monke saved hymselfe as well as he might, and went to Mortayne. Whan therle and his company wer entred into thabbey, he commaundde that all shulde be put to the swerde, they had so sore dyspleased hym, and done suche hurt in his contrey. The towne anone was full of men of armes, and they within chased and sought for, fro strete to strete, and in every house, so that fewe scaped, but all wer slaye; the seneshall was slayne under his standarde, and a ii. C. men rounde about hym; and agaynst night, therle retourned to Turney. The next day, they of Valencens came agayne to saynt Amand, and brent clene the towne, and thabbey minster and all, and brake all the belles, the which were goodly.
THE CRONYCLE OF

Another day, therle agayne departed fro the siege with vi. C. men of armes, and went and brent Orchies, Landas, and the Chell, and than passed by Hanon the ryver of Lesharpe, and went into France to a great abbey, and a ryche, called Marchienes, wherof sir Amye of Vernaulx
was captayne, and with hym certayne croswowers of Doway. Ther therle made assaut, for the captayne had well fortified the firste gate with great depe dykes, and the Frenchmen and monkes ther defended themselue right nobly. The Heynous at last gate them botes and barges, and therby entréd into thabbey; but there was a knyght of Almayne drowned, a companyon of the lorde Falquemont, called sir Bacho de la Wyer; therle and his uncle, and the seneshall, dyd at the gate so valyantly, that the gate was wonne, and sir Amye and his company slayne or taken; and ther were taken dyvers monkes, and thabbey robbed and brent, and the townel also: than therle retournd to the siege before Tourney.

CAP. LXI

Of the takyng of Charles Mommorency and dyvers other Frenchemen at the bridge of Cressyn.

THIS siege before Tourney was long and great, and the kynge of England supposed ever to wyn it, for he knewe well ther were moche people within, and but scant of vytye, wherfore he thought to famyssh them: and some sayde, they founde somme courtesy in theym of Brabaunt, in sufferynge vytyales to passe through their hoost into the cyte; and they of Brussels and Lovane weren very with taryeng ther so long, and they deseryd the marshall of thost, that they might have leave to retourn into Brabant. The marshall sayd, he was well content, but than they must leve all their harnes behyne them: with the which answere they were so ashamed that they never spake therof more.

Nowe I shall shewe you of a journey that the Almains made at the same bridge of Cressyne, wher as sir Robert Bayllule dysconfitte the Heynowes, as the lorde of Raunderoncende and sir John his son, John Randebourg.
Syr John Froissart

Esquier, syr Arnold of Bauchen, sir Raynolde Descouven- 
nort, sir Rorrant Dasto, sir Bastyn de Bastes, and Can- 
drelyer, his brother, sir Strauren de Lurne, and dyvers 
other of the duchy of Juliers, and of Guerles. All these 
rode forthe on a day, and also they had with them certayne 
bachelors of Heynalt; as sir Floren of Beauryon, sir Latas 
Frenchemen. de la Hey marshall of thooost, sir John of Heynalt, syr; Guildres. 
Oulphart of Guystels, sir Robert Glennes of therdome of 
Loz, and dyvers other: they wer a thre C. they came to the 
bridge of Cressyn, and passed without danger. Than they 
toke counsell what they shulde do, and it was thought 
moste for their honour to go and awake the French host; 
ther it was ordayne that the lorde Rauderondence, and 
his son, sir Henry of Keukren, sir Tylman of Sauzye, sir 
Oulphart of Guystels, sir Lalemant, bastarde of Heynalt, 
Robert of Glennes, and Jaquiel of Tyrux, shulde ryde, 
and sodenly dashe into the Frenche host; and the other 
knights and squyerz, to the nombre of thre C. shulde abyde 
styll at the brige, to kepe the passage. Thus these currous 
rode forthe to the nombre of a xl. spere, tyll they came to 
thoost, and so dasht in and overthouene tenentes and pavilyons, 
and skirmysshed with the Frenchemen. The same night, two 
great barons of France had kept the wache, that is to say, 
the lorde of Mommorency, and the lorde of Salieu. And 
whan they harde the noyse, they came with their baners to 
that part; than the Almayns retourned towarde the brige, 
and the Frenchemen after them feersly; and in the chase, sir 
Oulphart of Guystels, was taken, for he was purblbynde, and 
also two bretherne, Mondrope and Jaquiel of Tyrux; they 
wer so nere togayder, that ech of them understode others 
langage. And the Frenchemen sayd to the Almayns, Sirs, ye 
shall nat scape thus: than one sayd to the lorde of Rauder- 
ondence, Sir, take good hede, for methynke the Frenchemen 
wyll be at the bridge or we. Well sayd he, though they 
knowe one way, I knowe another; than he tourned on the 
right hande, and toke a way nat moche used, the which 
brought them and his company to the foresayd ryver, the 
which was so depe, and envyroned with maresshes, that they 
coude nat passe ther, so that they were sayne to repasse by 
the bridge; and the Frenchemen ever rode a great galoppe
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXI
Of the takynge of Charles Mommorencie and dyvers other Frenchmen.
towards the bridge, and whane they came near to the brige,
and sawe that great bushess ther, they sayd among themselves, I trowe we chase folyschly, we might lightely lese,
rather than wyn. Than dyvers of them retourned, and specially the lorde of saynt Saulieu, with his baner and his company: and the lorde Charles of Mommorencie, with his baner, rode ever forwarde and wold nat recule, and so with great courage sette on the Almayns. At the first brunt ther was a feere encounter, and dyverse overthrown on bothe parties. Than came in on thother syde, thother Almayns, and so enclosed in the Frenchmen. The lorde Renolde of Dyscouvenort kneewe well the baner of the lorde Mommorencie, who was under his banner, with his swerde in his hand, fighting on every syde, and so came sodenly on his right hande, and with his lyft hande, he toke the bridell of the lorde Mommorecies horse, and spurred forthe his owne horse, and so drewe hym out of the batayle; and ever the lorde Mommorencie strake and gave hym many great strokes, the which some he receyved, and some he defended. But finally, ther he was taken prisoner; so the Almayns dyde so moche, that they obtayned the place, and toke a fourscore prisoners of gentylmen: than they repassed the bridge without any danger, and so came agayne to the siege before Tourney.

CAP. LXII

Howe the Flemmynges were before saynt Omers duryng the siege.

NOW let us shewe of an adventure that fell to the Flemmynges, of the whiche company ther were captayns sir Robert Dartoyse, and sir Henry of Flanders: they wer in nombre a xl. M. what of the townes of Ippre, Propyngne, Messynges, Cassell, and of the Catelayne of Beggus:1 all these Flemmynges lay in the vale of Cassell in tentes and pavilions, to countergaryson the French garysons, that the French kynge had layed at saynt Omers, at Ayre, at saynt Venaunt, and in other townes and forteresses there aboute. And in saynt Omers there was therle dolphyne of Auvergne, the lorde of Kalengen,2

---

1 Castlevick of Bergues.
2 Chalençon.
Syr John Froissart

the lorde of Montaygu, the lorde of Rocheforte, the vy-coun of Tuaars, and dyvers other knyghtes of Auvergne. And in Ayre and saynt Venant ther were also many soudyers, and often tymes they yssued out and skirmysshed with the Flemmynges. On a day iii. M. went to the subarbes of saynt Omers and brake downe dyvers houses and robbed them; the fray anon was known in the towne, and the lordes within armed them and their company, and yssued out at another gate: they were a vi. baners, and a ii. C. men of armes, and a vi. C. fotemen, and they came by a secrete way on the Flemmynges, who were besy to robbe and pyll the towne of Arkes, nere to saynt Omers. There they were spredde abrode without captayne, or good order; than, the Frenchmen came on them in good order of batell, their baners displayed, cryeng Cleremont, the dolphyn of Auvergne: wherwith the Flemmynges were abasshed, and beatyn downe by hepes; and the chase of them endured ii. leages, and ther were slayne a iiiii. M. and vili. C. and a iiiii. C. taken prisoners, and ledde to saynt Omers. And suche as fledde and scaped returned to the hoost, and shewed their companyons their adventure; and at last tidynge therof came to their captayns, sir Robert Dartoyse, and sir Henry of Flandres, who sayd, it was well employd, for they went forth without commaundement, or captayne. And the same nyght, or it was mydnight, the Flemmynges lyeng in their tentes aslepe, sodenyly generally among them all, ther fell suche a feare in their hertes, that they rose in great haste, and with suche payne, that they thought nat to be dysloged tyme ynough; they bete downe their owne tentes, and pavlyons, and trussed all their carriages, and so fledde away, nat abyng one for another, without kepynge of any right way. When these tidyngees came to their two captayns, they rose hastily and made gret fieres, and toke torches and mounted on their horses, and so came to these Flemmynges, and sayd, Sirs, what ayleth you, do you want any thyng, why do you thus flye away, be you nat well assured? retourn in the name of God, ye be to blame thus to flye, and no man chase you. But for all their wordes, every man fledde the next way to their owne houses. And whan these lordes sawe none other remedy, they trussed all their harnes
THE CRONYCLE OF

in wagenes, and retourned to the hoost before Tourney, and
ther shewed the adventure of the Flemmynges, wherof every
man had marveyle: some sayd they were overcome with
fantyses.

CAP. LXIII

Howe the siege before Tourney was broken up
by reason of a truse.

THIS siege endured a long season, the space of a
xi. wekes, thre dayes lesse; and all that season the
lady Jane of Valoys, suster to the Frenche king, and
mother to therle of Heynalt, traveyled gretyly, what on the
one part and on thother, to have a respyte and a peace
bytwene the parties, so that they might depart without
batayle. And dyvers tymes she kneeled at the fete of the
Frenche kyng in that behalfe, and also made great labour to
the lorde of thempyre, and specially to the duke of Brabant,
and to the duke of Jullers, who had her daughter in
maryage, and also to sir John of Heynalt. So mouch the
good lady procured with the ayde and counsell of Loys
Daugymont, who was wel beloved with both parties, that it
was graunted, that eche partie shulde sende foure sufficeyent
persons, to treat on some good way to acorde the parties,
and a truse for thre dayes; these apoynters shuld mete in a
lytell chapell, standyng in the feldes called Esplotyn. At the
day apoynted these persons mete, and the good lady with
them: of the Frenche partie, ther was Charles kyng of
Behayne, Charles erle Dalanson, brother to the Frenche
kyng, and the byshoppe of Liege, therle of Flanders, and
therle of Armynack; of thenglyshe partie, there was the
duke of Brabant, the byshop of Lincolne, the duke of
Guerles, the duke of Jullers, and sir John of Heynalt. And
when they were all met, they made ech to other gret
salutacyons, and good chere, and than entred into their
treaty. And all that day they comuned on dyvers ways of
acorde, and alwyays the good lady of Valoys was a mong
them, desyringe effectuously all the parties, that they wolde
do their labour to make a peace; howbeit, the first day
passed without any thing doyng; and so they retourned, and
promysed to mete agayne the next day: the whiche day they came together agayne in the same place, and so fell agayne into their treaty; and so fell unto certayne poynes agreeable: but it was as thanne so late, that they coude nat put it in wrytyng as that day; and to make an ende, and to make perfyght the mater if they might, the thirde day they met agayne, and so finally acorded on a truse, to endure for a yere bytwene all partes, and all ther men; and also bytwene them that were in Scotlande, and all suche as made warr in Gascoyne, Poyctou, and in Santon; and this treuse to begun the xl. day next ensuyng, and within that space every partie to gyve knowlege to his men without mallengyn; and if suche companyes woll nat kepe the peace, let them be at their chose. But as for France, Pycardy, Burgoyne, Bretayne, and Normandy, to be bounde to this peace, without any excepceyon; and this peace to begun incontynent bytwene the hostes of the two kynges. Also it was determined, that bothe partes, in eche of their names, shulde sende foure or fyve personages as their embassadours and to mete at Arras; and the pope in likwyse to sende thyder foure, and ther to make a full confirmacyon without any meane. Also by this truse, every partie to enjoy and possede all and every thynge, that they were as than in possessyon of. This truse incontynent was cryed in bothe hostes, wherof the Brabances were right gladde, for they were sore verry with so long lyeng at the sieche; so that the neste day, assone as it was day lyght, ye shulde have sene tentes taken downe, charyotes charged, and people remove so thychke, that a man wold have thought to have sene a newe worlde. Thus the good towne of Tourney was safe without any great damage; howbeit they within endured gret payne, their vytyles began to fayle, for, as it was sayd, they had as than scant to serve them a thre or foure dayes at the mosst. The Brabances departed quickly, for they had grete desyre therto: the kyng of Engelande departed sore agaynst his mynde, if he might have done otherwise, but in maner he was fayne to folowe the wylles of the other lordes, and to byleve their counsayls. And the Frenche kyng coude abyde no lengar there as he lay, for the yvell ayre, and the wether hote: so the Frenchmen had the honour of
THE CRONYCLE OF

that journey, bycause they had rescued Tourney and caused
their enemys to departe. The kyng of Engelande and the
lordes on his partic, sayd how they had the honour, by
reason that they had taryed so long within the realme, and
besiegde one of the good townes therof, and also had wasted
and burnt in the Frenche contrey, and that the Frenche
kyng had nat rescued it in tyme and hour, as he ought to
have done, by gyyng of batayle, and finayly agreed to a
true, their enemys beyng stil at the siege, and brennyng
his contrey. Thus these lordes departed fro the siege of
Tourney, and every man drewe to his owne. The kyng of
Engelande came to Gaunt to the queene his wyfe, and shortly
after passed the see, and all his, except suche as shulde be at
the parlamente at Arras. Therle of Heynault returned to
his contrey, and helde a noble feest at Mons, in Heynault,
and a great justes; in the which Gararde of Verchyn,
seneshall of Heynault dyd just, and was so sore hurt, that
he dyed of the stroke; he had a sonne called Johann, who
was after a good knyght, and a hardy, but he was but a
whyle in good helthe. The Frenche kyng gave leave to every
man to departe, and went hymselfe to Lyle, and thys
came they of Tourney, and the kyng receyved them joyously,
and dyd shewe them grete grace: he gave them frely their
franches, the which they had lost longe before: wherwith
they were joyouse, for sir Godmer du Fay, and dyers other
knyghtes had ben longe governours ther; than they made
newe provost, and jurates, acordyng to their auncyent
usages; than the kyng departed fro Lyle, to go to Parys.

Nowe than came the season that the counsayle shulde be
at Arras: and for pope Clement, thys came in legacyon,
the cardynall of Napuls, and the cardynall of Clermont,
who came to Parys, wher as the kyng made thym moche
honour, and so came to Arras; for the Frenche kyng, ther
was thryl of Alans, the duke of Burbon, thryl of
Flauders, thryl of Bloys, the archeyshoppe of Senes, the
bysshopp of Beawayes, and the bysshopp of Aucerre: and
for the kyng of England, ther was the bysshopp of Lyncolne,
the bysshopp of Durame, thryl of Warwyke, sir Robert
Dartoyse, sir John of Heynault, and sir Henry of Flandres.
At the whiche treaty ther were many maters put forthe, and
Syr John Froissart

so contynued a xv. dayes, and agreed of no poyn of effect: CAP. LXIII
for thenglysshmen demaunded, and the frenchmen wolde
nothyng gyve, but all onely to rendre the countie of Pouctou,
the which was gyven with quene Isabell in maryage with
the kyng of Englannde. So this parlyament brake up and
nothyng done, but the truse to be relonged two yeres lenger:
that was all that the cardynals coude get. Than every man
departed, and the two cardynals went through Heynault at
the desyre of therle, who feested them nobly.

CAP. LXIII

Nowe speketh the hystorie of the warres of
Bretayne, and howe the duke dyed without
heyre, wherby the dyseccion fell.

WHAN that this sayde trewse was agreed and
sayled before the cyte of Turney, every lord and
all maner of people dyslosed, and every man
druke into his owne contrey. The duke of Bretayne, who
had ben with the French kyng, as well fursysshed as any
other prince that was ther, departed homwarde: and in his
way a sickenes toke hym, so that he dyed: at whiche tyme he
had no chylde, nor had never none by the duchies, nor had
no trust to have. He had a brother by the father side,
called erle of Mountfort, who was as than lyveyng, and he
had to his wyfe, suster to therle Loyes of Flaunders. This
sayd duke had another brother, bothe by father and mother,
who was as than deed: and he had a daughter alvyng, and
the duke, her uncle, had maried her to the Lord Charles of
Bloyes, eldyt sonne of therle Guy, of Bloyes, that the same
erle had by the suster of kyng Philipppe of France, who as
than rayyned, and had promysed with her in maryage the
duchy of Bretayne, after his dysesse. For he doubtt that
the erle Mountfort wolde clayme the inherytance, as next of
blode, and yet he was nat his proper brother germayne; and
the duke thought that the daughter of his brother germayne
oughte by reason to be more nere to the inherytance after
his dycease, than therle Mountfort, his brother. And bycause
he fered, that after his dycease therle of Mountfort wolde
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXIII
Now spaketh the hystorie of the waeres of Bretayne.

take away the ryght fro his yong nese, therfore he maried her with the sayd sir Charles of Bloys, to thynent that kyng Philyp, uncle to her housbande, shuld ayd to kepe her right agaynst thel Mountfort, yf he medyll any thyngge in the mater. Assone as the erle Mountfort knewe that the duke his brother was deeed, he went incontynent to Nauntes, the soveraygne cytie of all Bretayne; and he dyd so moche to the burgesses, and to the people of the contrey ther about, that he was receyved as ther chefe lorde, as moost next of blode to his brother dysscessed, and so dyd to hym homage and fealtie. Than he and his wyfe, who had both the heret of a lyon, determynd with their counsell to call a court, and to kepe a solemnpe fest at Nauntes, at a day lymitted: agaynst the whiche day, thei sent for all the nobles and counsails of the good townes of Bretayne, to be there, to do their homage and fealtie to hym, as to their soveraygne lorde. In the meane season, or this fest began, therle Mountfort, with a great nombre of men a warr, departed fro Nauntes, and went to Lymoynes, for he was enformed that the tresur that his father had gadered many a daye before, was ther kept secrete. Whan he came ther he entred into the cyte with gret tryumphe, and dyd hym moche honour, and was nobly receyved of the burgesses, of the clergie, and of the commons, and they all dyd hym fealtie, as to their soveraygne lorde; and by such meanes as he founde, that gret tresur was delvered to hym; and whan he had taryed there at his pleasure, he departed with all his tresur, and came to Nauntes, to the countes his wyfe. And so ther they taryed in grete joye, tyll the daye came of the feest, and made grete provysions against the same: and whan the daye came, and no man apered for no commandement, except one knyght, calld sir Henry du Leon, a noble and a pysaunt man; so they kept the feest a thre dayes, as well as they might, with such as were ther. Than it was determynd to retayne soudyers a horsbacke, and a fote, and so to dyspende his gret tresure, to attayne to his purpose of the duchy, and to constrayne all rebels to come to mercy. So soudyers wer retayned on all sydes and largely payed, so that they had a great nombre a fote and a horsback, nobles and other of dyverse countreis.
Syr John Froissart

Cap. LXV

Howe therle of Mountfort toke the towne and castell of Brest.

WHAN therle of Mountfort sawe howe he had peple ynoough, than he was counsayled to go and conquer all the contre, outhar by love or by force, and to subdue all his rebels. Than he yssued out of the cytie of Nauntes with a great hoost, and went to a strong castell, standynge on the see syde, called Brest, and captayne therin was sir Garnyer of Clysson, a noble knyght, and one of the grettet barownes in Bretayne. Therle Mountfort or he came to Brest, he constrayned so all the countrey except the fortresses, that every man folowed hym a horsbacke or a fote: none durste do none otherwyse. Whan therle came to the castell of Brest, he caused syr Henry de Leon to sende to the captayn to speke with hym, movyng hym to obey to therle, as to the duke of Bretayne. The knight answered, he wold do nothyng after that mocyon, tyll he had otherwyse in com mauandement, fro hym that ought to be lorde ther by right; and the next day, therle dyd assaut the castell. Within the castell were a iii. C. men of armes, and every man was set to his part of defence; and than the captayn toke a xi. good men of armes, and came to the barryers, and so ther was a sore assaut, and dyvers sore hurt: but finally, ther came so many assaylantes, that the bayles were wonne byfore, and the defendantes fayne to retourne into the castell, at a harde adventure, for ther were dyvers slayne; but the captayne dyd so valyantly, that he brought his company into the chyfte gate. They that kepte the warde of the gate, whan they sawe that myschyfe, feared lesyng of the castell; and sodenly they lette downe the portclysse, and closed their owne capteyne, and certayne with him without, who right nobly defended themselve; they were sore hurt, and in great daunger of deth, and the captayne wold never yelde hymselfe: they within cast out stones, tymber, yron, and pottes with quycke lyme, so that the assaylantes were fayne to drawe backe.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXV
Howe therle of Mountfort
toke the
towne and
castell of
Brest.

Than they drue up a lytell of the portcolye, and the cap-
tayne entred, and his company, such as wer left alyve with
him sore wounded. The next day, therle caused certayne
ingeses to be raysed, and sayde, howe that he wolde nat
depart thens, tyll he had the castell at his pleasure: the
thryde day he understode howe the captayne within was
deed of such hurtes as he receyved before at entrynge into
the castell, and trewe it was. Than the duke Mountfort
causd a great assaut to be made, and had certayne instru-
mentes made of tymbre, to caste over the dykes to come to
the harde walles; they within defended themselfe as well as
they myght, tyll it was noone: than the duke desyred them
to yelde, and to take hym for their duke, and he wold frely
pardon them; wherupon they toke counsell, and the duke
causd the assaut to cease, and fynally they yelded them,
their lyves and goodes saved. Than therle of Mountfort
entred into the castell with certayne nombre, and receyved
the feaultie of all the men of that Chateleyne; and ther he
sette to be captayne, a knyght whom he trusted moche, and
than he retorned to his felde right joyouse.

CAP. LXVI

Howe therle of Mountfort toke the cytie of Renes.

WHAN the erle of Mountfort was retorned to his
felde, and had stablysshed his captaysn in the
castell of Brest, thane he drewe towarde the
cite of Renes, the which was nat farr thens: and every
where as he went, he made every man to do him hommage
and feaultie, as to their ryght lorde, and dayly encreased
his hoost; so he came before Renes, and pyght up his
tentes, and lodged his peple rounde aboute the cyte, and in
the subbarbes. They within made great semblant of defence:
capytaine ther was sир Henry Pennefort,1 who was wel
beloved for his trewheth and valyantnesse. On a mornynge
he yssued out with a two hundred men, and dasshed into the
hoost, and bete downe tentes, and slewe dyvers: suche of
the host as had kept watche the same night, droye to the
noyse; than they of the fortesse withdrawe, and fledde

1 Espinofort.
agayne to their castell, but they taryed so longe, that Cap. LXV
dyers of theym were taken and slayne; and sir Henry of Howe therle
Penfort was taken and brought to the erle: than the erle of Mountfort
caused hym to be brought before the cytie, and to be shewed the
to the burgesses, that if they wolde save his lyfe, to yelde up the towne, or elys he shulde be hanged before the gates.
Thane they of Renes toke counsayle, the whiche enduredd longe, for the commons had great pyte of their captayne,
and he was wel beloved among them; also they consyndered howe they hadde but small store of vytayle, long to defende
the siege, wherfore they sayde they wolde have peace; but
the great burgesses, who hadde ynoogh for theymselfe, wolde nat agre to yelde up the towne; so that their dyscorde
multiplied so farre, that the great burgesses who were all
of one lynnage drewe aparte, and sayde, Sirs, all that woll
take our parte, drawe to us; so that there drewe toghther
of one affynyte and lynnage, to the nombre of a two
thousande. And when the other commons sawe that, they began to sterre, and sayde to the burgesses many eyll and
vylanous wordes, and finally ran togyster, and sweye dyvers
of them: than when the burgesses sawe what myschefe they were in, they agreed to them, and sayde, they wolde as they
desyer. Than ceased the fray, and all the commons ranne
and opyned the gates, and yelded the cytie to therle Mount-
fort, and dyde homage and feaultie to hym, and toke hym as
their lorde, and so dyd sir Henry Penfort, who was made of
therles counsayle.

Cap. LXVII

Howe the erle Mountfort toke the towne and
castell of Hanybont.¹

Thus theerle of Mountfort entred into Renes with
great feest and lodged his host styll in the feldes,
and made the peace agayn bytweene the burgesses
and the commons; than he made ther baylyffes, provost,
aldermen, serygantes, and other officers, and taryed ther
thre dayes; than he dyslodged, and drue towarde the
strongest castell in all Bretayn, called Hanybont, standynge
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXVII on a port of the see, and the see rennynge rounde aboute in
gret dykes. Whan sir Henry of Penfort sawe how therle
wolde go thyder, he feared his brother, who was captayn
ther; than he came to therle in counsell, and sayd, Sir, it
hath pleased you to admyt me as one of your counsaylours,
and sir, I have gyven you my fayth and allegiance; I under-
stande ye purpose to go to Hanybont: sir, knowe for
trouthe, the towne and the castell ar of suche strength, that
they be nat easy to wynne: I thynke surely ye may well
lesse your tyme there a hole yere, or ye wynne it perforce;
but sir, if it wyll please you to blyve me, I shal shewe you
the wayes howe to wynne it: whane force can nat helpe,
subylte and craft must avayle. If ye wyll deluyer me
v. hundred men of armes, to be ruelde as I wolle have them,
I shal go with them halfe a leage before your hoost, with
the baner of Bretayn before me: and my brother, who is
governour of the castell and of the towne, as sone as he
shall se the banner of Bretayne, and knowe that it is I, he
wolle opyn the gates and let me entre, and all my company;
and asonne as I am within, I shall take hym as prysoner,
and take possesyon of the towne and gates, and I shal
rendre my brother into your handes, to do your pleasure
with hym, without he wolle obey as I wolle have him; so
that ye promyse me by the fayth of your body, that ye
shall do his person no bodely hurte. Thye which request
therele promysed, and sayd, If ye bringe this about, I shal
love you the better ever after. Than sir Henry Penfort
departed with his company apoynted, and agaynst evenyng,
hhe came to Hanybont, and whan his brother, Olyver Pen-
fort, knewe of his commyng, he opyned the gates and let
hym entre, wenynge he had ben come to have ayded hym,
and so came and mette his brother in the strete. Assone
as sir Henry sawe hym, he aproched to hym, and toke hym
by the arme, and sayd, Olyver, ye ar my prysoner. Howe so,
quoth he, I have put my trust in you, thynkyng that ye
were come hyther to ayde me to kepe this towne and
castell. Brother, quoth sir Henry, the mater gothe nat so:
I take possession of this towne for therle Mountfort, who is
nowe duke of Bretayne, to whome I have made fealty and
homage, and the most part of the contrey hath obeyed
unto hym, and so shall you do in likewyse, and it wer better CAP. LXVII ye dyd it by love than by force, ye shal deserve the more thanke. So moche Olyver was styred by his brother that he agreed to hym; and so therle entred and toke possession of the towe and castell and set ther a gret garison. Than he went with all his host to Vennes, and made such treatie with them, that they yelld up, and dyd fealtie and homage to hym, as to their soveraygne lorde; and there he stablyssed all maner of officers, and taryed ther thre dayes. And fro thens he went and layd siege to a strong castell, called Roche Peron; captayne therin was syr Olyver of Clysson, cosyn germanye to the lorde Clysson; and therle lay ther at siege x. dayes, and coude fynde no wayes howe to gette the castell, it was so strong, and the captayne wolle in no wyse agre to obey, nother for fayre wordes nor foule. So the erle left that siege and departet for that tyne, and went and layd siege to another castell, a x. leaes thens, called Aulroy, and therin was captayne sir Geffray Malé-stroyt, and in his company sir Ivon of Triguyle: therle assayled the castell two tymes, but he sawe well he might rather lose ther, than wynne. Than he agreed to a truse for a day, at the instance of sir Henry de Leon, who was ever styll about hym. Soo the treaty toke such effect that they were all frenedes, and the two knyghtes dyd homage to therle, and so departed, and left styll the same two knyghtes to be captayns ther, and of the contrey there about. Thanne he went to another castell, called Goy la Forest, and he that was captayne there, sawe howe therle had a great hoost, and howe the contrey was sore yelld to hym, and so by the counsell of sir Henry de Leon, with whome the captayne had ben in company in Pruce, in Granade, and in dyvers other strange contreis, he acorded with therle, and dyd hym homage, and therle left hym styll captayne ther. Than therle went to Caraches, a good towe, and a stronge castell, and therin ther was a bysshoppe, who was lorde therof; this prelate was uncle to sir Henry de Leon, so that by sir Henris meanes, the bysshoppe agreed with therle, and toke hym as his lorde, unto suche season as somme other shulde come, and shewe more ryght to the duchy of Bretaygne.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXVIII

Howe the erle Mountfort dyd homage to the kyng of England for the duchy of Bretayne.

Thus the erle Mountfort conquered the countrey, and made hymselfe to be called duke of Bretayne: than he went to a port on the see syde, called Gredo; thane he sent his people abrode to kepe the townes and fortresses that he had won. Than he toke the see, with a certayne with hym, and so arryved in Cornwall, in England, at a port called Chepse; than he enquered where the kyng was, and it was shewed hym howe that he was at Wyndsore. Than he rode thyderwarde, and came to Wyndsore, wher he was receyved with grete joye and feest, bothe of the kyng and of the quene, and of all the lorde. Than he shewed the kyng and his counsayle howe he was in possession of the duchy of Bretayne, fallen to hym by succession, by the deth of his brother, last duke of Breten; but he feared lest that sir Charles of Bloys, and the Frenche kyng wolde put hym out therof by puysance, wherfore he sayd, he was come thyder to relyve, and to holde the duchy of the kyng of Englande, by fealtie and homage, for ever, so that he wolde defende hym agaynst the Frenche kyng, and all other that shulde put hym to any trouble for the mater. The kyng of Englande ymagined that his warre agaynst the Frenche kyng shulde be well fortiffied by that meanes, and howe that he coude nat have no more profitable way for hym to entre into France, than by Bretayne, remembring howe the Almayns and Brabances had done lytell or nothyng for hym, but caused hym to spende moche money; wherfore, joyously he condysceded to therle Mountfortes desyre, and there toke homage by the handes of therle, callynge hymselfe duke of Bretayne. And ther the kyng of Englande, in the presence of suche lorde as were ther, bothe of Bretayne and of Engelande, promysed that he wolde ayye, defende, and kepe hym as his ieghe man, agaynst every man, Frenche kyng and other. This homage and promyses were writen and sealed, and every
SYR JOHN FROISSART

partie had his part delyverd; byeyle that, the kyng and the queyne gave to therle and to his company, many great Howethe erle gyftes, in such wyse, that they reputed hym for a noble Mountfort kyng, and worthy to raygne in gret prosperete. Than therle toke his leave and departed, and toke agayne the see, and arryved at the forsayd porte of Gredo, in base Bretayne, and so came to Nauntes to his wyfe, who sayde howe he had wrought by good and dyscrete counsayle.

CAP. LXIX

Howe therle Mountfort was somoned to be at the parlyament of Parys at the request of the lorde Charles of Bloyes.

WHAN sir Charles of Bloys, who helde hymselfe rightfull inhereytour to Bretaygne, by reason of his wyfe, harde howe the erle of Mountfort conquered before the countre, the whiche by reason ought to be his, than he came to Parys to complayyne to kyng Philippe, his uncle: wherupon the kyng counsellde with the nobles of the realme, what he might do in that matter: and it was coumsayled hym, that therle Mountfort shuld be by suffycient messangers, somoned to spere at Parys, and ther to here what answere he wold make. So these messangers were sent forthe, and they founde therle at Nauntes, makyng good chere, and he made to them great feest. And finally he answered, howe he wold obey the kynges commandement: and than made hym redy, and departed fro Nantes, and so came to Paris, with a iii. C. horse with hym; and the next day, he and all his mounted on their horses and rode to the kynges palaye. Ther the kyng and his xii. peres, with other great lordes of Fraunce, taryed his commyng, and the lorde Charles of Blois with them: than therle entred into the kynges chambre: he was well regarded and saluted of every person; than he enclyned hymselfe to the kyng, and sayd Sir, I am come hyther at your commandement and pleasure. Than the kyng sayd, Erle of Mountfort, for your so doyng, I can you good

179
THE CRONYCLE OF

thanked, howbeit, I have marveyle, howe that ye durste undertake on you the duchy of Bretayne, wherin ye have no right, for there is another nerer than ye be, and ye wolde dysinher yt hym, and to mentayne your quarell, ye have been with myne adversary the kyng of Englane, and as it is shewed me, ye have done hym homage for the same.

Than therle sayd, Sir, byleve it nat, for surelly ye ar but ywell enformed in that behalfe; but syr, as for the right that ye speke of, saynyng your dyspleasur, ye do me therin wrong, for syr, I knowe none so nere to my brother, that is departed, as I; if it were juged, or playnly declared by right, that there were another nerer than I, I wolde nat be rebell, nor ashamed to leave it. Well sir, quothe the kyng, ye say well, but I command you in all that ye holde of me, that ye depart nat out of this cytie of Parys, this xv. dayes, by the which tym the xii. peres and lordes of my realme shall judge this mater, and than ye shall knowe what right ye have, and if ye do otherwise, ye shall displease me. Than therle sayd, Syr, all shal be at your pleasure; thane he went fro the court to his lodgyng to dyner; when he came to his lodgyng he entred into his chambre, and ther satte and ymagined many doutes; and finally, with a small company, he mounted on his horse, and retourned agayne into Bretayne, or the kyng or any other wyster he was become: some thought he had ben but a lytell sicke in his lodgyng. And when he came to Nauntes, he shewed the countesse what he had done, and than by her counsel, he rode to all the townes and fortresses that he had wonne, and stablyshed in them good captayns and soudyers a horsbacke and fote, and dyd gyve them good wages.

CAP. LXX

Howe the duchy of Brewayne was juged to sir Charles of Bloyes.

It is to be thought that the Frenche kyng was sore displeased when he knewe that the erle of Mountforte was so departed; howbeit, he taryed till the xv. day, that the lordes shulde gyve their judgement on
the duchy of Bretayne. When the day came they judged it
clerely to syr Charles of Bloys wyfe, who was daughter to Howe the
the brother germayne of the duke, last deed, by the father
syde, whom they judged to have more right than the erle
Mountforte, who came by another father, who was never
duke of Bretayne; another reason ther was; they sayde, Bloyes.
though that therle of Mountfort had any right, he had
forfeted it two wayes; the one, bycause he had relyved the
duchy of another lorde, than of the Frenche kynge, of whom
he ought to holde it; the other reason was, bycause he had
broken the kynges commaundement, and disobeyed his areste
and prison, as in goyng away without leave. When this
judgement was gyven in playne audynce by all the lordes,
thanne the kyng called to hym the lorde Charles of Bloys,
his nepheue and sayde, Fayre nepheue, ye have judged to you
a fayre herytage, and a great, therfore hast you, and go and
conquerre it agaynst hym that kepyth it wrongfully, and
desyre all your frendes to ayde you, and I shall nat fayle
you for my part, I shall lende you golde and sylver ynowh,
and shall commaunde my sonne the duke of Normandy, to
go with you. Than syr Charles of Bloys inclyned hym to
his uncle, thankyn gyng hym right humbly; than he desyerd
the duke of Normandy his cosyn, the erle of Alanson his
uncle, the duke of Burgoyne, therle of Bloys his brother,
the duke of Burbone, the lorde Loys of Spayne, the lorde
Jaques of Burbon, therle of Ewe constable of Fraunce, and
therle of Guynes, his sonne, the vycont of Rohayne, and all
the other lordes that were ther; and all they sayde howe
they wolde gladly go with hym and with their lorde the
duke of Normandy. Than these lordes departed to make
them redy and to make provysion agaynst that journey.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXI

The lorde of Fraunce that entred into Bretayne with sir Charles of Bloys.

Whan all these lorde of Normandy, the duke of Alanson, the duke of Burgoyne, and all other, suche as shulde go with sir Charles du Bloys, to ayde hym to conquer the duchy of Bretayne, were redy, they departed, some fro Pares and some fro other places, and they assembled tygether at the cytie of Angers, and fro thens they went to Ancennys, the which is thende of the realme on that syde, and ther taryed a thre dayes. Than they went forthe into the countrey of Bretayne, and whan they were in the feldes, they nombred their company to a fyrve thousande men of armes, bésyde the Genowayes, the which were a thre thousande, and thre knyghtes of Gennes dyd lede them, the one called sir Othes de Rue, and thother sir Charles Germaulx, and bésyde that they had many crosbowes, of whome sir Galoys de la Baulme was captayne. Than all these went to a strong castell, standynge on a hyebe mountayne, called Chastoncéaulx: ther was thentre of Bretayne; it was furnysshed with men of warr; and captayns ther were two knyghtes of Lorayne, called syr Gyles, and sir Valeryan. The lorde of France toke counsell to besiege this castell, for they thought, if they shulde leave such a fortes behynde them it shulde do them great damage; so they besieged it rouned about, and made many assautes, specially the Genowayes dydde what they might to attayne prayse at the beginnyng: but they lost often tymes of their company, for they within defended themselye so saglely, that it was longe or they toke any damage. But finally the assaylantes brought thyder so moch tymbre, wod, and fagottes, that they fylled therwith the dykes, so that they might go just to the walles: they within cast out stones, chalke, and breynnynge fyre; howbeit, they without came to the fote of the walles, and had instrumentes, wherby they myght, under covert, myne the walles; than they within yelled up the castell, their lyves and goodes saved.
Syr John Froissart

Thane the duke of Normandy, who was chiefe ther, delyvered the castell to sir Charles of Bloys as his owne, who inconty-
ent set ther a good garison to kepe theire, and to conduct suche as came after theym. Than they went towarde Nantes, wher as they harde how therle of Mountfort their ellemy was; the marshals and carrours of their hoost, founde by Bloys.
the way as they went, a good towne, closed with dykes, the which they feerly assayled; and in the town, ther were but fewe peple; and yvell armed, so that anone the towne was won, robbed, and the one halfe brent, and all the peple put to the swerde. This towne was called Carqueys, within a iii. or fyve leages to Nantes: the lordes lay thersabout all that night, the next mornying they drue towarde Nantes, and layed siege rounde about it, and pyght up their tente and pavilyons.

Than the men of warre within the towne, and the burgesses armed them, and went to their defences as they were apoynted; some of the host went to the barrers to skirmyshe; and some of the soudyres within, and yong burgesses, yssued out ageynst them, so that ther were dywers slayne and hurt on bothe parties; ther were dyvers suche skirmyshes. On a mornying, some of the soudyres within the cytie yssued out at adventure, and they founde a xv. cartes with vytell, comynge to thoot warde, and a lx. persons to convey it; and they of the cytie were a ii. C. they set on them, and anone dysconfted them, and sywe dyvers, and some fled away and scaped, and shewed in thoot howe it was: than some went to rescus the pray, and overtoke them here to the barryers; ther began a great skirmyshe; ther came so many fro thoot, that they within had moch ado; howbeit, they toke the horses out of the cartes, and dyd drive them in at the gate, to thentent that they without shulde nat drive lightly awaie the carriages. Than other soudyres of the cytie yssued out to helpe their companys, and also of the burgesses, to ayde their parents; so the fray multiplied, and dyvers were slayne, and sore hurt, on bothe parties, for alwayes people encreas5d fro thoot, and some newe ever yssued out of the cytie.

Than at last sir Henry the capitayne, sawe that it was tym to retreyt, for by his abydinge, he sawe he might rather
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXI
The lorde of Fraunce that entred into Bretayne with sir Charles of Bloys.

lesse than wyn. Than he caused them of the cytie to drawe abacke, as well as he myght, yet they were pursued so nere, that many were slayne and taken, mo than ii. C. of the burgesses of the towne, wherof therle of Montfort blamed sore sir Henry de Leon, that he caused the retrayt so sone: wherwith sir Henry was sore dyspleased in his mynde, and after that he wold no more come to theris counsell so often as he dyd before: many had marvell why he dyd so.

CAP. LXXII

Howe the erle Mountfort was taken at Nauntes, and howe he dyed.

A
S I hard reported, ther were certayne burgesses of the cite sawe howe their goodes went to wast, both without and within, and had of their children and frendes in prison, and douted that wors shulde come to them after. Than they advysed and spake togyned secretely, so that finally they concluded to treat with the lorde of France, so that they myght come to have peace, and to have their chyldren and frendes clerely delyvered out of prison. They made this treatie so secretely, that at laste it was agreed that they shulde have all the prisoners delyverd, and they to set opyn one of the gates, that the Frenche lorde myght entre, to take the erle Mountfort in the castell, without doyng of any maner of hurt to the cyte, or to thynhabytantes or goodes therin; some sayed this was purchased by the meanes and agrement of sir Henry de Leon, who had ben before one of the erles chiefe cousaylours. Thus as it was devysed so it was done: in a mornyng, the Frenche lorde entred, and went streyght to the castell, and brake opyn the gates, and ther toke therle Mountfort prisoner, and ledde hym clene out of the cytie into their felde, without doyng of any more hurt in the cyte. This was the yere of our lorde God M. CCC. xli. about the feest of all sayntes. Than the lorde of Fraunce entred into the cytie with great joye: and all the burgesses and other dyd fealtie and homage to the lorde Charles of Bloys, as to their ryght soverayn lorde, and there they taryed a thre dayes
SYR JOHN FROISSART

in gret feeste. Than sir Charles of Bloys was counselled to abyde ther, about the cytie of Nauntes, tyll the next somer. Howe the erle Mountfort was taken at Nauntes, and howe he dyed. The Louvre.

Nowe let us speke of the countesse, his wyfe, who had the courage of a man, and the hert of a lyon; she was in the cytie of Renes whanne her lorde was taken, and howbeit, that she had great sorowe at her hert, yet she valiantly reconforted her frendes and sounders, and shewed them a lytell son that she had, called John, and sayd, A syr, be nat to sore abashed of the erle my lorde, whom we have lost, he was but a man; se here my lytell chylde, who shal be, by the grace of God, his restorer, and he shall do for you all, and I have riches ynoogh, ye shall nat lacke, and I trust I shall purchase for suche a capitayne, that ye shal be all reconforted. Whan she had thus reconforted her frendes, and sounders, in Renes, than she went to all her other fortresses, and good townes, and ledde ever with her John, her yonge sonne, and dyd to them, as she dyd at Renes; and fortified all her garrisons of every thing that they wanted, and payed largely, and gave frely, where as she thought it well employed. Than she went to Hanybont, and ther she and her somme taryed all that wynter; often tymes she sent to vyset her garysons, and payed every man full well and truely their wages.

CAP. LXXIII

Howe the kyng of Englande the thyrde tyme made warre on the Scottes.

YE have harde here before that the siege beyng before Tourney, howe the lorde of Scotlande had taken agayne dyvers townes and fortresses fro thenglyssmen, such as they helde in Scotlande; ther were no mo remayning in thenglyssmens handes, but onely the castell of Esturmelyne, the cytie of Berwyke, and Rousburge. And
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXIII the Scottes lay styll at siege, with certayne Frenchmen with
them, such as kyng Philippe had sent thyder to helpe
them before Esturmelyne; and they within were so sore
constrayned, that they sawe well they coude nat long endure.

And when the kyng of Englane was retourned fro the
siege of Tourney, and came into his owne realme, he was
counselled to ryde towarde Scotlane, and so he dyd; he
rode thyderwarde bytwene Migelmis and Al sayntes, com-
maundyng every man to folowe hym to Berwyke; than
every man began to styrr, and to drawe thyder as they
were commaundyed. The kyng at last came to Yorke, and
ther taryed for his people: the lorde of Scotlane wer
enfourmed of the commyng of the kyng of Englane, where-
fore they made sorer assautes to the castell of Esturmelyne,
and constrayned so them within, with engyns and canons,
that they wer fayne to yelde up the castell, savyng their
lyves and membres, but noothyng they shulde cary away.

These tidynes came to the kyng of Englane where as he
was, thane he departed, and drewe towarde Esturmelyne,
and came to Newcastell upon Tyne, and ther lodged and
taryed more than a moneth, abyding propysyon for his
host, the which was put on the see, bytwene saynt Andrewes
tyde and All sayntes, but dyverse of their shyppes were
perysshed, for they had suche tempest on the see, that small
propysyon came thyder; some were driven into Holande, and
into Fryse,1 therby thenglyshe hoost had great defaute of
vytayls, and every thynge was dere, and wynter at hande,
so that they wyst nat wher to have forage; and in Scotlane,
the Scottes had put all their goodes into fortresses: and
the kyng of England had ther mo than vi. M. horsemen,
and xl. M. foteemen. The lorde of Scotland after their
wynning of Esturmelyne, they drue into the forestes of
Gedeours,2 and they understode well, howe the kyng of
England lay at Newcastell with a great nombre, to
brenne, and to exyle the realme of Scotlane. Than they
toke counsell what they shulde do; they thought themselfe
to small a company to mentayne the warr, seyng howe they
had contynued the warrs more than vii. yere, without heed
or captayne; and yet as than they coude perceyve no
socoure fro their owne kyng. Than they determyned to

---

1 Friesland.
2 Jedworth.
Syr John Froissart

sende to the kyng of Englane, a bysshopp and an abbot CAP. LXXIII
to desyre a true, the which messangers departed fro Scot-Howe the
lande, and came to Newcastell, wher they founde the
kyng of Eng-lande the
kyng of Eng-
ynge. These messangers showed to the kyngge and to his
counsaile the cause of their commyng; so than it was
agreed a wree to endure foure monethes, on the condycion
that they of Scotlant shulde sende suffycient embassadours
into France to kyng Davyd, that without he wolde come
within the moneth of May next folowing, so puysantly as
to resyst and defende his realme, els they clerely to yelde
themselye Englyshe, and never to take hym more for their
kyng. So then these two prelats retourne ayayne into
Scotlant, and incontyment, they ordyned to sende into
Fraunce, sir Robert Versay,1 and sir Symon Fresyll,2 and 1 Erskine.
two other knyghtes, to shewe to their kyngge their apoint-3 Fraser.
ment. The kyngge of Englane agreed the soner to this
truse, bycause his hoost lacked vytyall: so he came backe
ayayne, and sent every man home. The Scottsche messan-
gers went towarde Fraunc, and toke shyping at Dover.

Nowe kyngge Davyd, who had ben a seynge yere in France,
and knewe well that his realme was sore destroyed, thane he
toke leave of the Freche kyng, to go home into his owne
contre, to confort his people. So he toke shypping, with his
wyfe, and suche company as he had at a port, and dyde put
hymselfe under the guying of a maryer, Rychard Fla-
mont; and so he arvyed at a port of Moroyse,4 or ever 5 Montrose.
that any in Scotlant knewe the rof; nor he knewe nothyng
of the messangers that were gone into France to speke with
hym, nor they knewe nat of his retournyng home.

CAP. LXXIII

Howe kyng Davyd of Scotlant came with a
great hoost to Newcastell upon Tyne.

W

HAN that yong kyng Davyd of Scotlant was
come into his countrey, his men came about hym
with great joye and solemnpyte, and brought hym
to the towne of saynt Johns;4 thyder came peple fro all 4 Perth.
parties to se hym; and than every man shewed hym the
187
THE CRONYCLE OF

damages, and the destruction that kyng Edward and thenglyshmen had done in Scottlande; than he sayd, Well, I shal be well revenged, or els lose all my realme, and my lyfe in the payne. Than he sent messangers to all partes ferr and nere, desyryng every man to helpe hym in his busynesse; at his sendyng, thysder came therle of Orkeney, a great prince and a puysaunt, he had maryed the kynges suster. He brought a great nombre of men a warr with hym, and dyvers other lorde and knyghtes of Sovegne,1 of Melbegne,² and of Denmarche, some for love, and some for wages; so that whan they were all togider, they were a lx. M. men a fote; and on hackenayes a iii. M. armed after their maner. Whane they were all redy, they removed to go into Engelande, to do ther as moche hurt as they might, (for the truse was as than expyre, or els to fight with the kyng of Engelande, who had caused them to suffre moch dysease. The Scottes departed fro saynt Johannes towne, and went to Donfremelyn, and the next day, ther they passed a lytell arme of the see. Than they went with great dyligence and passed by Edenborowe, and after by Roubsurge, the which was as than Englysshe, but they made none assault ther bycause they wolde have none of their company hurt, nor to wast none of their artillery: they thought to do a greater dede, or they retourned into Scottlande. And so after, they passed nat ferre of fro Berwyke and went by without any assault gyveng, and so entred into the contrey of Northumberlande, and came to the ryver of Tyne, brennyng all the contrey rounde about them, and at last came to Newcastell upon Tyne; and ther he lay and all his people, about the towne that night: and in the morning, a certayne nombre of gentylmen that were in the towne, yssued out, to the nombre of CC. spere, to make a skry in the Scottyshe host; they dasshed into the Scottyshe host right on therle of Morets² tentes, who bare in his armour, szlyver, thre oreylles goulues: ther they toke hym in his bed, and selew many, or thooest was moved, and wan great pyllage; than they returned into the towne boldely, with great joye, and delvyverd therle Moret, as prisoner, to the captyayne of the castell, the lorde John Nevell. Whan the Scottes were up, they armed them, and ran lyke madde men

1 Sweden.
2 Norway.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

to the barryers of the towne, and made a great assaut, the
whiche endured longe, but lytell it avayled them, and they
lost ther many men; for ther were many good men of warr
within, who defended themself so wysely, that the Scottes
were fayne at last to withdrawe abacke to their losse.

CAP. LXXV

Howe kyng Davyd of Scotlande distroyed
the cytie of Dyrrame.¹

WHAN that king Davyd and his counsayle sawe
that his taryng about Newcastell was daunger-
ous, and that he coude wynne therby nother
profet nor honour, than he departed, and entred into the
contrey of the bysshoprike of Dyrram, and ther breet and
wasted all byfore them, and so came to the cyte of Dyrram,
and layed siege rounde about it, and made many great
assautes lyke madde men, bycause they had lost therle of
Morette; and they knewe well that ther was moche richesse
in the cytie, for all the contrey ther about was fledde
thyder: the Scottes made ingens and instrumentes to come
to the wall, to make the feercker assaut. And whan the
Scottes were gone fro Newcastell, thane sir John Nevyll
captayne there, mounted on a good horse, and toke a way
farre of fro the Scottes, and dyd so moche, that within fyve
dayes he came to Chyrtsay, wher as kyng Edwarde lay as
than: ther he shewed the king tidynge of the Scottes.
Than the kyng sende forth messangers into every part,
commaundynge every man, bytwene the age of lx. and xv. all
excuses layd a part, to drawe northward, and to mete hym
in that contrey to ayde and defende his contrey, that the
Scottes distroyed: than lorde, knyghtes, squyers, and all
other, drewe towarde the north. The kyng departed hym-
selfe hastily, and taryd for no man, and every man folowed
as well as they might. In the meane season, the Scottes
assaunted the cytie of Dyrrame, with ingens and other
instrumentes, so feersly that they within coude nat defende
themself, but that the cytie was wonne byforce, and robbed,
and cleene breet, and all maner of people put to deth with-

¹ Durham.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXV

How kyng Davyd destroyed the cytis of Dyrrame.

out mercy, men, women, and children, monkes, prestes, and channons, so that ther abode alanye no maner a person, house nor church, but it was distroyed; the whiche was great pytie so to distroy christen blode, and the churches of Godde, wherein that God was honoured and served.

CAP. LXXVI

Howe the Scottes besieged a castell of therle of Salysburies.

THAN king Davyd was counselled to drawe abacke along by the ryer of Tyne, and to drawe toward Carlyle; and as he went thyderward, he loged that nyght besyde a castel of therle of Salysburies, the whiche was well kept with men a warr; captayne therof was sir Wylyam Montagu, son to therle of Salysburis suster. The next day the Scottes dysloged to goe towards Carlyle, they had moch carayge with them, of such poyllage as they had won at Dyram. Whan syr Wylyam Montagu sawe how the Scottes passed by without restyng, than he with xl. with him yssued out a horsebacke, and folowed covertly the hynder trayne of the Scottes, who had horses so charged with bagage, that they might scant go any grete pace. And he overtoke them at thentrtyng into a wood, and set on them, and ther slewe and hurt of the Scottes mo than CC. and toke mo than sixscore horses charged with poyllage, and so led them toward the castell. The cry and brunt of the flight came to the heryng of syr Wylyam Duglas, who had the charge of the reregarde, and as than he was past the wood. Whan he sawe the Scottes came flyng over the dales and mountayns he had great marvell, and than he and all his company ran forth, and rested nat tylly they came to the fote of the castell, and mounted the hyll in hast; but or he came to the bayls, thenglyshmen were entred, and had closed the barryers, and put their pray in safte. Than the Scottes began to assayle feorsly, and they within defended them; ther these two Wylyams dyd what they might, ech to greve other: this assault endured so long, that all thooost came thyder, kyng and all. Whan the kyng and his coun-
sell sawe how his men were slayne, lyeng in the falde, and CAP. LXXVI
the assaylantes sore hurt, without wynning of any thynge. Howe the
than he commanded to cease thassaut, and to lodge; than Scottes
every man began te seke for his logyng, and to gader begisged a
togyder the deed men, and to dresse theym that were hurt.
The next day the kyng of Scottes commanded that every Salysbyrues.
man shulde be redy to assayle, and they within were redy to
defende: ther was a sore assaut, and a perylous: ther might
a ben sene many noble dedes on both partes. Ther was
within present the noble countesse of Salysbury, who was
as than reputed for the most sages and fayrest lady of all
England: the castell parteyned to her husbande therle of
Salisbury, who was taken prisoner, with the erle of Suffolke,
before Lyle in Flanders, as ye have harde before, and was
in prison as than in the chatelot of Parys. The kyng of
Englande gave the same castell to the sayd erle, when he
marayed first the sayd lady, for the prowes and gode servyce
that he had done before, whan he was called but sir
Wyllyam Montagu; this noble lady conforted them greatly
within, for by the regarde of such a lady, and by her swete
conforting, a man ought to be worth two men at nede.
This assaut dured long, and the Scottes lost many of their
men, for they adventured themselfe hardely, and Caryed
wood and tymbre, to have fylled the dykes, to thynent to
bring their engynes to the walles, but they within defended
themselfe so valyantly, that the assaylantes were fayne to
drawe abacke.

Than the kyng commanded the ingens to be wel kept
that night, and the next day to enforce the assaut; than
every man due to their lodging, except those that kept
thyngens. Some wept the deth of their frendes, other
conforted them that were hurt: they of the castell sawe
well, if kyng Davyd contynued his sege, how they shuld
have moche ado to defende them and their castell; wherfore
they toke counsell amonge them, to sende to kyng Edward,
who lay at Yorke, as it was shewed them, by suche prisoners
as they had taken of the Scottes. Than they loked among
them who shulde do the message, but they coude fynde none
that wolde leave the castell, and the presence of the fayre
lady to do that dede. So ther was among them great stryfe.

191
CAP. LXXVI

Than when the captayne sir Wylyam Montagu sawe that, he sayd, Sirs, I se well the trueth and good wyll that ye bere to my lady of this house, so that for the love of her, and for you all, I shall put my body in adventur to do this message, for I have suche trust in you, that ye shall right well defende this castell tyl I retourne agayne: and on thother syde, I have suche trust in the king, our soverayne lorde, that I shall shortly bring you suche socours, that shall cause you to be joyfull, and than I trust the kyng shall so rewarde you, that ye shal be content: of these wordes the countesse and all other wer right joyfull. And whan the night came the sayd sir Wylyam made hym redy, as prively as he might, and it happed so well for hym, that it rayned all night, so that the Scottes kept styll within their lodgynges. Thus at myndnight, sir Wylyam Montagu passed through thooost, and was nat sene, and so rode forth tyl it was day; than he met ii. Scottes, halfe a leage fro thost, drivynge before them two oxen and a cowe towardo thooost. Syr Wylyam knewe well they wer Scottes and set on them, and wounded them bothe, and slewe the catell, to thynent that they of thost shuld have none ease by them; than he sayd to the two hurt Scottes, Go your wayes, and say to your kyng, that Wylyam of Montague hath thus passed through his hoost, and is goyng to fetch ayde of the kyng of Englyande, and so departed. Than the same monnynge, the kyng of Scottes made a feere assaut, but nothing coude he wyn, and every day lightly they made assaut: than his counsell sawe how he dyd but lese his men, and that the kyng of England might well come theyder, or the castell were won. Thane they by one acorde counself their kyng to depart, sayeng, how the abyding ther, was nat for his profet, nor yet for his honour; and sayd, Sir, ye have honourably achied your enterprise, and have done great dispyte to the Enghlyshmen, in that ye have ben in this contre a xii. dayes, and taken and distroyed the ctye of Dyrrame; wherfore, sir, all thynges consortred, it were good nowe that ye retourned, and take with you your pyllage that ye have wonne, and another tyme ye may returne agayn whan it pleaseth you. The kyng, who wolde nat do agayn the opynyons of all his counsell, agreed to them,
sore agaynst his mynde: howbeit, the next mornying he dysloged, and all his host, and toke the way streyght to the great forest of Gedeours,1 there to tary at their ease, and to knowe what the kyng of Englande wolde do farther, other to goo backe agayne, or els to entre into Scotlande.

**CAP. LXXVII**

Howe the kyng of Englande was in amours with the countesse of Salisbury.

The same day that the Scottes departed fro the sayd castell, kyng Edward came thyder, with all his host, about noon, and came to the same place wher as the Scottes had loged, and was sore displeased that he founde nat the Scottes ther, for he came thyder in such hast that his horse and men wer sore traveled. Than he commaundde to lodge ther that nyght, and sayd, howe he wolde go se the castell, and the noble lady therin, for he had nat sene her sythe she was maryed before: than every man toke his logyng as he lyst. And assone as the kyng was unwarmed, he toke a x. or xii. knyghtes with hym, and went to the castell to salute the countesse of Salisbury, and to se the maner of the assautes of the Scottes, and the defence that was made agaynst them. Assone as the lady knewe of the kynges commyng, she set opyn the gates, and came out so richely be sene, that every man marveyled of her beauty, and coude nat cease to regarde her noblenes with her great beauty, and the gracious wordes and countenance that she made. Whan she came to the kyng, she knelyd downe to the yerth, thankyng hym of his socours, and so ledde hym into the castell, to make hym chere and honour, as she that coude ryght well do it: every man regarded her marvelusly; the king hymselfe coude nat witholde his regardyng of her, for he thought that he never sawe before, so noble, nor so fayre a lady: he was stryken therewth to the hert, with a sparcle of syne love, that endured longe after; he thought no lady in the worlde so worthy to be beloved as she. Thus they entred into the castell, hande in hande; the lady ledde hym first into the hall, and after into the chambre, nobly
THE CRONYCLE OF

aparelled; the kyng regarded so the lady that she was abasshed. At last he went to a wyndo to rest hym and so fell in a gret study; the lady went about to make chere to the lordes and knyghtes that were ther, and commanded to dresse the hall for dyner. When she had al devysed and commanded, thane she came to the kyng with a mery chere, who was in a gret study, and she sayd Dere syr, why do ye study so? for, your grace nat dyspleased, it aparteyneth nat to you so to do: rather ye shulde make good chere and be joyfull, seyng ye have chased away your enmies, who durst nat abyde you: let other men study for the remynant. Than the kyng sayd, A, dere lady, knowe for trouthe, that syth I entred into the castell, ther is a study come to my mynde, so that I can nat chuse but to muse, nor I can nat tell what shall fall therof; put it out of my herte I can nat. A sir, quoth the lady, ye ought always to make good chere, to confort therwith your peple: God hath aydeed you so in your beynes, and hath gyven you so great graces, that ye be the moste doubted and honoured prince in all christendome, and if the kyng of Scottes have done you any dyspyte or damage, ye may well amende it when it shall please you, as ye have done dyverse tymes or this; sir, leave your musynge and come into the hall, if it please you, your dyner is all redy. A, fayre lady, quoth the kyng: other thynges lyeth at my hert that ye knowe nat of: but surely the swete behavynge, the perfyt wysedom, the good grace, noblenes, and excellent beauty that I se in you, hath so sore surprised my hert, that I can nat but love you, and without your love I am but deed. Than the lady sayde, A, ryght noble prince, for Goddes sake mocke nor tempt me nat: I can nat byleva that it is true that ye say, nor that so noble a prince as ye be, wold thynke to dyshonoure me and my lorde, my husband, who is so valyant a knight, and hath done your grace so gode servyce, and as yet lyethe in prison for your quarell; certeiny syr, ye shulde in this case have but a small prayse, and nothyng the better therby: I had never as yet such a thought in my hert, nor I trust in God never shall have, for no man lyveng; if I had any suche intencyon, your grace ought nat all onely to blame me, but also to punyshe my body, ye and by true justicce to be dismembred.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Therwith the lady departed fro the kyng, and went into the hall to hast the dyner; than she returned agayne to the kyng and brought some of his knyghtes with her, and sayd, Sir, yf it please you to come into the hall, your knyghtes abideth for you to washe, ye have ben to long fastynes. Than the kyng went into the hall and washt, and sat down amonget his lorde, and the lady also; the kyng ete but lytell, he sat stylly musyng, and as he durst, he cast his eyen upon the lady: of his sadnesse his knyghtes had marvell, for he was nat acustomede so to be; some thought it was bycause the Scottes were scaped fro hym. All that day the kyng taryed ther, and wylst nat what to do: somtyme he ymagned that honour and trouth defended him to set his hert in such a case, to dyshonour such a lady, and so true a knyght as her husband was, who had alwayes well and truely served hym. On thother part, love so constrayned hym, that the power theroff surmounted honour and trouth: thus the kyng debated in hymself all that day, and all that night; in the mornynge he arose and dysloged all his hoost, and drewe after the Scottes, to chase them out of his realme. Than he toke leave of the lady, sayeng, My dere lady, to God I commende you tyll I returne agayne, requireyth you to adyseye you otherwyse than ye have sayd to me. Noble prince, quoth the lady, God the father glorieus be your conduct, and put you out of all vylayne thoughtes; sir, I am, and ever shal be redy to do your grace servyce to your honour and to myne. Therwith the kyng departed all abassshed; and soo folowed the Scottes tyll he came to the cyte of Berwyke, and went and lodged within iii. leases of the forest of Gedeor, wher as kyng Davyd and all his company were entred, in trust of the great wyldernesse. The kyng of England taryed ther a iii. dayes, to se if the Scottes wold yssue out to fight with hym; in these thre dayes ther were dyvers skirmysashes on bothe parties, and dyvers slayne, taken, and sore hurte amonge the Scottes. Sir Wylyam Duglas was he that dyd moost trouble to thenglyshemen; he bare azure, a comble sylver, thre starres goules.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXVIII

Howe therle of Salysbury and therle Moret were delyverd out of prison by exchaunge.

IN these sayd thre days ther were noble men on bothe parties that treatid for a peace to be had bytwene these two kynge; and their treatie toke suche effect, that a trewse was agreed to endure two yere, so that the Frenche kynge wolde therto agree; for the kyng of Scottes was so sore alyed to the Frenche kyng, that he might take no peace without his consent; and if so be the Frenche kyng wold nat agree to the peace, than the truse to endure to the first day of May folowyng. And it was agreed that therle of Morette shulde be quyte for his prisonment, if the kyng of Scottes coude do so moche to purchase with the Frenche kyng, that therle of Salisbury might in lyke maner be quyte out of prison, the whiche thynge shulde be done before the feest of saynt John of Baptyst next after. The kyng of Englane agreed the soner to this truse, bycause he had warre in France, in Gascoyne, in Poyctou, in Xaynton, in Bretaygne: and in every place he had men of warre at his wages. Than the kyng of Scottes sent great messangers to the French kyng, to agre to this truse; the Frenche kyng was content, seyng it was the desyre of the kyng of Scottes: than therle of Salisbury was sent into Englane, and the kyng of England sent incontyment therle Moret into Scotlant.

CAP. LXXIX

Howe sir Charles du Bloys with dyvers lorde of Fraunce toke the cyttie of Renes in Bretayne.

IT is to be knowne that whan the duke of Normandy, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Alanson, the duke of Burbon, therle of Bloys, the constable of Fraunce, therle of Guynes his sonne, sir James de Burbone, sir Loyes of Spaygne, with other lorde and knyghtes of Fraunce, whan they were departed out of Bretayne, and had conquered
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the stronge castell of Chastoneaux, and the cyte of Nantes, and taken therel of Mountfort and delyverd hym to the Frenche kyng, who had put hym in prison in the castell of Loure in Parys; and syr Charles of Bloys being in Nantes and the contrey obeyed to hym rounde about, abydinge the somer season, to make better warr than in wynter. Whan the swete season of somer approched, the lorde of Fraunce and dyvers other, drue towarde Bretayne with a great hoost to ayde sir Charles de Blois, to recover the resydue of the duchy of Bretayne: they founde syr Charles of Bloys in Nantes; than they determynd to lay sege to Renes; the countesse of Mountfort had well prevented the mater, and had set ther for captayne sir Wylyam of Cadudall Breton; the lordes of France came thryer, and dyd moche trouble with assautes: howbeit, they within defended themselfe so valiantly, that their enemys loste more than they wanne. Whan the countesse of Mountfort knewe that the lorde of Fraunce were come into Bretayne with suche a puysance, she sende sir Amery of Clysson into Englande, desyryng socourse of the kyng, on the condycion that therel of Mountfortes son and heyre, shuld take to wyf one of the kynges doother, and shulde be called duches of Bretayne. The king of England was as than at London makyng chere to therle of Salisbury, who was newe come out of prison. Whan this sir Amery of Clysson was come to the kyng, and had made relacyon of his message, the kyng graunted his request, and commaundedyd sir Water of Manny, to take with hym as many men of warr as sir Amery desyred, and shortly to make them redy to go into Bretayne, to ayde the countesse of Mountfort, and to take with him a iii. M. archers of the best. Thus sir Water and sir Amery toke the see, and with them went the two brotherne of Lyndall, sir Loys, and sir John, the Haz of Brabant, sir Hubert of Fresnoy, sir Aleyne Syrefound, and dyvers other and a vi. M. archers; but a great tempet toke them on the see, and a contrary wynde, wherfore they abode on the see xi. dayes. All this season the lorde of France, with sir Charles de Bloys, kepte styll the sege before Renes, and sore constryayed them within, so that the burgesses of the towne wold gladly have taken apoyntment, but their captayne,
THE CRONYCLE OF

sir Wylyam of Cadudall wold in no wyse agree therto. When the burgesses and the commons of the towne had endured moche payne and sawe no socours commyng fro no partie, they wold have yelded up the towne: but the captayne wolde nat. When they sawe that, finally they toke hym and put hym in prison and made covenuant with sir Charles du Bloys to yeld up the towne the next day, on the condycion that all such as were of the countes part myght go their wayes whethyr they lyst without danger or trouble; the lord Charles de Bloys dyd graunt their desyre. Than the cytie of Renes was gyven up, the yere of our lord M. iii. C. xlii. in the beginnyng of May. Sir Wylyam of Quadudall wolde nat tary ther, but went streyght to Hanybont, to the countesse of Mountfort, who as than had hard no tidynge of sir Amery of Clysson, nor of his company.

CAP. LXXX

Howe sir Charles du Bloys besieged the countesse of Mountfort in Hanybont.

W HAN the cytie of Renes was gyven up, the burgesses made their homage and fealtie to the lord Charles of Bloys. Than he was counselled to go and lay siege to Hanybonte, wher as the countesse was, sayeng, that therle beyng in prison, yf they myght gette the countesse and her sonne, it shulde make an ende of all the warre: than they went all to Hanybont, and layed siege therto, and to the castell also, as ferr as they might by lande. With the countesse in Hanybont, ther was thebysshop of Leon in Bretayne, also ther was sir Yves of Tribiquedy, the lorde of Landreman, sir Wylyam of Quadudall, and the Chatelayne of Guyngnape, the two bretherne of Quyreth, sir Henry and sir Olyver of Pennefort, and dyvers other. Than the countesse and her company understode that the Frenchmen were comyng to lay siege to the towne of Hanybont, than it was commaunded to sounde the watche bell alarm, and every man to be armed and drawe to their defence. Than sir Charles and the Frenchmen came nere to the towne, they commaunded to lodge ther
SYR JOHN FROISSART

that nyght. Some of the yong lusty companyons came CAP. LXXX
skirmyshying to the barrers, and some of them within Howe sir
issuued out to theym, so that ther was a great affray; but Charles
the Genowayes and Frenchmen loste more than they wanne:
whan night came on, every man drewe to their lodgynge.
The next day the lorde toke counsayle to assayle the
barrers, to se the maner of them within: and so the thyrde
day they made a great assaute to the barrers, fro mornynge
tyll it was noone: than the assaylantes drewe abacke sore
beaten, and dyvers slayne. Whan the lorde of Fraunce
sawe their men drawe abacke, they were sore dyspleased,
and caused the assaute to begynne agayne, more ferser than
it was before, and they within defended themselfe valiantly.
The countesse herselfe ware harness on her body and rode
on a great courser fro strete to strete, desyringe her peple to
make good defence: and she caused damoselles, and other
women, to cutte shorte their kyrtels, and to cary stones and
pottes full of chalk to the walles, to be cast downe to their
ennemyes. This lady dyd ther an hardy enterprise; she
mounted up to the heght of a towre, to se how the French-
men were orderd without; she sawe howe that all the
lordes, and all other people of thost, were all gone out of
ther felde to thassaute; than she toke agayne her courser,
armed as she was, and caused thre hundred men a horsbacke
to be redy, and she went with theym to another gate, wher
as there was non assaute. She issuued out and her company,
and dashed into the Frenche lodgynges, and cutte downe
tentes, and set fyre in their lodgynges: she founde no
defence ther, but a certayne of varlettes and boyes, who ran
away. Whan the lordes of France loked behynde them,
and sawe their lodgynges a fyre, and harde the cry and
noysy ther, they retourne to the felde, cryeng, Treason,
treason, so that all thassaute was left. Whan the countesse
sawe that, she drewe togyder her company, and whan she sawe
she could nat entre agayne into the towne without great
damage, she toke another way and went to the castell of
Brest, the whiche was not ferr thems. Whan sir Loys of
Spayne, who was marshal of the host, was come to the
felde, and sawe their lodgynges brennyng, and sawe the
countesse and her company goynge away, he folowed after
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXX

Howe sir Charles du Bloys besieged the countesse of Mountfort in Hanybont.

her with a great nombre: he chased her so nere, that he slewe and hurte dyverse of theym that were behynde, ywell horsed; but the countesse and the mooste parte of her company rode so well, that they came to Breste, and there they were receyved with great joye. The next day the lordes of Fraunce, who hadde lost their tentes and their provysions, thanne tooke counsayle to lodge in bowers of trees, more nerer to the towe; and they had great marveyle when they knewe that the countesse herselfe had done that enterpryse. They of the towne wyst nat wher the countesse was become, wherof they were in great trouble, for it was fyve dayes or they harde any tidynge. The countesse dyd so moche at Brest, that she gate togycder a v. hundred spers, and than about mydnyght she departed fro Brest, and by the somne ryysing, she came along by the one syde of the hoost, and came to one of the gates of Hanybont, the which was opyned for her, and therin she entred and all her company, with gret noyse of trumpettes and canayrs; wherof the Frenche hoost had great marveyle, and armed them and ran to the towe to assayt it, and they within redy to defende. Ther began a feere assaye and enduretyll noone, but the Frenchmen lost more than they within. At noone thassayt ceased: than they toke counsell that sir Charles du Bloys shulde go fro that sege, and gyve assaye to the castell of Alroy,1 the which kynge Arthure made; and with hym shulde go the duke of Burbone, therle of Bloys, the marshall of France, sir Robert Bertrande: and that sir Henry de Leon, and part of the Genevoys, and the lorde Loyys of Spayne, and the vycont of Robayne, with all the Spanyerdes, shulde abyde styll before Hanybont; for they sawe well they could have no profet to assayle Hanybont any more; but they sent for xii. great engys to Renes, to thynent to cast into the towe and castell day and night. So they deryded their host: the one styll before Hanybont, the other with sir Charles of Bloys before Aulroy. They within Alroy were well fortifyyed and were a two C. companyons, able for to mayntayne the warre; and sir Henry of Penfort, and sir Olyuer his brother, were chyfe capithaynes ther. A foure leages fro that castell was the good towe of Vannes, parteynyng to the countesse, and capithayne ther was sir

1 Aulroy.
Syr John Froissart

Geoffrey of Malatrav. Nat farre thens also was the good
towne of Guyngeap, the cathelayne of Dynant was Howe sir
captayne ther; he was at Hanybont with the countesse,
and had lefte in the towne of Dynant his wyfe and his
children, and had lefte ther captyayne in his stede Raynolde
his son. Bytwene these two townes stode a stronge castell,
parteynyng to sir Charles du Bloys, and was well kept with
soudyours, Burgonyons: captayne ther was sir Gerarde of
Maulayne, and with hym another knyght, called Pyer
Portbeufé. They wasted all the contrey about them and
constrayned sore the sayd two tounes, for ther coude
nother marchandyse nor provisyon entre into any of them
but in great danger. On a day they wolde ryde towards
Vannes, and another day towards Guyngeap; and on a
day, sir Raynolde of Dynant layed a busshment, and the
same day sir Gerarde of Maulayne rode forthe and had
taken a xv. marchantes, and all their goodes, and was
driving of them towards there castell, called Rochprion,
and so fell in the busshment. And ther sir Raynolde of
Dynant toke sir Gerarde prisoner and a xxv. of his com-
pany, and rescued the marchantes and ledde forthe there
prisoners to Dynant, wherof sir Raynolde was moche praysed
and well worthy.

Nowe let us speake of the countesse of Mountfort, who
was besieged in Hanybont, by sir Loyes of Spaye, who kept
the siege ther, and he had so broken and brused the wallas
of the tounve with his engins, so that they within began to
be abasshed. And on a day the bysshope of Leon spake with
sir Henry of Leon his nephue, by whom, as it was sayd,
that therle Mountfort was taken. So longe they spake
togyder, that they agreed that the bysshope shulde do
what he coude to cause the company within to agré to yeld
up the town and castell to sir Charles de Bloys, and sir
Henry de Leon, on thother syde, shuld purchase pece for
them all of sir Charles de Bloys, and to lese nothyng of
their goodes. Thus the bysshope entred agayne into the
towne: the countes incontynent doute of some yvell
purchase. Than she desyred the lordes and knightes that
were ther, that for the love of God they shulde be in no
dout; for she sayd she was in suretie that they shuld have
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXX

Howe sir Charles du Bloys besiged the countesse of Mountfort in Hanybont.

socours within thre dayes. Howbeit, the byshope spake so moch and shewed so many reasons to the lordes, that they were in a great trouble all that night. The next morning they drewe to counsell agayne, so that they wer nere of acorde to have gyven up the towne, and sir Henry was come nere to the towne, to have taken possession therof. Than the countesse loked downe along the see, out at a wyndo in the castell, and began to smyle for great joy that she had, to se the socours commyng, the which she had so long desyred. Than she cryed out aloude, and sayd twyse, I se the socours of Englanede commyng. Than they of the towne ran to the walles, and sawe a great nombre of shyppes, great and small, fresshly decked, commyng towarde Hanybont: they thought well it was the socours of Englanede, who had ben on the see ix. dayes, by reason of contrary wyndes.

CAP. LXXXI

Howe sir Water of Manny brought thenglysshmen into Bretayne.

WHAN the seneshall of Guynngape, sir Perse of Tricyquedy, sir Galeran of Landreman, and the other knyghtes, sawe these socours commyng, than they sayd to the byshoppes, Sir, ye may well leave your treaty: for they sayd they were nat content as than to folowe his counsayle. Than the byshoppes sayd, Sirs, than our company shall depart, for I will go to hym that hath moost right as me semeth; than he departed fro Hanibont, and defyed the countesse and all her ayders, and so went to sir Henry de Leon, and shewed hym howe the mater went. Than sir Henry was sore displeased, and caused incontynt to rere up the grettest ingens that they had nere to the castell, and commande that they shulde nat sease to cast day and night: than he departed thens and brought the byshoppe to sir Loys of Spayne, who receyved hym with great joye, and so dyd sir Charles of Bloys. Than the countesse dressed up halles and chambers, to lodge the lordes of Englanede that were commyng, and dyd sende 202
Syr John Froissart

Agaynst them right nobly. And whan they wer alande, she came to them with great reverence, and feasted them the beest she might, and thanked them right humbly, and caused all the knyghtes and other to lodge at their ease in the castell, and in the towne: and the nexte day she made them a great feest at dyner. All night and the nexte day also, the ingens never ceased to cast: and after dyner sir Gautier of Mannya, who was chefe of that company, demanded of the state of the towne, and of the hoost without, and sayd, I have a great desyre to yssue out, and to breke downe this great ingen that standeth so nere us, if any wolle folowe me. Than sir Perse of Trpsyquidy sayde, howe he wolde nat sayle hym at this his first begynning, and so sayd the lorde of Landreman. Than they armed them, and so they yssued out privelie at a certayne gate, and with them a iii. hundred archers, who shotte so holly togyder, that they that kept the ingen feldde away; and the men of armes came after the archers, and slew dyeverse of them that feldde, and bete down the great engyn, and brake it all to peaces. Thane they ranne in amonge the tentes and logynges, and set fyre in dyeverse places, and slew and hurt dyevers, tyll the hoost began to styre; than they withdrue fayre and easely, and they of the hoost ranne after them lyke madde men. Than sir Gautier sayd, Let me never be beloved with my lady, without I have a course with one of these folowers; and therwith tourned his spere in the rest, and in likeweys so dyd the two bretherne of Lendall, and the Haz of Brabant, sir Yves of Trpsyquidy, sir Galeran of Landreman, and dyeverse other companyons. They ran at the first comers: ther myght well a ben legges sene tourned upwardle; ther began a sore medlynge, for they of the hoost alwayes encreased, wherfore it behoved thenglyshmen to withdrewa towarde ther fortresse; ther might well a ben sene on bothe parties many noble dedes, takyng and rescyng. The Englyshmen drewe sagely to the dykes and ther made a stall, tyll all their men wer in savegad: and all the resydue of the towne yssued out to rescue their company, and caused them of the hoost to recule bycke: so whan they of the host sawe how they coude do no good, they drewe to their lodgynges, and they of the fortresse in likeweys to
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXXI

Howe sir
Water of
Manny
brought
thenglymah-
man into
Bretayne.

their lodgynge. Than the countesse descendyd downe fro
the castell with a gladde chere, and came and kyst sir
Gaultier of Manny, and his companyons one after another,
two or thre tymes, lyke a valyant lady.

CAP. LXXXII

 Howe the castell of Conquest was wonne
two tymes.

THE next day sir Loys of Spayne called to counsell
the vycont of Rohayne, the bysshoppe of Leon, the
lorde Henry of Leon, and the master of the Gene-
voys, to know ther advyse what was best to do; they sawe
well the towne of Hanybont was marveylously strong, and
greatly socoured by meanes of tharchers of Englande: they
thought their tyme but lost to abyde there, for they coude
nat se howe to wynne any thynge ther; than they all
agreed to dyslodge the nexte day, and to go to the castell
of Alroy,1 where sir Charles of Bloys lay at siege. The next
day betymes they pulled downe their lodgynge, and drewe
thyder, as they were purposed; and they of the towne made
great cryeng and showtyng after them, and some yssued out
to adventure themselfe, but they were some put abacke agayne,
and lost some of their company, or they coude entre agayne
into the towne. Whan sir Loys of Spayne came to sir
Charles of Bloys, he shewed hym the reason why he left the
sege before Hanybont. Than it was ordayned that sir Loys
of Spayne, and his company, shulde go and ley siege to
Dynant, the which was nat closed, but with pales, water,
and maresse; and as sir Loyses went towarde Dynant, he
came by a castell called Conquest: and captayne ther for
the countesse was a knyght of Normandy, called sir Mencon,
and with hym dyvers soudyers. Sir Loys came thyder and
gave a great assaut, and they within defended them so well,
that thassaut endured tyll mydnight, and in the morning it
began agayn; thassaylantes persed so nere that they came
to the wall and made a great hole through, for the dykes
were of no deppesse, and so byforce they entred, and alewe
all them within the castell, except the knyght whome they
SYR JOHN FROISSART

1342

CAP.
LXXXII

Howe the castell of Conquest was wonne two tymes.

take prisoner, and stablysshed ther a newe Chatelayne, and a x. soudyers with hym: than sir Loyes departed, and went and layed seige to Dynaunt. The countesse of Mountfort had knowledge Howe sir Loyes of Spayne was assautying of the castell of Conquest: than she sayd to sir Water of Manny and his company, that if they might rescue that castell, they shulde achyve great honour. They all agreed therto and departed the next morning fro Hanybont, so that ther abode but fewe behynde in the towne; they rode so fast, that about noone they came to the castell of Conquest, wherein was as than the Frenche garyson for they had won it the day before. Whan sir Water of Manny sawe that, and Howe that sir Loyes of Spayne was gone, he was sory bycause he might nat fight with hym, and sayd to his company, Sirs, I wyll nat departe hens, tyl I se what company is yander within the castell, and to knowe Howe it was wonne. Than he and all his made them redy to the assaut, and the Frenchmen and Spanyardes sawe that, they defended theymselfe as well as they might; the archers helde them so short, that thenglysshmen aprochd to the walles, and they found the hole in the wall, wherby the castell was won before, and by the same place they entred, and slew all within, excepte x. that were taken to mercy; than thenglysshmen and Bretons drue agayne to Hanybont, they wolde set no garyson in Conquest, for they sawe well it was nat to be holden.

CAP. LXXXIII

Howe sir Loyes of Spayne toke the towne of Dynant and of Gerande.

NOWE let us retourne to sir Loys of Spayne, who besieged the towne of Dynant in Breteyne, and than he cause to be made lytell vessels to make assautes, bothe by water and by lande: and whan the burgesses of the towne sawe Howe they were in danger to lese their lyves and goodes, they yelded themself agayne the wyll of their capten, sir Raynalt Guyngnap, whom they slew in the myddes of the market place, bycause he wolde nat consent to them. And whan sir Loyes of Spayne
had been there two days, and taken fealtie of the burgesses and set ther a newe capyten, a squyer called Gerard of Maulyne, whom they founde ther as prisoner, and the lorde Pyers Fortbeufe with hym, than they went to a great towne on the see syde, called Gerand; they layd siege thereto, and founde therby many vessels and shyppes laded with wyne, that marchantes had brought thryder fro Poyctou and Rochell, to sell: the marchantes anon had solde their wynes, but they were but yvell payed. Than sir Loys caused some of the Spanyardes and Genevoys to entre into these shyppes, and the next day they assayed the towno bothe by lande and by water, so that they within coude nat defend themselfe, but that they were lightly wonne by force, and the town robbed, and all the people put to the swerde without mercy, men, women, and chylldren: and fyve churches burn and vyolated. Wherof sir Loys was sore dyspleased, and caused xxiiii. of them that dyd the dede, to be hanged for their labours; ther was moche treasoure won, so that every man had more than he coude here away, for it was a riche towno of marchandyse. Whan this towno was won, they wyst nat whydor to go farther; than sir Loys of Spayn, and with hym sir Othes Dorne, and certayne Geno-wayes and Spanyardes entred into the shyppes to adventure along by the see syde, to se yf they might wyne any thynge ther. And the vycont of Rohayne, the bysshoppe of Leon, sir Henry of Leon bis nephue, and all the other retourned to thooost, to sir Charles of Bloys who lay styll before the castell of Auloy; and ther they founde many knytges and lordses of Franchise, who were newlye come thryder, as sir Loys of Poycters, therle of Valence, therle of Acerre, therle of Porcien, therle of Joigny, the erle of Bolayne, and dyverse other that kyng Philipp had sent thryder, and some that came of their owne good wylles, to serve sir Charles of Bloys. As than the strong castell of Auloy was nat wonne, but ther was suche famyn within, that vii. dayes before they had eten all their horses. And the lorde Charles de Bloys wolde nat take them to mercy, without he might have them simpley to do his pleasur; and whan they within sawe no other remedy, secretely in the night they yssued out, and by the wyll of God went through thooost on the one syde: yet
Syr John Froissart

Some were parcyved and slayne, but sir Henry of Pennefort, and sir Olyver his brother, scape by a lyttle wod that was therby, and went streight to Hanybont to the countesse. So thus wan sir Charles of Bloyes the castell of Alroy, whan he had layne at siege x. wekes; than he newly fortified the place, and set therin newe captayns and men Dynant and of warr. Than he departed and went and layed siege to of Gerard. Vannes, wherin sir Geffray of Maletrayt was captayne; the next day certeyne soudyers of the countesses of Mountfort, beyng in the town of Ploymel, yssued out on the hope somewhat to wynde, and came sodenly in the mornynge into the host of sir Charles de Bloys. But they adventured themselfe so farr that they were closed in, and lost many of their folkes, and thoter fledde away and were chased to the gates of Ploymel, the whiche was nat fere of fro Vannes: and whan they of the hoost were retournd fro the chase, incontyment they made assaut to Vannes, and byforce wanne they bayles; hard to the gate of the cyte ther was a sore skirmyssh, and many hurt and slayne on bothe parties, the assaut endured tyll it was night: than ther was a truse taken to endure all the next day. The burgesses the next day yeelded up the town, whethyr the captayne wolde or nat, who whan he sawe it wold be none otherwys, departed out of the town as secretly as he coude, and went to Hanybont: so sir Charles of Bloys, and the Frenchmen entred into Vannes, and taryed ther fyve dayes; than they went and layd siege to another cytie called Traiz.

CAP. LXXXIII

Howe sir Water of Manny dysconfitcd sir Loyes of Spayne in the feld of Camperle. Now let us returne to sir Loyes of Spayne, who whan he was at the porle of Gerard by the see syde, he and his company sayled forth tyll they came into Bretayn bretonaunt, to a port called Camperle, right nere to Quyprercoryne and to saynt Mathue of Fyne Portern; than they yssued out of the shyppe and landed, and brent all the countrey about, and gate moche rychesse,
the which they conveyed into their shyppes. Whan sir Gaultye of Manny, and sir Arnold\(^1\) of Clysson understode those tidynge, they determyned to go thynder, and shewed their myndes to sir Gyles of Trabyquedy, and to the Cathe-
layne of Guynynape, the lorde of Landreman, sir Wyllyam of Caducall,\(^2\) the two brethren of Peneforde, and to the
other knyghtes that were ther in Hanybont, and all they
agreed to go with good wylls. Than they toke their shyppe,
and toke with theym a thre thousande archers, and so sayled
forthe tyll they came to the port wher as the shyppes of sir
Loys of Spayne lay. Incontynent they toke theym and
slew euall that were within theym; and they founde in them
suche rychesse that they had marvell therof; than they
toke lande and went forthe and brent dyvers townes and
houses before them, and departed themselfe into thre batayls,
to the intent the soner to fynde their enemys, and left a
thre hundred archers to kepe their shyppes, and that they
had wonne: than they sette on their way in thre partes.
These tidynge anone came to sir Loys of Spayne; than he
drew togyder all his company, and withdrew backe toward
his shyppes in great hast, and encountered one of the thre
batayls; than he sawe well he must nedes fyght; he sette
his men in order, and made newe knyghtes, as his nephue
called Alphons. Than sir Loys sette on fiersly, and at the
first renounter many were overthrown and likely to have
ben dyscomfyted, and the other two batels had nat come on:
for by the cry and noys of the people of the contrey, they
drewed thynder; than the batayle was more feerse. Theng-
lyashe archers shutte so holly togyder, that the Genevoyes
and Spanyardes wer dyscomfited, and all slayne, for they of
the contrey fell in with staves and stones, so that sir Loys
had moche ado to scape, and dyd flee to the shyppes: and
of vi. M. there scape with hym but thre hundred, and his
nephue was slayne; and whan he came to the shyppes he
coulde nat entre, for the archers of England kept hym of:
so he was fayne with grete jeopardy to take a lytell shyp
called lyque, and suche of his company as he coude get
to hym, and sayled away as fast as he might. Whan sir
Gaulter and his company came to the shyppes, they entred
into the best ship they had, and folowe in the chase of sir

---
\(^1\) Aymery.
\(^2\) Oudonald.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Loyes of Spayne, who ever fledde so fast before them, that they coude nat overtake hym. Sir Loyes at last toke port at Redon, and he and all his entred into the towne, but he taryed nat there. For incontyntent thenglyshmen landed at the same place, so that sir Loyes and his company were fayne to get such horses as they might, and rode thens to Renes, the which was nat ferre thens, and such as were yvell horsed, were fayne to fall in the handes of their enemeyes, so that sir Loyzs entred into Renes, and thenglyshmen and Bretons retorned to Redone and there lay all nyght. The nexte day they toke agayne the see, to sayle to Hanybont to the countesse of Mountfort, but they had a contrary wynde, so that they were fayne to take lande a thre leages fro Dynant; than they toke their way by lande, and wasted the cuntrye about Dynant, and tooke horses, suche as they coude get, some without sadys, and so came to Rochprion. Than sir Gaultier of Manny sayd, Sirs, yf our company were nat so sore traveled, I wolde gyve assault to this castell; the other knyghtes answered hym, and sayd, Sir, set on at your pleasure, for we shall nat forsake you to dye in the quarell: and so they al went to the assault. Than Gerarde of Maulyn who was captayne ther, made good defence, so that there was a perylouse assault: sir Johan Butler, and sir Mathewe of Fresnoy ¹ were sore hurte with many other.

CAP. LXXXV

Howe sir Gaultier of Manny toke the castell of Gony in the forest.

THIS Gerarde of Maulyn hadde a brother called Rengne ² of Maulyn, who was captayne of a lytel ³ fortresse therby, called Fauet; and whane he knewe that thenglyshmen and Bretons were assayling of his brother at Rochprion, to thentent to ayde his brother, he yssued out and toke with hym a xl. companyons. And as he came thysterward through a fayre medowe by a wood syde, he founde certayne Englyshmen and other, lyeng there hurt: he sette on them, and toke them prisoners, and ledde them to Fauet hurt as they were, and some fledde to sir

¹ Fresnoy.

² Rengne.

³ Lytle.
THE CRONYCLE OF

Water of Menny, and shewed hym the case; than he ceased
the assault, and he and all his company, in great haste
shewed them that ledde the prisoners to Fauet, but he
could not overtake them, so that Regny and his prisoners
were entred into the castell. Than they glisslyshmen, as sore
trayveled as they were, made ther a gret assault, but notnyng
could they wrothe, they were so well defended, and also it
was late: they lay ther all night, to thentent to assayle the
castell agayn in the morning. Gerarde of Maulyn knewe
all this: he take his horse in the night, and rode all alone
to Dynant, and was ther a lytell before day; than he shewed
all the case to the lorde Pyers Portbeufe, capitayne of
Dynant; and asoon as it was day, he assembled all the
burgesses of the town: in the common hall, and ther Gerarde
of Maulyn shewed them the mater, in suche wyse, that
they were all content to go forth, and so armed them and
went towards Fauet with a sise thousand men, of one and
other. Sir Gaultier of Menny knewe therof by a spye;
these they counsylled togyder and consydred, that it were
great danger for them if they of Dynant shulde come on
them on the one syde, and sir Charles of Blois and his
company on the other syde, so they might be enclose; than
they agreed to leave their companions in prisone tyl another
tyme, that they might amende it. And as they returned
towards Neveuchet, they came to a castell called Gony la
Franco, the which was yielded up to sir Charles of Bloys, a
p欷on or twenbefore. Than sir Gaultier sayde howe he wolde
go no further, as sore trayveled as he was, tylly he had made
some matter to that castell, to se the demeanynge of them within;
that they made a fierce assault, and they within quickly
defended themselfe. Sir Gaultier encouraged his company
and was ever one of the formast, in so moche that the
soldiers shulde so quycckely and so close togyder, that ther
was ever Janet appere at theire defence: sir Gaultier dyd so
master that parte of the dyke was fullled with bushes and
were w: that they came to the walles with pyckaxes, and
other instruments, and anone made a great hole through
the wal, and ther they entred perforce, and slewe all they
saw within, and lodged ther the night, and the next day
they went to Neveuchet.
WHAN the countesse knewe of their commyng, she came and mette them and kyssed and made them great chere, and caused al the noble men to dyne with her in the castell. Nowe in this season, sir Charles of Bloys had wonne Vannes and lay at sege at Carahes. The countes of Montfort, and sir Gaultier of Mannon, sent certayne messangers to the kyng of Engelande, signyfieng hym howe sir Charles of Bloys, and the lordes of France had conquered Vannes, Renes, and dyvers other good townes and castells in Bretaygne, and was likely to wynne all, without he were shortly resysted. These messangers arryved in Cornewall and rode to Wyndesore to the kyng.

Nowe lette us speke of sir Charles of Bloys, who had so sore constrayned with assautes and ingens, the towne of Carahes, that they yelded theymselfe up to sir Charles, and he receyved them to mercy, and they sware to hym homage and fealtie, and toke hym for their lorde: and ther he made newe officers, and taryed ther a fyftene dayes: than they determined to go and ley siege to Hanybont, yet they knewe well the towne was well fortifyed with sufficyent proviason. And so thyder they went and layed there siege, and the fourth day after, thyder came sir Lloys of Spayne, who had layen in the towne of Renes a sixe wekes, in helynge of suche hurtes as he had; he was well receyved there, for he was a knyght moche honoured, and wel beloved among them. The Frenche company dayly encreasde, for ther wer dyvers lordes and knyghtes of France were goyng into Spayne warde, for suche warres as was bytwene the kynges of Spayne and the kyng of Granade Sarasyne; and as these knyghtes passed through Poyoctou, and harde of these warres in Bretayyne, [they] drewe that way. Sir Charles of Bloyes had rayred up agaynst Hanybont, a fyftene or sixtene great engyns, the whiche caste into the towne many a great stone;
THE CRONYCLE OF

but they within set nat moch therby, for they were well defended there agaynste them: and somtyme they wolde come to the walles, and wyme them in deryson, sayeng, Go and seke up your company, whiche resteth in the feldes of Camperle: 1 wherof sir Loys of Spayne and the Genowayes had great dyspite.

CAP. LXXXVII

Howe sir John Butler and sir Hubert of Fresnoy were rescued fro deth before Hanybont.

O

N a day sir Loys of Spayne came to the tent of sir Charles du Bloyes, and desyred of hym a gyft for all the servyce that ever he had done, in the presence of dyverse lordes of France; and sir Charles graunted hym, bycause he knewe hymselfe so moche bounde to hym. Sir, quoth he, I requyre you cause the two knyghtes, that be in prison in Fauet to be brought hyther, that is to say sir John Butler and sir Hubert Fresnoy, and to gyve them to me, to do with them at my pleasure. Sir, this is the gyft that I desyre of you: they have chased, dysconfettet, and hurt me, and slayne my nephue Alphons; I can nat tell how otherwise to be revenged of them, but I shall stryke of their heedes before the town, in the sygh of their companyons. Of these wordes sir Charles was abashed, and sayd, Certenly, with right a good wyll I wol gyve you the prisoners, syth ye have desyred them: but surely it shulde be a shamefull dede to put so to dethe suche two valvant knyghtes as they be, and it shal be an occasyon to our ennemyes to deale in lykwyse with any of ours, if they fall in lyke case, and we knowe nat what shall daylfe fall: the chancses of warre be dyvers; wherfore dere cosyn, I requyre you to be better advysed. Than sir Loys sayd, Sir, if ye kepe nat promysse with me, knowe ye for troch, that I shall depart out of your company, and shall never serve nor love you agayne whyle I lyve. Whan sir Charles sawe none other bote, he sent to Fauet for the two knyghtes, and in a morning they were brought to sir Charles of Bloys tent; but for all that he coude desyre, he coude nat turne sir
LOYE OF SPAINE FRO HIS PURPOSE: BUT SAYD PLAYNLY, THAT THEY SHULDE BE BEHEEDE ANONE AFTER DYNER, HE WAS SO SORE DISPLEASED WITH THEM. ALL THESE WORDES THAT WAS BYTWENE SIR CHARLES, AND SIR LOYES, FOR THOCASSION OF THESE TWO KNIGHTES, ANONE WAS COME TO THE KNOWLEGE OF SIR WATER OF MAMNY BY CERTAYNE SPYES, THAT SHEWED THE MYSCHIFE THAT THESE TWO KNIGHTES WERE IN. THAN HE CALLED HIS COMPANY AND TOKE COUNCIALE WHAT WAS BEST TO DO; SOME THOUGHT ONE THYNGE; SOME THOUGHT ANOTHER, BUT THEY WYST NAT WHAT REMEDY TO FYNDE. THAN SIR GAULTIER OF M Amny sayd, SIRS, IT SHULD BE GREAT HONOUR FOR US, IF WE MIGHT DELIVER OUT OF DAUNGER YONOTHER TWO KNIGHTES, AND IF WE PUT IT IN ADVENTURE, THOUGH WE FAYLE THEREOF, ET KYNGE EDWARDE OUR MAYSTER WOLL CANNE US MOCHE THANKE THEREFORE, AND SO WOLL ALL OTHER NOBLE MEN, THAT HERAFTER SHALL HERE OF THE CASE: AT LEAST IT SHAL BE SAYD HOWE WE DYD OUR DEVOYRE. SIRS, THIS IS MYNE ADVYSE, IF YE WOLL FOLLO WIT, FOR ME THYNKETH A MAN SHULDE WELL ADVENTURE HIS BODY, TO SAVE THE LYVES OF TWO SUCHE VALYANT KNIGHTES; MYNE ADVYSE IS THAT WE DEVYDE OURSELFE INTO TWO PARTES, THE ONE PART INCONTYNT TO YSSUE OUT AT THIS GATE, AND TO ARANGE THEMSELF ON THE DYKES, TO STYRE THOOST, AND TO SKIRMYSH: I THYNKE THAT ALL THE HOLE HOOST WOLL COME RENNING THYDER; AND SIR AYMERY, YE SHALL BE CAPTAYNE OF THAT COMPANY, AND TAKE WITH YOU A VI. THOUSAND GOOD ARCHERS, AND THRE HUNDRED MEN OF ARMES; AND I SHALL TAKE WITH ME A HUNDRED MEN OF ARMES, AND FIVE HUNDRED ARCHERS, AND I WYLL YSSUE OUT AT THE POSTERN COVERTLY, AND SHAL DASSHE INTO THE HOOST AMONGE THE LODGINGES BEHYNDE, THE WHICHE I THYNKE WE SHALL FYNDE AS GOOD AS VOYDE; I SHALL HAVE SUCH WITH ME AS SHALL WELL BRING ME TO THE TENT OF SIR CHARLES DU BLOYES, WHERE AS I THYNKE WE SHALL FYNDE THE TWO KNIGHTES PRISONERS, AND I ENSURE YOU, WE SHALL DO OUR DEVOYRE TO DELIVER THEM. THIS DEVYSE PLEASED THEM ALL, AND INCONTYNT THEY ARMED THEM, AND ABOUT THE HOURE OF DYNER SIR AYMERY OF CLYSSON YSSUED OUT WITH HIS COMPANY AND SET OPYN THE CHEWE GATE TOWARDS THE HOOST, AND SOME OF THEM DASHED SODAYLY INTO THOOST, AND CUT DOWNE TENTES, AND SLEW AND HURT DEYVERSE; THOOST WAS IN A SODAYNE FRAY, AND IN HAST ARMED THEYM, AND DREW TOWARDS THE LGYSSHEN AND BRETONS, WHO FAYE AND EASILY
THE CRONYCLE OF

reculed backe. There was a sore skirmyshe, and many a manne overthrown on bothe parties. Than sir Aymery
drew his people alonge on the dykes within the barryers,
and the archers redy on bothe sydes the way, to recyve
their enemys. The noyse and crye was so great, that all
the hole hoost drewe thyder, and left their tentes voyde,
savyng a certayne variettes. In the meane season sir
Gaultier of Manny and his company, yssued out at a
poosertne privyly, and came behynde the hoost, and entred
into the lodgynges of the Frenche lorde, for there were none
to resyvt them: all were at the skirmyshe. Thane sir
Gaultier went streyght to sir Charles of Bloys tent, and
founde there the two knyghtes prisoners, sir Hubert of
Frensoy,\(^1\) and sir John Butteler, and made them incontynt
leape upon two good horses that they brought thyder
for the same intent, and returned incontynt and entred
agayne into Hanybont the same way thei yssued out: the
countesse receyved them with gret joy. All this season
they fought styll at the gate; than tidiynges came to the
lorde of Frunce howe the two knyghtes prisoners were
resuced: whan sir Loyes of Spaye knewe therof, he thought
hymselfe dysceyved, and he demaunded which way they were
gone that made that rescue, and it was shewed hym howe
they were entred into Hanybont. Thane sir Loyes de-
parted fro the assault and went to his lodgyng right sore
dyspleased; than all other lefte the assaut. In the retrayet
there were two knyghtes that adventured themselfe so
forwarde that they were taken by the Frenchmen, the lorde
Landreman and the Chathelaye of Guyngnape,\(^2\) wherof sir
Charles of Bloyes hadde great joye, and they were brought
to his tent, and there they were so preched to that they
toured to sir Charles parte, and dyd homage and fealtitie
to hym. The iii. day after all the lordes assembledde in
the lorde Charles tent to take counsayle, for they sawe well
that Hanybont was so strong and so well fortifide with
men of warre, that they thought they shulde wyne but
lytell there; and also the countrey was so wasted, that they
wyst nat whyther to go to forage, and also wynter was at
hande: wherfore they all agreed to depart. Than they
counsayled sir Charles of Bloyes that he shulde sende newe

\(^1\) Frensoy.

\(^2\) Guingamp.
Syr John Froissart

provisyons to all cyties, townes, and fortresses, suche as he had wonne, and noble capitayns with good soudyours to defende their places fro their ennemyes: and also, if any man wolde treat for a trewse to Whysontyde, that it shulde nat be refused.

Cap. LXXXVIII

Howe sir Charles of Bloys toke the towne of Jugon and the castell.

To this counsell every man agreed, for it was thane bytwene saynt Reymy and Al Sayntes, the yere of oure Lorde God, M.CCC.xliii. Than every man departed: sir Charles of Bloys went to Carahes with all the lordes of his partie; and he retayned certayne of the lordes styll with hym, to counsayle hym in all his beaynes: and whyle he lay there on a day, a burges and a riche marchant of Jugon was taken by the marshall, sir Robert of Beannoys, and he was brought to the lorde Charles. This burgesse had all the rule in the towne of Jugon under the countesse, and also he was welbeloved in the towne. This burges was put in feare of his lyfe; he desyred to be let passe for his ransome: how be it he was so handled one wayes and other, that he fell in a bargayn to betray the towne of Jugone and to leave opyn a certayne gate: for he was so well betrusted in the towne, that he kept the kayes when he was ther. This to acomplysshe, he layed his sonne in hostage and sir Charles promysed to gyve hym fvy hundred pounde of yerely rent: the day of poynentment came, and the gate was lefte opyn at night, and sir Charles and his company entred into the towne with great puysaunce; the watche of the castell dyd perceyve them, and he began to cry a larum, treason, treason; they of the towne began to styrre; and when they sawe that the towne was loste, they fledde to the castell by heapes; and the burgesse that had done the treason fled with them for a countenance. And when it was day, sir Charles and his company entred into the houses to lodge, and toke what they wolde: and whane he sawe the castell so stronge and so full of men, he sayd he wold nat go thens.
tyll he had it at his pleasure. Sir Gerard of Rochfort captayne of the castell, percyved the burgesse that had betrayed them; he toke and hanged hym over the walles: and when they consyred howe sir Charles had made a vowe nat to depart thens tyll he had the castell, and that their provysion wolde nat serve them x. dayes, they agreed to yelde them, their goddes that was left and their lives saved, the which was graunted them. And so they made fealtie and homage to sir Charles of Bloys; and he stablyshed captayne there the sayd sir Gerard of Rochfort, and newlye refreshed the towne and castell with men of warr and provisyon. In this meanes season certayne noble men of Bretayne spake for a truse for a certayn space, bytwene sir Charles of Bloys and the countesse of Mountfort, the which was agreed by all their ayders and assisters: also the kynge of Englane sent for the countesse to come into Englane; and assone as this trewse was confirmed, the countesse toke see and passed into Englane.

CAP. LXXXIX

Of the feest and justynge made at London by the kyng of England for the love of the countesse of Salisbury.

Ye have well harde here before howe the kyng of Englane had great warres in dyvers countreis, and had men of warre in garysons, to his gret cost and charge; as in Picardy, Normandy, Gascoyne, Xaynton, Poycctou, Bretayne, and Scotlande: ye have harde also before how the kyng was sryken in love with the countesse of Salisbury; love quickened hym day and night; her fresshe beautie and godelye demeanour was ever in his remembrance, though therie of Salisbury was one of the privyest of his counsell, and one of them that had done hym best servyce. So it fell that for the love of this lady, and for the great desyre that the king had to se her, he caused a great feest to be cryed, and a justyng to be holden in the cyti of London in the myddles of August. The which cry was also made in
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Flaunders, in Heynault, in Brabant, and in Fraunce, gyveng all commers out of every contey safe conduct to come and go: and had gyven in commaundement through his owne realme that all lorde, knyghtes, squyres, ladyes, and damosels shuld be ther without any excuse, and com-
maunded expressly the erle of Salisbury that the lady his wyfe shulde be ther, and to bring with her all ladyes and damosels of that countrey. Therle graunted the kynge as he that thought none yvell: the gode lady durst nat say nay; howbeit she came sore agaynst her wyll, for she thought well ynoough wherfore it was; but she durst nat dyscover the mater to her husband; she thought she wolde deale so, to bringe the kynge fro his opynion. This was a noble feest; there was the erle Wylyam of Heynalt and sir John of Heynalt his uncle, and a great nombre of lorde, and knyghtes of hyghe lynage; there was great daunsynge and justynge the space of xv. dayes; the lorde John, eldyest son
to the vycoun Beaumonde in England was slayne in the justes. All ladyes and damoselles were freshely besene accordyng to their degrees, except Alyss countesse of Salisbury, for she went as simply as she myght, to the intent that the kynge shulde nat sette his regarde on her, for she was fully deterymyned to do no maner of thyng that shulde tourne to her dyshonour nor to her husbandes. At this feest was sir Henry with the wyre necke, erle of Lancastre, and sir Henry his sonne, erle of Derby; sir Robert Dartoyes, erle of Rychmount; the erle of Northampton and of Glo-
cetter, the erle of Warwyke, the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Penneforde, 1 the erle of Hereford, the erle of Arundell, 1 Pembroke.
the erle of Cornnewall, the erle of Quenforde, 2 the erle of Oxford.
Suffolke, the baron of Stafforde, and dyvers other lorde, and knyghtes of Engelande. And or all these nobles departed, the kynge receyved letters fro divers lorde, of sundrie countreis, as out of Gascoyne, Bayon, Flaunders, fro Jaques Dartyell, and out of Scotlande fro the lorde Rosé 3 and the lorde Persey, 4 Ros.
and fro sir Edward Baylleull capayne of Berwyke, who sygni-
fied the kynge that the Scottes helde but simply the trewe concludedde the yere before, for they newly assembled togyder mocch people, for what entent they coude nat tell. Also the capayne in Poyctow, Xanton, 4 Rochell, and Burdeloyes, wrote 4 Saintonge.

EE

217
to the kyng howe the Frenchmen made great preparacions for the warre, for the peace made at Arras was nere expyred, wherfore it was tyme for the kyng to take counsayle and adyse; and so he aymswered the messangers fro poynyt to poynyt.

CAP. XC

Howe the kyng of Engleande sent sir Robert Dartoys into Bretayne.

AMONG all other thynge the kyng of Engleande wolde soucre the countesse of Mountfort, who was with the quene. Thanne the kyng desyred his cosyn, sir Robert Dartoys, to take a certayne nombre of men of warre and archers, and to go with the countesse into Bretayne; and so he dyde, and they departed and toke shpping at Hampton, and were on the see a graet season, bycause of contrary wyndes: they departed about Ester. At this great counsell at London the kyng was adyved to sende to Scottlande for the parfourmaunce of a trewe to endure for two or thre yeress, consdring that the kyng had so moche besynes in other places; the kyng of Engleande was lothe therto, for he wolde have made suche warr into Scotland that they shulde have ben fayne to have desyred peace; howbeit his counsayle shewed hym suche reasons that he agreed therto. Among other thynge his counsell sayd, that it was great wisdome whan a prince hath warre in dyvers places at one tyme, to agre with one by truse, another to pacify with fayre wordes, and on the thyrd to make warre. Thanne was ther a bysshopp sente on that legacyon; and so he went forthe, and in processe retourned agayne, and brought relacyon howe that the king of Scottes wolde agre to no trewese without the agrement of the Frenche kyng. Than the kyng of Engleande sayde openly, that he wolde never rest tyll he had so arayed the realme of Scottlande that it shulde never be recovered: than he commandd that every man shulde be with hym at Berwyke by Estor, except suche as were apoynted to go into Bretayn. The feest of Estor came, and the kyng held a great court at Berwyke: for the chiefe of the lorde and knyghtes of Eng-
SYR JOHN FROISSART

land were ther, and there taryed the space of thre wyckes. In the meane season certayne good men laboured bytwene the parties to have a trewse; and so there a truse was agreed to endure for two yere, and confirmed by the French kyng. Than every man departed, and the kyng went to Wyndsore: than he sende the lorde Thomas Holland, and the lorde Bretayne. John Dartell to Bayon, with two hundred men of armes and four hundred archers, to kepe the fronters ther.

Nowe let us speke of sir Robert Dartoyes. That yere fell so hye that it was nere to thentring of May, in the myddes of the whiche moneth the trewse bytwene the lorde Charles of Bloys and the countesse of Mountfort shulde expyre. Sir Charles of Bloyes was well certyfied of the purchase that the countesse of Mountforte had made in Englande, and of the confort that the kyng had promysed her; for the whiche intent the lorde Loyes of Spayne, sir Charles Germaux, and sir Othes Dornes were layd on the Grimaldi. see about Gernzay with a thre thousande Genowayes, and Doris. a thousande men of armes and xxxii. great shyppes.

CAP. LXXXI

Of the batell of Gernzay bytwene sir Robert Dartoyes and sir Loyes of Spayne on the see.

SIR ROBERT DARDOYES, erle of Rychmont, and with hym therle of Penefort, the erle of Salisbury, Pembrowk, therle of Suffolke, therle of Quenfort, the baron of Oxford, Stafford, the lorde Spenser, the lord Bourchier, and dyvers other knyghtes of Englande and their companyes were with the countesse of Mountfort on the see, and at last came before the yle of Gernzay. Than they perceyved the great fete of the Genowayes, wherof sir Loyes of Spayne was chiefe captayne. Than their marynars sayd, Sirs, arme you quickly, for yonder be Genowayes and Spaniardes that woll set on you. Than thenglysshmen sowne their trumpettes and reared up their baners and standeres with their armes and devyses, with the baner of saint George, and sette their shippes in order with their archers before; and as the wynd served them they sayled forth; they were a xlii. vessels,
THE CRONYCLE OF

great and small; but sir Loys of Spaygne had ix. greater than any of the other, and thre galyes. And in the thre galyes were the thre chief captyynes, as sir Loys of Spayne, sir Charles, and sir Othes; and when they aproched nere togyder, the Genowayes beganne to shote with their cros-bowes, and the archers of Englane against them: there was sore shoting bytwene them and many burte on bothe parties. And whane the lordes, knyghtes, and squyers came nere togyder, there was a sore batayle: the countesse that day was worth a man; she had the harte of a lyon, and had in her hande a sharpe glayve, wherwith she fought feerly. The Spanyardes and Genowayes that were in the great vessels, they cast downe great barres of yron and peaces of tymbre, the which troubled sore thenglyshe archers: this batayle beganne about the tyme of eynsonge, and the nyght departed them, for it was very darke, so that one coude scant knowe an other. Than they withdrew eche fro other and cast ankers and abode styl in their harness, for they thought to fight agayne in the morninge: but about mydnight ther rose suche a tempest so horryble as though all the worlde shulde have endede. There was none so hardy but wold gladly have ben a land; the shyppes dashing so togyder, that they went all wolde have ryven in peaceful. The lordes of Englane demaundde counsayle of their maryners what was best to do. They answered, to take lande assone as they might, for the tempest was so great, that if they toke the see, they were in danger of droning. Than they drewe up their ankers, and bare but a quarter sayle, and drewe fro that place. The Genowayes on the other syde drewe upp their ankers, and toke the depe of the see, for their vessels were greater than thenglyshe shyppes, they might better abyde the brunt of the see; for if the great vessels had come nere the lande, they were lzyćly to have ben broken. And as they departed they toke foure Englyshe shyppes, laded with vyttel, and tayled them to their shyppes. The storme was so hedges, that in lasses than a day they were driven a hundred leagues fro the place wher they were before; and the Englyshe shyppes toke a lytell haven nat ferre fro the cytie of Vannes, wherof they were ryght gladde.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. LXXXII

Howe sir Robert Dartoys toke the cytie of Vannes, in Bretayne.

Thus by this tourment of the see brake and departed the batell on the see, bytwene sir Robert Dartoys and sir Loyes of Spayne. No man coude toll to whome to gyve the honour, for they departed agaynst bothe their wylles. Thenglysshmen toke lande nat farre of fro Vannes, and brought all their horse and harnes a lande; than they devyseyd to sende their navie to Hanybont and to go theymselfe and ley siege to Vannes; therin were captayns sir Henry of Leon and Olyver of Clysson, and with them the lorde of Turmyne and the lord of Loheac. When they sawe thenglysshmen come to besiege them they toke good hede to their defences, bothe to the castell and to the wallies and gates; and at every gate they set a knyght with x. men of armes and xx. crosbowes.

Nowe let us speke of sir Loyes of Spayne and his company: they were sore tourmented on the see, and in great daunger all that nyght and the nexte day tyll noone, and loste two of their shyppes menne and all. Thane the thirde day about prime the see apered; than they demaunded of the maryners what parte of lande was nexte; they aunswered the realme of Navarre, and that the wynde hadde driven theym out of Bretayne more than sixscore leages; than there they cast anker and abode the floodde, and whan the tyde came they had good wynde to retourne to Rochell. So they costed Bayon, but they wolde nat come nere it; and they met foure shippes of Bayon commyng fro Flan- ders; they sette on them and toke theym shortly, and slewe all that were in them: than they sayled towards Rochell, and in a fewe dayes they arryved at Guerrande; ther they toke lande, and hard ther howe sir Robert Dartoys lay at siege before Vannes. Than they sent to the lorde Charles of Bloyes to knowe his pleasure what they shuld do. Sir Robert Dartoys lay at siege with a thousande men of armes and thre thousande archers, and wasted all
the countrie about, and brent to Dynant and to Gony la Forest, so that none durst abyde in the playne countrie: there were many assautes and skirmishes at the barryers of Vannes. The countesse of Mountfort was styll with sir Robert Dartoys at the siege; also sir Gaultier of Manny, who was in Hanybont, delievered the kepynge of the towne to sir Wylyam Caducall and to sir Gerard of Rochfort, and toke with him sir Yves of Tribyquedy, and a C. men of armes, and CC. archers, and departed fro Hanybont and went to the siege before Vannes. Than incontynent there was made a great assaut in thre places all at ones; the archers shotte so thychke, that they within scante durst apere at ther defence: this assaut endurde a hole day, and many hurt on bothe parties: agaynst night thenglyshmen withdrue to their lodgynges, and they within, in likeweys sore wery of trayvell, and they unarmad them: but they of the hoost without dyd nat so, for they kept on styll their harnes, except their heed peces, and so dranke and refresshed them. And than, by the advyse of sir Robert Dartoys they ordainad agayne thre batayls; and two of them to assaute at the gates, and the thirde batayle to kepe themselfe prive tyll the other two batayls had assayed along, so that all the strength of the towne shulde be ther by all lickylyshode to defend; than it was ordainad that this thyrde batayle shuld sette on the most feblest place of all the towne with ladders, ropes, and hokes of yron to caste on the walles. And as they devysed, so it was done: sir Robert Dartoys with the first batell came and made assaut in the night at one of the gates, and therle of Salisbury with the seconde batell at an other gate. And bycause it was darke, to thystent to make them within the more abashmed, they made great fiers, so that the brightnesse therof gave lyght into the cytie, wherby they within had wende that their houses had ben a fyre, and cryed Treason; many were a bedde, to rest them of their trayvell the day before, and so rose sodenly and ran towards the lyght, without order or gode aray, and without counsell of their captayns: every man within armed them. Thus whyle they were in this trouble, therle of Quenefort and sir Water of Manny with the thyrde batell came to the walles, wher as there was no defence made, and with their
Syr John Froissart

Ladders mounted up and entred into the town; the Frenchmen take no hede of them, they were so occupied in other places, tyll they sawe their enemis in the stretes. Than every man fledde away to save themselfe; the captayns had no leauser to go into the castell, but were fayne to take their horses and yssued out at a postern: happy was he that might get out to save hymselfe; all that ever were sene by thenglysshmen were taken or slayne, and the town at over ron and robbed: and the countesse and sir Robert Dartoyes entred into the towne with great joy.

CAP. LXXXIII

Howe sir Robert Dartoyes dyed, and where he was buryed.

Thus, as I have shewed you, the cyte of Vannes was taken, and a fuyde dayes after the countess of Mountfort, sir Gaultier of Manny, sir Yves of Tribiquedy, and dyverse other knyghtes of Engelande and of Bretayne, returned to Hanbont; and therle of Salysbury, therle of Penefort, therle of Suffolke, therle of Cornwall, departed fro Vannes, fro sir Robert Dartoyes, with thre thousande men of armes and thre M. archers, and went and layed siege to the cyte of Renes. And sir Charles de Bloyes was departed thens but foure dayes before, and was gone to Nantes; but he had left in the cyte many lorde, knyghtes, and squyers: and stylle sir Lys of Spayne was on the see, and kept so the fronters agaynst Engelande, that none coude go bytwene Engelande and Bretayne without great danger: they had done that yere to Engelande great damage. For the takyn of thus of Vannes by thenglysshmen the countrey was sore abashedde, for they thought that ther hadde been suche capitaynes that had ben able to have defendedde it agaynst all the worlde; they knewe well the towne was stronge and well provyded of men of warre and artyllary; for this misadventure sir Henry of Leon and the lorde Clysson was sore abashedde, for their enemys speke shame agaynst theym. These two knyghtes were so sore displeased with the mater, that they gette togyder a com-
THE CRONYCLE OF

pany of knyghtes and soudyers; so that at a day apoynted they mette before the cytie of Vannes, mo than xi. thousande of one and other: thyder came the lorde Robert of Beau-
manoyre, marshall of Bretayn; they layd sege to the cite
on all sydes, and than assayled it fersly. Then sir Robert
Dartoyes sawe howe he was besieged in the cytie, he was
nat neglygent to kepe his defence; and they without were
fierce, bycause they wolde nat that they that laye at siege
at Renes shuld nat trouble theym. They made so feerse
assauke, and gave theym within so moche ado, that they wan
the barryers, and after the gates, and so entred into the
cytie by force. The Englyshmen were put to the chase,
and dyverse hurte and slayne, and specially sir Robert
Dartoyes was sore hurte, and scapesde hardely untaken:
he departed at a posterne, and the lorde Stafforde with
hym; the lorde Spencer was taken by sir Henry of Leon,
but he was so sore hurte that he dyed the thyrde day after.
Thus the Frenchemen wanne agayne the cytie of Vannes, and
sir Robert Dartoyes taryed a season in Hanybont sore
hurte, and at laste he was counsayled to go into Englane
to seke helpe for his hurtes; but he was so sore handled on
the see, that his soores rankeled, and at laste landed, and
was brought to London, and within a shorte space after he
dyed of the same hurtes, and was buryed in London, in the
church of saynt Poul. The kyng dyd as nobly his obsequy
as though it had ben for his owne proper cosyne germayne,
therle of Derby: his dethe was greatly bemoned in Eng-
lande, and the kyng of Englane sware that he wolde never
rest tyll he had revenged his dethe, and sayde howe he wolde
go hymselfe into Bretayne, and brinche the contrey in suche
case, that it shuld nat be recovered agayne in fortie yere
after. Incontynent he sent out letters throughout his realme,
that every noble man and other shulde come to hym within
a moneth after: and prepared a great navy of shyppes. And
at the ende of the moneth he toke the see, and toke landyng
in Bretayne, nat farre fro Vannes, there as sir Robert
Dartoyes arryved: he was thre dayes a landyng of all his
provisyon: the iii. day he went towards Vannes: and all
this season therle of Salisbury and therle of Pembroke were
lyeng at siege before Renes.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. LXXXXIII

Howe the kyng of Englande came into Bretayne to make warre there.

After the kyng of Englande had ben a lande a certayne space, he went and layed siege to Vannes; and within the towne ther was sir Olyver of Clysson, and sir Henry of Leon, the lorde of Turnyney, sir Geoffray of Malestrayet, and sir Guy of Loheas: they supposed well before that the kyng of Englands wolde come into Bretayne, wherfore they had provyded the towne and castell with all thinges necessary. The kyng made a great assault that endured halfe a day; but lytell good they dyd, the cyte was so well defended. Whane the countesse of Mountfort knewe that the kyng of Englande was come, she departed fro Hanybont, accompanied with sir Gaultier of Manny, and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers, and came before Vannes to se the kyng and the lordes of thoost, and a foure dayes after she retourned agayne to Hanybont with all her owne company.

Nowe let us speke of sir Charles of Bloyes, who was in Nautes: and assone as he knewe that the kyng of England was aryved in Bretayne, he sent worde thereof to the Frenche kyng his uncle, desyryng him of socour. Whan the king of England sawe this cyte so strong, and hard reported howe the countrey ther about was so poore and so sore wasted, that they wyt nat wher to get any forage, noner for man nor beest, than he ordyned to devyde his nombre: first therle of Arundell, the lorde Stafforde, sir Water of Manny, sir Yves of Tribyquedy, and sir Richard of Rochfort, with vi. C. men of armes, and vi. M. archers, to kepe styll the siege before Vannes, and to ryde and distroy the countrey all about; and the kyng went to Renes, wher he was joyfully receyved with them that lay at siege there before, and had done a long season. And whan the kyng had ben ther a fuye dayes, he understode that sir Charles du Bloyes was at Nantes, and made there a great assemble of men of warre. Thanke the kyng departed fro Renes, and left them styll
CAP. LXXXIII
Howe the kyng of Eng-
lande came into Bretayne
there.

THE CRONYCLE OF

ther that were ther before, to contynue their siege. Than
the kyng came before Nauntes, and besieged it as farre as
he might, but he coude nat lay rounde about, the cite was
so great: the marshall of the hoost rode abrode and dis-
stroyed great part of the country. The kyng ordayedn his
batell on a lytell mountayne without the towne, and there
taryed fro the mornyng tyll it was noone, wenynge that sir
Charles of Bloys wolde have yssued out to have gyven hym
batayle: and whan they sawe it wolde nat be, they drewe
to their lodgynges; the fore ryders ranne to the baryers,
and skirmished and brent the subbarbes. Thus the kyng
lay before Nauntes, and sir Charles within, who wrote to
the Frenche kyng the state of thenglysshmen. The Frenche
kyng had commaundyd his sonne, the duke of Normandy,
to gyve ayde to sir Charles of Bloys, the which duke was
as then come to Angyers, and there made his assembly of
men of warr. The kyng of Englande made dyvers assautes
to Nantes, but ever he lost of his men and wanne nothyng:
and whan he sawe that by assautes he coude do nothyng,
and that sir Charles wolde nat yssue out into the felde to
fyght with hym, than he ordayedn therle of Quenforte, sir
Henry vycont of Beaumont, the lorde Percy, the lorde Rose,
the lorde Mombrey, the lorde Dalawarre, the lorde Raynoled
Cobham, and the lorde sir John Lysle, with sicy hundred
men of armes, and two hundred archers to kepe styll the
sige ther, and to ryde and distroy the country all about.
And than the kyng went and layed sege to the towne of
Dynant, wherof sir Peter Portbeufe was captyayne: the kyng
made there fierse assautes, and they within defended them-
selufe valyantly. Thus the kyng of Englande all at one season
had sieges lyeng to thre cites and a good towne in Bretayyne.
WHILE the kyng of England was thus in Bretayne, wastynge and distroyeng the contrey, suche as he had lyeng at sege before Vannes gave dyvers assautes, and specially at one of the gates. And on a day ther was a great assault, and many feates of armes done on bothe parties; they within set opyn the gate and came to the baryers, bycause they sawe the erle of Warwykes baner, and therle of Arundels, the lorde Staffordes, and sir Water of Mannes adventurying themself jeopardously, as they thought: wherfore the lorde Clysson, sir Henry of Leon, and other adventured themselfe courageously: there was a sore skirmyshe; finally the Englysshmen were put backe. Than the knyghtes of Bretayne openyd the baryers and adventured themselfe, and left six knyghtes with a gode nome to kepe the towne, and they yssued out after thenglysshmen: and thenglysshmen reculed wysely, and ever fought as they sawe their avantage. Thenglysshmen multiplyed in suche wyse, that at last the Frenchmen and Bretons wer fayne to recule backe agayne to their towne, nat in so good order as they came forth: than thenglysshmen folowed them agayne, and many were slayn and hurt. They of the towne sawe their men recule agayne and chased: than they closed their baryers in so yvell a tyme, that the lorde Clysson and sir Henry of Leon were closed without, and ther they were bothe taken prisoners. And on the other syde the lorde Stafforde was gone in so farre, that he was closed in bytwene the gate and the baryers, and ther he was taken prisoner, and dyverse that were with hym taken and slayne. Thus thenglysshmen drewe to their lodgynges and the Bretons into the cytie of Vannes.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. LXXXVII

Howe the kyng of Englande toke the town of Dynant.

Thus, as ye have harde, these knyghtes were taken on bothe parties; there was no mo suche assautes after. Nowe let us speke of the king of Englande, who lay at sege before Dynant. Whan he had layne ther a four dayes, he gate a great nombre of bottes and barges, and made his archers to entre into theym, and to rowe to the pales, wherewith the town was closedde; it had none other walles. The archers shot so feersly that non durst shewe at their defence; than was ther certayne other with axes; so that whyle the archers dyd shote, they hewed downe the pales, and so entred by force. Than they of the town fledde to the market place, but they kept but a small order, for they that entred by the pales came to the gate and dyd opyn it; than every man entred, and the capitayne sir Fyers Portbeufe taken, and the town over ron and robbed: thenglysshmen wan moche riches in that towne, for it was a great towne of marchandyse. Whan the kyng had taken his pleasure ther as long as it had pleased hym, he left the towne voyde, and went to Vannes and lodged there.

Nowe let us retourne to sir Loys of Spayne, and to sir Charles Germaux and sir Othes Dornes, who was as than admyrall on the see, with viii. galeys, xiii. barkes, and xxx. other shyppes, with Genowayes and Spanyardes. They kept the coost bytwise England and Bretayne, and dyd moche damage to them that came to refresse the boost before Vannes. And at a tyme they set on the kynges of Englanes navy lyeng at Aucerre, in a lytell havyn bysyde Vannes, so that they slewe a great part of them that keppe the shyppes, and had done moch more damage yf thenglysshmen lyeng at the siege had nat ron thyder in all hast; and yet as moche hast as they made, sir Loys of Spayne toke away iii. shippes laded with provisyon, and drowned thre and all that
was in them. Than the kyng was counselled to drawe part of his navy to Brest haven and the other part to Hanybont, the which was done. And styll endured the siege before Vannes and Renes.

**CAP. LXXXXVII**

What lordes of France the duke of Normandy brought into Bretayne agaynst the kyng of Englande.

NOWE let us retourne to the journey that the duke of Normandy made the same season in Bretayne, to ayde and confort his cosyn syr Charles de Bloys. The duke knewe well howe the kyng of Englande had sore damaged the contrey of Bretayn, and had besieged thre cytes, and taken the towne of Dynant. Than the duke departed fro the cytie of Angyiers, with mo than iii. M. men of armes, and xxx. M. of other. He toke the heuy way to Nauntes, by the gyding of the two marshals of Fraunce, the lorde of Momorency and the lorde of saynt Venant; and after them rode the duke and therle of Alanson his uncle, therle of Bloys his cosyn; the duke of Burbone was ther, therle of Ponthyeu, therle of Bolayn, the erle of Vandome, therle of Dammartyn, the lorde of Craon, the lorde of Coucy, the lorde of Suly, the lorde of Frenes, the lorde of Roy, and so many lordes, knightes, and squyers of Normandy, Dauergne, Berry, Lymosen, Dumayn, Poictou, and Xaynton, that it were to long to reherse them all, and dayly they encreased. Tidynes came to the lordes that lay at siege before Nantes, that the duke of Normandy was commynge thyder with xl. M. men of warr. Incontynent thei sent worde therof to the kyng of England; than the kyng studyed a lytell, and thought to breke up his siege before Vannes, and also his siege before Renes, and all togyder to drawe to Nauntes. But than his counsell sayd to hym, Sir, ye be here in a good sure ground, and nere to your navy, and sende for them that lyeth at siege before Nantes to come to you, and let the siege ly styll before Renes, for they be nat so ferr of but they shal be ever redy to come
THE CRONYCLE OF

to you yf nede be. The kyngye agreed to this counsell, and
so sent for them before Nautes, and they came to hym to
Vannes. The duke of Normandy came to Nantes, wher sir
Charles de Bloys was; the lorde loged in the cytie, and
their men abrode in the contrey, for they coude nat all lodge
in the cytie nor in the subbarbes.

CAP. LXXXXVIII

Howe the kyngye of Engelande and the duke
of Normandy were hoost agaynst hoost lodged
before Vannes.

WHYLE the duke of Normandy was at Nautes,
the lorde of Engelande that lay at siege before
Renes, on a day made a great and a feere assault,
for they had made many instrumentes to assault withall. This
assault enduredde a hole day, but they wan nothyng, but
lost dvyers of their men. Within the cytie was the lorde
Dancenys, the lorde of Pont, sir John of Malatrayt, Yvan
Charuell, and Bertram Grasquyne,1 squer; they defended
themselve so well, with the bysshopp of the cytie, that they
toke no damage; howbeit, thenglyshmen lay ther stall,
and over ran and wasted the contrey all about. Than the
duke of Normandy departed with all his host, and drue
towarde Vannes, the soner to fynde his enemys, for he
was enformed, howe they of Vannes were in moost jeopardy,
and in perryll of lesyng; than the two marshals went forthe,
and sir Geffray of Charney, and therle of Guynes constable
of Fraunce, made the arégarde. So thys the Frenchmen
came to Vannes, on thother syde, agaynst ther as the kyng
of Engelande lay; they lay alonge by a fayre medowe syde, and
made a great dyke about their host: the marshals and fore
ryders often tymes skirmyshed toguyder on bothe parties;
than the kyngye of Engelande sende for therle of Salisbury,
and therle of Pembroke, and the other that lay at siege at
Renes, to come to hym, and so they dyd. Thenglyshmen
and the Bretons of that partie, were well to the nombre of ii.
M. and v. C. men of armes, and vi. M. archers, and iii. M. of

1 Bertrand de Guesclin.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

other men a fote: the Frenchmen were four tymes as many, well appareled. The kyng of England had so fortyfied his hoost, that the Frenchmen coude take no advantaunce of hym, and he made no mo assaults to the townes, bycause of sparyng of his men and artillery: thus these two hoostes lay one agaynst another a longe season, tyl it was well onwarde in wynter. Than pope Clement the sixt, sende the cardynall of Penester, and the cardynall of Cleremount, to entreat for a peace, and they rode often tymes bytwene the parties, but they coude bring them to no peace. In the mean season, ther were many skirmysshesh and men taken, slayne, and overthrown on bothe parties: thenglysshmen durst nat go a foragyng, but in great companyes, for they were ever in great danger, by reason of busshmentes that were layd for them: also sir Loyes of Spayne kept so the see coost, that with moche danger, any thynge came to thenglyssh hoost; the Frenchmen thought to kepe the kyng ther in maner as besieged: also the Frenchmen endured moche payne, with weye and cold: for day and night it rayned on them, wherby they lost many of their horses, and were fayne to dyslodge and lyie in the playne feldes, they had so moche water in their lodgynges. At last these cardynals dyd so moch, that there was a truse agreed for thre yere: the kyng of Englande, and the duke of Normandy, swere to upholde the same, without brekyng, as the custome is in suche lyke cases.

CAP. LXXXIX

Howe the French kyng caused the heedes to be stryken of, of the lorde Clysson and dyverse other lordes of Bretayne and of Normandy.

THUS this great assembly brake uppe, and the siege rayzed at Vannes: the duke of Normandy went to Nantes, and had with hym the two cardynals. And the kyng of Englande went to Hanybont, to the countesse of Mountfort; ther was an exchaunghe mad bytwene the baron of Stafford, and the lorde Clysson. When the kyng
THE CRONYCLE OF

had taryed at Hanybont as long as it pleased him, than he left ther therle of Penbroke, sir Wylyyam of Caducall; and other, and thane returned into Englande aboute Christmas; and the duke of Normandy returned into Fraunce, and gave leave to every man to depart. And anone after, the lord Clysson was taken upon suspecyons of treason, and was putte into the chatelet of Parys, wherof many had great marveyle; lordez and knyghtes spake ech othe therof, and sayde, What mater is that is layd against the lorde Clysson. Ther was none coude tell, but some ymagined that it was false envy, bycause the kyng of England bare more favour to delyer hym in exchang, rather than sir Henry of Leon, who was styll in prison; bycause the kyng shewed hym that avantage, his enemies suspected in hym peradventure that was nat tru; upon the which suspect, he was beheeded at Paris, without mercy or excuse; he was grety bemoned. Anone after, ther were dyvers knyghtes were accused in semblable case, as the lorde of Maletrayt and his son, the lorde of Vangor, sir Thymbault of Morlon, and dyvers other lordez of Bretayne, to the nombre of x. knyghtes and squyres, and they lost all their heedes at Parys. And anone after, as it was sayd, ther was put to dethe by famyne iii. knyghtes of Normandy, sir Wylyyam Baron, sir Henry of Maletrayt, the lorde of Rochtessa, and sir Rycharde of Persy, wherby after there fell moche trouble in Bretayne, and in Normandy. The lorde of Clysson had a sonne called as his father was, Olyver: he went to the countesse of Mountfort, and to her sonne, who was of his age, and also without father, for he dyed as ye have hard before, in the castell of Lour in Paris.

The order of saynt George that kyng Edwarde stablysshed in the castell of Wyndsoire.

In this season the king of England toke pleasure to newe reedefy the Castell of Wyndsoire, the whiche was begonne by kyng Arthure; and ther firste beganne the Table Rounde, wherby sprange the fame of so many noble

232
SYR JOHN FROISSART

knightes throughout all the worlde. Than kyng Edwarde
determyned to make an order and a brotherhode of a cer-
tayne nombre of knyghtes, and to be called knyghtes of the
blewe garter; and a feest to be kept yerely at Wynsore on
saynt Georges day. And to begynne this order, the kyng
assembled togyder erles, lordeys and knyghtes of his realme,
and shewed them his intencyon; and they all joyously
agreed to his pleasur, bycause thei sawe it was a thyn
g moche honourable, and wherby great amyte and love shulde
growe and encrease. Than was ther chosen out a certayne
nombre of the moost valyantest men of the realme, and they
sware and sayled to mentayne the ordynaunces, suche as
were devysed: and the kyng made a chapell in the castell
of Wynsore, of saynt George, and stablysshed certayne
chanons ther to serve God, and enduyd them with fayre
rent. Than the kyng sende to publysshe this feest, by
his heraldes, into Fraunce, Scotlande, Burgone, Heynault,
Flaunders, Brabant, and into hempyre of Almayne, gyveng
to every knight and squyer that wolde come to the sayd
feest xv dayes of salve conduct before the feest and after;
the whiche feest to begynne at Wyndsore, on saynt George
day nexte after, in the yere of our Lorde M.CCC. xliii. and
the quene to be ther acompanyed with iii. C. ladyes and
damosels, all of noble lynage, and appareld accordingly.

CAP. CI

Howe the kyng of Englande delyverd out of
prison sir Henry of Leon.

WHYLE the kyng made this preparacion at Wynds-
sore for this sayd feest, tiddynges came to hym
howe the lorde Clysson and dyvers other lordeys
had lost their heedes in Fraunce, wherwith the kyng was
sore dyspleased; in so moch, that he was in purpose to have
served sir Henry of Leon in lyke case, whom he had in
prisonne: but his cosyn the erle of Derby, shewed to hym
before his counsayle, suche reasons to asswage his yre, and
to refrayne his courage; sayeng, Sir, though that kyng
Philippe in his hast hath done so foule a dede, as to put to
GG
THE CRONYCLE OF
dethe such valyant knyghtes, yet sir, for all that, blenmyshe
nat your noblenesse; and sir, to say the trouth, your prisoner
ought to bere no blame, for his dede; but sir, put hym to
a resonable ransome. Than the kyngse sent for the knyght
prisoner to come to his presence, and than sayd to hym, A,
sir Henry, sir Henry, myne adversary Philippe of Valoyes
hath shewed his felony right cruell, to put to dethe suche
knyghtes, wherwith I am sore dyspleased; and it is thought
to us, that he hath done it in dispite of us; and if I wolde
regarde his malyce, I shulde serve you in lyke maner, for ye
have done me more dyspleasure, and to myne in Bretayne,
than any other person; but I wolff suffre it and let hym do
his worst; for to my power I woll kepe myne honour; and
I am content ye shall come to a lyght ransome, for the love
of my cosyn of Derby, who hathe desyred me for you, so
that ye woll do that I shall shewe you. The knyght
answered and sayd, Sir, I shal do all that ye shall com-
maunde me. Than sayd the kyng, I knowe well ye be one
of the richest knyghtes in Bretaygne, and yf I wolde sore cease
you, ye shulde pay me xxx. or xl. M. scutes. But ye shall
go to myne adversary Philippe of Valoyes, and shewe hym
on my behalfe, that syth he hath so shamefully putte to
dethe so valyant knyghtes, in the dispyte of me, I say and
woll make it good, he hath broken the truse taken bytwene
me and hym; wherfore also I renonwce it on my parte, and
defye hym fro this day forewarde. And so that ye woll do
this message, your ransome shal be but x. M. scutes, the
which ye shall pay and sende to Bruges within xv. dayes
after ye be past the see; and moreover ye shall say to all
knyghtes and squyres of those partes, that for all this they
leave nat to come to our feast at Wyndsore, for we wolde
gladly se theym, and they shall have sure and save conduct
to retourne, xv. dayes after the feast. Sir, sayd the knyght,
to the beste of my power I shall accomlysshe your mes-
sage, and God rewarde your grace for the courteysse ye
shewe me, and also I humbly thanke my lorde of Derby
of his good wyll.
And so sir Henry of Leon departeed fro the kyng and
went to Hampton, and ther toke the see, to thynent to
arryve at Harlewe, but a storme toke hym on the see, which
endured fyfteene dayes, and lost his horse, which were caste into the see, and sir Henry of Leon was so sore troubled, Howe the that he had never helth after; howbeit, at lasse he toke kyng of lande at Crotot: and so he and all his company went a fote to Abyle, and ther they get horses: but sir Henry was so sicke that he was fayne to go in a lytter, and so came to Parys to kyng Philippe, and dyd his message, fro poynct to poynct; and he lyved nat long after, but dyed as he went into his countrey, in the cytie of Angyers; God assoyle his soule.

CAP. CII

Howe the kyng of Englane sent therle of Derby to make warre into Gascoyne.

The daye of saynt George approchted that this great feest shuld be at Wynsore; ther was a noble company of erles, barownes, ladys, and damoselles, knyghtes, and squerys, and great trymple justynge and tournyes, the which endured fyfteene dayes. And thyder came many knyghtes of dyverse contrees, as of Flandres, Heynalt, and Brabant, but out of France ther came none. This feest duryng, dyverse newse came to the kyng out of dyvers contrees. Thyder came knyghtes of Gascoyne, as the lorde of Lespare, the lorde of Chaumount, the lorde of Musydent, sende fro the other lorde of the countrey, suche as were Englyshe, as the lorde de Labreth, the lorde of Puyfers, the lorde of Montferant, the lorde of Duras, the lorde of Carton, the lorde of Grayly, and dyverse other: and also ther were sent messangers fro the cytie of Bayon, and fro Bourdeaux. These messangers were well feeste with the kyng and with his counsayle, and they shewed hym howe that his countrey of Gascoyne, and his good cytie of Bourdeaux were but feblly conforted, wherfore they desyred hym to sende thyder suche a captyaine, and suche men of warr, that they might resyste agaynst the Frenchmen who were in a great army and kept the feldes. Than the kyng ordanved his cosyn, the erle of Derby, to go thyder, and he to be as chiefe captayne, and with hym to go therle of Penbrooke, therle of Quenforde, the baron of Staforde, sir Oxford.
THE CRONYCLE OF

Gautier of Manny, the lorde Franque de la Hall, the Lyevre of Brabant, sir Hewe Hastynge, sir Stephyn de Tombey, the lorde of Manny, sir Rychard Haydon, the lorde Normant of Fynefroyde, sir Robert of Lerny, sir John Norwych, sir Rycharde Bocklefe, sir Robert of Quenton, and dyvers other; they were a fyve hundred knyghtes and squyers, and two thousande archers. The king sayd to his cosyne therle of Derby, Take with you golde and sylver ynough, ye shall nat lacke, and depart largely therof with your men of warr, wherby ye shall gette their love and favoure. Than the kynge ordayned sir Thomas Daugorne into Bretaygne to the countesse of Mountfort, to helpe to kepe her countrey for all the peace that was taken, for he douted that the Frenche kynge wolde make warr, bycause of the message that he sent hym by sir Henry of Leon; and with hym he sent a hundred men of armes, and two hundred archers. Also the kynge ordayned therle of Salisbury, and therle Dulfestre, into the northe parties, with a hundred men of armes and sixe hundred archers, for the Scottes had rebelled agayne to hym, and had bret in Cornwall, and tonne to Bristowe, and besieged the towne of Dulfestre. Thus the kynge sent his men of warr into dyvers places, and deliuered the captayns golde and sylver sufficyent to pay their wages, and to retayne soudyers: and so every company departed as they were ordayned.

Nowe first lette us speke of therle of Derby for he had the grettest charge. He toke shyping at Hampton and sayled tyll he arryved at Bayon, a good towne and a stronge cytie the which had long been Englysshe. They landed ther the sixt day of June in the yere of our Lorde M.iii.C.xliii. Ther they were well receyved, and taryd ther a sevyne dayes, and the eyght day departed and went to Burdeaux, wher they were receyved with solemne processyon: and the erle of Derby was lodged in thabbe of saynt Andrewe. And whan the erle of Laiye, the Frenche kynges lyutenant in those parties understode of the commyng of thenglyshmen, he sende for therle of Comyges, the erle of Pyrgourte, the erle of Carman, the vcount of Vyllemure, the erle of Valen-tenoys, therle of Myrande, the erle of Duras, the lorde of Maryde, the lorde Delabard, the lorde of Pycornet, the
Syr John Froissart

vycont of Chastellone, the lorde of Newcastell, the lorde of Lestyne, the abbot of saynt Sylyver, and all other lordes, Howe the suche as helde of the French partie. And when they were kyngs of Engelande sent thelre of Derby to make selfe strong ynoough to kepe the passage at Bergerate, over warre into the ryver of Garon, the which sayeng pleased well therle of Gascoyne. of Layll, who as than was in Gascoyne, as kyng under the French kyng, and had kept that contrey as long as the warre had endured, and had taken dyvers townes and castels fro thenglyshmen. Than these lordes sent for men of warr fro all partes, and went and kept the subbarbes of Bergerate, the which were great, and inclosed with the ryver of Garon.

CAP. CIII

Howe the erle of Derby conquered Bergerathe.

WHAN thelre of Derby had ben at Burdeux a xv. dayes, he understode howe these lordes and knyghtes of Gascoyne were at Bergerath: in a mornyng he drewe thyderward, and he caused sir Gaultier of Manny, and sir Franque de Hall, to go before, who were marshallers of his hoost. That mornyng they rode thre leages to a castell that was Englysshe called Mounterouliyer, but a Monteculier. lytell leage fro Bergerath: ther they taryd all that day and that night; the next mornyng, their currous ranne to the barryers of Bergerath; and at their retourne, they reported to sir Gaultier of Manny, howe they had sene parte of the demeanour of the Frenchemen, the which they thought to be but symple. That mornyng thenglyshmen dynd betymes, and as they satte at dyner sir Gaultier of Manny behelde therle of Derby, and sayde, Sir, ye we were good men of armes, we shulde drinke this evenyng with the Frenche lordes beyng in Bergerath. Quoth therle, And for me it shall nat be let. Whan every man harde that, they sayde, Let us go arme us, for we shall ryde incontynent to Bergerath: ther was no more to do, but shortly every man was armed and a horsebacke. Whan the erle of Derby sawe his company so well wyld, he was right joyeouse and sayde,
CAP. CIII

The cronycle of

Lette us ryde to our enimies, in the name of God and saynt George. So they rode forthe with their baners displayed, in all the heate of they day, tyll they came to the bayles of Bergerath, the whiche were nat easy to wynne, for part of the ryver of Garon went about it. When the Frenchmen sawe thenglysshmen come to assaye them, they sayde amonge themselfe, howe they shulde some be driven backe; they yssued out in good order; they had many of the villayns of the contrey yll armed: the Englysshmen approched, and the archers began to shote fiersly. And whanne those forte-men felt the arowes lyght among theym and sawe the baners and standerdes wave with the wynde, the which they had nat bene acustomed to se before, than the reculed backe among their owne men of armes; than thenglysshmen of armes aproched, and dasshed in among their ennys, and slewe and bete downe on every part, for the Frenchmen of armes could nother aproche forwarde nor backewarde, for their owne forte-men, who reculed without order, and dyd stoppe them their way; ther wer many slayne and sore hurt. Thenglyshe archers were on bothe sydes the way, and shotte so holly tognyder, that none durste approche, nor yssue through theym; so the Frenchmen were put abacke into the subarbes of Bergerath, but it was to suche a myschefe for them, that the first bridge and bayles were wonne by clene force, for thenglysshmen entred with them, and there on the pave-ment many knyghtes were slayne, and sore hurte, and dyvers prisoner taken of them that adventured themselfe to defende the passage; and the lorde of Mirpoysye was slayne, under sir Gaultier of Marnes baner, who was the first that entred. When therle of Layll sawe that the Englysshmen had wonne the subbarbes, and slayne his men without mercy, he than reculed backe into the towne, and passed the brige with great trouble and danger. Byfore that bridge ther was a sore skirmyshe, the lorde and knyghtes fought hande to hande; the lorde of Manny avancde hymselfe so ferre among his ennemys, that he was in great daunger. Thenglysshmen toke ther the vcount of Bousquetyne, the lorde of Newcastell, the lorde of Chastellon, the lorde de Lescu; all other of the Frenchmen entred into the towne, and closed their gates, and lette downe their portcylse, and
SYR JOHN FROISSART

than wente to the walles to their defences. This assaut and skirmyssh endured till the evenynge; than thenglyshmen howe the erle withdrawing, right sore wery, and entred into the subbarbes, the which they had wonne, where they founde wyne and vitayle, suffycient for their hole hoost for two monethes.

The next mornynge, the erle of Derby caused his trumpettes to be sowned, and set his people in order of batayle, and aproched the towne, and made a sore assaut, the which endured tyll noone; lytell dyd thenglysshmen at that assaut, for they within defended themselfe valiantly; at noone the Englysshmen withdrew, for they sawe well they dyd but lese their payne. Than the lordes went to counsaille, and determynd to assaut the towne by water, for it was closed but with pales; than therle of Derby sende to the navy at Burdeaux for shyppes, and ther was brought fro Burdeaux to Bergerath, ix. shyppes and barkes. The next day in the evenyng they ordred their batayles; and in the next mornynge, by the son ryssing, the navy was redy to assaut by water: the baron of Stafford was captayne. Thenglysshmen and archers adventured theymselfe valiantly, and came to a great barryer before the pales, the which anone was cast downe to the yerth. Thanne they of the towne came to therle de Laylle, and to the other lordes and knyghtes that wer ther, and sayde, Sirs, take hede what ye wolle do, we be in a great jeopardy to be all lost; if this towne be lost we lese all that we have, and our lyves also; yet hit were better that we yielded ourselfe to the erle of Derby, than to have more damage. The erle of Laylle sayd, Go we to the place whe ther as nedeth moost defence, for we wyll nat as yet yele uppe the towne; so they went to defende the pales.

The archers that were in the barkes, shot so holly togyder that none durst aper at their defence, without they were slayne or sore hurte: there were within a two hundred Genowayes crobrowes, and nere were paynesed agaynste the shotte; they helde the Englyssh archers well awark all the day, and many hurt on Suche parties. Finally, the Englysshmen dyd so moche that they brake downe a great pane of the pales; than they within reculed backe, and desyred a treaty and a trewe, the which was graunted to endur all that day and the next nyght, so that they shulde nat fortify
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CIII

in the meane season: so eythre partie drewe to their lodges. Howe the erle ynges. This nyght the lordes within the towne were in great counsayle, and finally, about mydnight, they trussed bagge and baggage, and departed out of the towne of Bergerath, and toke the waye to the towne of Ryoll, the which was nat ferre fro thens. The next mornynge, the Englysshmen agayne entred into their barkes and came to the same place where they had broken the pales, and ther they founde certayne of the towne, who desyred them that they wolde pray the erle of Derby to take them to mercy, savyng their lyves and goodes, and fro thensforth they wolde be obey-saunt to the kynge of Englande. The erle of Quenefort, and therle of Penbroke sayde they wolde speke gladly for them; and so they came to the erle of Derby, and shewed hym thyntent of them of the towne: the erle of Derby sayde, He that mercy desyreth, mercy ought to have; bydde them open their gates, and shewe them they shal be assured of me and all myne. These two lordes went agayne to them of the towne, and shewed them the erle of Derbys intent; than they assembled all the people toguyder, and sowned their belles and opyned their gates, and yssued out menne and women in processyon, and humbly mette the erle of Derby, and so brought hym into the chiefe churche, and there sware faythe and homage to the erle in the name of the kynge of Englande, by vertue of a procuracyon that the erle hadde.

CAP. CIII

Howe the erle of Derby conquered dyverse townes and fortresses in hygh Gascoyne.

T

HE same daye that the erle of Laylle was come to Ryoll fro Bergerate, he and his company devysed to depart themselfe, some into one fortresse, and some into another, and to kepe fronter warre. And the seneshall of Tholouz, the erle of Vyllemure, were sent to Auberoche; sir Bertrame de Pressse, to Pellagrewe; the lorde Philippe of Dyone, to Mountagret; the lorde of Mountbrandon, to Mauldurane; Arnold de Dyone, to Mountgyne; Robert of Malmore, to Beaumount in Layloes; sir
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Charles of Poyters, to Pennes in Agynoes. Thus these CAP. CIII
knyghtes wer devyded fro garyson to garyson, and the erle Howe the erle
of Layle taryed in the Ryoll, and newe repayred the of Derby
fortesse. And whane the erle of Derby had taryed in
Bergerath two dayes, he demaunded of the seneshal of
Burdeaux what way was best for hym to take, for he sayde, fortresse in
he wolde natte lye styll; the seneshall aunsward, howe he hyghe Gas-
thought it best to drawe to Pyergourt, and into hyghe coyne.
Almaygne. Than the erle of Derby preparyed to departe, 1 Perigord.
and left captayne in Bergerathe, sir John de la Sante: and 2 mistake for
as thenglyshmen went forwarde, they came to a castell
called Lango, wherof the veigneur 3 of Tholouz was captayn. 4 Vignouer.
There thenglyshmen taryed and gave assaut to the castell,
bycause they sayde, they wolde natte leave suche a castell
behynde theym, but at that assaut the Englyshmen wanne
but lytell. The nexte day the assauters brought fagottes,
tymber, and other thynges, and fylled so the dykes, that
they might go to the walles: than sir Franque de Hall
counsayled them within to yelde, for he sayd they might
abyde so long, that it shulde be to late: they within desyre
resypte to gyve an answer, the which was agreed; and when
they had cousayled, the parties greed; so they departed
with their lyves, but they bare away nothyng, and went to
Monsacke. Therle of Derby made capitayne at Lango, a
squyer called Aymone Lyone, and with hym xxx. archers:
than therle rode to a towne called le Lacke, and they of the
towne met hym on the way, and brought hym the kayes, and
dyd homage to the kyng of Engelande. Than therle went
forthe, and came to Mandurant, the whiche he wanne with
assaut; whan he had sette rulers there, he went to the castell
of Mountgyse, and toke it also by assaut, and the captayne
he sende as prisoner to Burdeaux; than he rode to Pincache,
the which also he wanne, and also the castell de la Lewe,
and there he taryed thre dayes; the fourth daye he went
to Forsathe, 4 and wanne it lightly, and also the towre of 5 Prouesce.
Pondayre. Than he came to a great towne called Bea-
mount in Layloyes parteyninge to the inherytance of the
erle of Layle: thre dayes the erle of Derby lay there, and
made great assautes; the place was well fortified with men
of warre and artillery, howbeit, finally it was wonne, and
HH 241
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CIII

Howe the erle of Derby conquered dyverse townes and fortresses in hygh Gascoyne.

many of them within slayne. Than therle of Derby set there newe captayns, and men of warre; and fro thense he went to the chiefe towne, parteynynge to the erle of Laylle, wherof the lorde Philippe of Dyone, and Arnolde of Dyone were capitayns. The Englyshmen approched to the barryers, and the archers shotte so quicly, so that they of the towne durste nat appere at their defence: so the firste day the baylles harde to the gate of the towne was wonne, and in the evenynge the assaut seased, and every man drewe to their lodgynges. The next mornynge, the assaut began agayne in dyvers places so that they within wyster nat wel what to do; thane they desyred to have a peace; than an haraulde was sende to them, and a day respyte to treat, in the meane season. Than the erle of Derby hymselfe went to the barryers to speke with theym of the towne, and with hym was the baron of Stafforde, and the lorde of Manny; therle wolde they shulde have yielded themselfe simply, but they so agreed, that the towe shuld be under the obyesance of the kyng of Englande and that they shulde sende twelue of their burgesses into the cytie of Berdeaux for hostage; and the lorde and knightes of Fraunce departed under save conduct, and went to the Ryoll.

CAP. CV

Howe therle of Quenfort\(^1\) was taken in Gascoyne, and delyverd agayn by exchaung.

AFTER this conquest, the erle of Derby went to Bonvall, and there made a great assaut, and many hunte on bothe parties; finall, it was takene, and newe refreshed with captaynes, and men of warre. Than therle passed farther into the countie of Pyergourt, and passed by Bordall,\(^2\) without any assaut, and laboured so longe, that at laste he came before Pyergourt.\(^3\) Therle of that countrey was in the towne and the lorde Roger of Pyergourt,\(^4\) his uncle, and the lorde of Duras, with a sixscore knyghtes and squyeres of the countrey: the erle of Derby advissed howe he myght best assayle the towne to his advan- tage, for he sawe well it was strong: soo that all thynges

---

1 Oxford

2 Bourdello

3 Periguers

4 Quenfort P.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

consyddred, it was thought nat beste to employ his people there in that jeopardy, and so went and lodged a two leages thense, by a lytell ryver, to the intent to assayle the castelle of Quenfort of Pelagruel: about myndnight yssued out of Pyergourt, two hundred speares, and are it was day, they came into the lodgynges of thenglyshmen, and slewe and hurte many, and came into the erle of Quenfortes tent, and founde hym armynge: and he was so sharpeley assayed, that he was taken prisoner and thre other of his house. Than the Gascoyns went backe or the host were more styrrred, and drew agayne to their towne, as it was nedefull for theym; they founde their gates opyn, for they were hotely pursued and driven home into their barryers. Than the Gacosns alyghted and defended their barryers, and fought hende to hende so that they lost nothyng: than thenglyshmen retourned to their hoost. And the erle of Derby went to Pelagruel, and ther was sixe dayes, and made many great assautes; ther was the delverance made of the erle of Quenfort and his company by exchang, for the vcount of Bouquentyne, the vcount of Chastellone, the lorde of Lescue, and of the lorde of Newcastell, on the condicjon that the landes of Pyergourt shulde abye thre yerres in rest and peace, but the lordes and knygtes of the countrey might well arme themselfe without any forfette, but nothyng to be robbed and brennt within the countre durynge that space. Thus thenglyshmen departed fro before Pelagruel, for that pertayned to the countie of Pyergourt; than the erle of Derby went to Auberoche, a fayre castell and a stronge, pertayninge to the bysshoppe of Tholouz. Thenglyshmen lodged themseles there about as though ye were mynded to abye there a longe space, and dyde sende them wordes within, to yeelde themselfe, for if they were taken byforce, they were all but deed without mercy; they within badde great dout of their lyves, and they sawe no socour commynge fro no partie: than they yelded themselfe, and became subgettes to the kyng of England. Than the erle of Derby drawe towards Burdeaux, and left in garson in Auberoche, sir Franque de la Halle, and sir Alayne of Fynefrayde, and sir John of Lynedall. Thane in his way he came to a good towne called Lyborne, twelve leages fro Burdeaux, and layde siege
THE CRONYCLE OF

about it, and sayde, howe he wolde nat depart thesne tyll he had it. They within tooke cousaye, so that all thynges consydered, the good and yvell, they yelded them to theerle of Derby, and dyd homage, and ther therle taryed a thre days, and left the erle of Penbrooke, the lorde Stafford, sir Stephyn of Courcy,\(^1\) and sir Alysander Hausayle,\(^2\) styll in Lyborne; than therle of Derby, the erle of Quenfort,\(^3\) sir Gaultier of Manny, and other, rode streyght to Bourdeaux.

CAP. CVI

Howe therle of Layle layde siege before Auberoche.

At the retournynge of therle of Derby to Bourdeaux, he was joyfully receyved, and mette with processyon, and offeryd hym every thynge in the towne at his pleasure; there he taryed and sported hym with the burgesses, ladyes, and damosels of the towne.

Nowe lette us speke of the erle of Layle, who was at the Ryoll; whane he understode that the erle of Derby was at Burdeaux, and lay styll, and no lickylyhode that he wolde styrre any farther that season, than he wrote to the erle of Pyergourt, of Carmayne,\(^4\) of Conyves,\(^5\) and of Breuniquele,\(^6\) and to all the other lorde of Gascoyne of the Frenche partie, that they shulde assemble their men, and come and mete hym before Auberoche, for his mynde was to ley siege therto; they all obeyed hym, for he was as kyngge in those parties of Gascoyne. The lorde and knyghtes within Auberoche was nat ware of any siege, tyll it was layd rounde about them, so that none coude yssue out nor entre without parecyvinge. The Frenchemen brought with them four great engyns fro Tholouz, the whiche dyd caste daye and night, they made no other assaut; so within sixe days, they had broken the roffes of the towres and chambers, that they within durste nat abyde, but in lowe vautes; the intent of them of the host was to slee them all within, or els to have them yelde simply. Therle of Derby had knowledge howe the siege lay before Aubroch, but he knewe nat that his company wer so sore oppresed as they were. Whan sir
Syr John Froissart

Franche de Hall, sir Aleyne de Pyneforde, and sir John of Lyndall, who were thus besieged within Auberoche, sawe howe therle themselfe thus hardly bestadde, they demaunded among their varlets, if their were any, for a good rewarde, wolde bere a letter to therle of Derby to Burdeux. One varlet stepped forth and sayd, he wold gladly bere it, nat for the advauntage of his rewarde but rather to helpe to deliyere them out of daunger. In the nght, the varlette toke the letter, sealed with their seales, and thanne went downe the dykes, and so past through the hoost: there was none other remedy. He was met with the firste watche, and past by them, for he spake good Gascoyne, and named a lorde of the hoost, and sayd he partesynde to hym, but than agayn he was taken among the tentes, and so brought into the herte of the hoost; he was sherched, and the letter founde on hym, and soo he was keppe save tyll the mornyng, that the lorde were assembled togyder. Than the letter was brought to therle of Layle; they had great joye, whanne they parceyved that they within were so sore constrayned, that they coude nat long endure: than they toke the varlet, and hanged the letter about his necke, and dyd put hym into an engyn and dyde cast hym into the towne: the varlette fell downe deed, wherewith they within were sore troubled. The same season, therle of Pyergourt, and his uncle sir Charles of Poyters and the vycount of Carmany and the lorde of Duras, were a horsbacche and passed by the walles of the towne as nere as they might, and cryed to them within, and sayd in mockery, Sirs, demaunde of your messenger where he founde therle of Derby, synth he went out but this nght, and is retourned agayne so shortly. Than sir Franche de Hall sayde, Sirs, though we be here inclosed, we shal issue out whan it shal please God, and the erle of Derby: as wolde to God he knewe in what case we be in, for he knewe it there is none of you that durste kepe the felde, and if ye wolde sende hym worde therof, one of us shall yelde hymselfe prisoner to you, to be ransomed as a gentylman ought to be. The Frenchmen answered Nay, nay, sirs, the mater shal nat go so, the erle of Derby shal knowe it well ynome, whan with our engyns we have beaten downe the castell to the yerthe, and that ye have yelded up
THE CRONYCLE OF

simply for savyng of your lyves. Certaynly, quod sir Franque, we shall nat yelde ourselfe so, we woll rather dye here within. So the Frenchmen retournd agayne to their hoost, and the thre Englyshe knyghtes were sore abashed, for the stones that fell in the towne gave so sore strokes that it semed lyke thondre faled fro hevyn.

CAP. CVII

Howe thérle of Derby toke before Auberoch thérle of Layle and dyvers other erles and vycountes to the nombre of ix.

All the mater of taking of this messanger with the letter and necessytie of them within Auberoch, was shewed to the erle of Derby by a spye that had been in the Frenche hoost. Than thérle of Derby sent to the erle of Penbroke, beyng at Bergerath, to mete with hym at a certayne place; also he sende for the lorde Stafforde and to sir Stephyn Tombey, beyng at Lyborne; and the erle hymselfe, with sir Gaultier of Manny and his company, rode towards Auberoche, and rode so secretely with suche guydes as knewe the contrey, that thérle came to Lyborne and there taryd a day, abydinge the erle of Penbroke; and whan he sawe that he came nat, he went forth for the great desyre that he had to ayde them in Auberoch. Thus thérle of Derby, thérle of Quenforde, sir Gaultier of Manny, sir Rychard Hastynges, sir Stephyn Tombey, the lorde Feryers and the other issued out of Lyborne, and rode all the night, and in the mornyng they wer within two lytell leages of Auberoche. They entred into a woode and lyghted fro their horses and tyed their horses to pasture, abydinge for the erle of Penbroke, and there taryd tyll it was noone: they wyste nat well than what to do, bycause they were but thre hundred spers and sixe hundred archers, and the Frenchmen before Auberoch were a x. or xii. thousande men; yet they thought it a great shame to lese their companyons in Auberoche. Finally sir Gaultier of Manny sayde, Sirs, lette us leape on our horses,
SYR JOHN FROISSART

and let us coost under the covert of this woode, tyll we be on the same syde that joyneth to their hoost, and when we be nere, put the spurre to the horses, and crye our cryes: of Derby toks we shall entre whyle theye be at supper and unaware of us: before Aube-roch therle ye shall se them be so dysconfited, that they shall kepe none aray. All the lorde and knightes agreed to his sayeng: dyvers other than every man toke his horse, and ordayne all their pages erles and and baggage to abyde styll ther as they were; so they rode styll along by the wode, and came to a lytell ryver in a vale nere to the French host. Than they displayed their banes and penons and dasshed their spurre to their horses, and came in a frount into the French hoost among the Gascoyns, who were nothyng ware of that bussament: they were goyng to supper, and some redy sette at their meate: thynglyshmen cryed A Derby, a Derby, and overthrew teentes and pavylions, and swele and hurte many. The Frenchmen wost nat what to do, they were so hastad: when they came into the felde and assembled togyder, they founde the Englysh archers ther redy to receyve them, who shotte so feerly, that they swele man and horse, and hurte many. Therle of Layll was taken prisoner in his owne tent, and sore hurte; and the erle of Puyerquet and sir Roger his uncle in their tenentes; and ther was slayne the lorde of Dumas [and] sir Aymer of Poycters, and therle of Valencomy his brother was taken: every man fiedde that myght best; but therle of Conynes, the vycount of Carmayne, and of Villemur, and of Brunquell, and the lorde de la Borde, and of Taryde and other that were loged on the other syde of the castell, dree backe and wente into the feldes with their baners. Thenglyshmen who had overcome all the other, dasshed in feerly among them: ther was many a proper feat of armes done, many taken and rescued agayne. Whan they within the castell harde that noysse without, and sawe thenglysche baners and penons, incontynent they armed them and yssued out, and rushed into the thycrnest of the prease: they gretly refreshed the Englyshmen that had fought ther before. Wherto shulde I make long processe? All tho of therle of Laylles partie were nyygh all taken or slayne: yf the night had nat come on, ther had but fewe scapedde: ther were taken that day, what erles and vycountes to the nombre of ix.,
and of lorde, knyghtes, and squyers taken, so that ther
was no Englysshman of armes but that had ii. or iii. prisoners.
This batell was on saynt Larans nyght, the yre of our lorde
M.CCC.xl. and foure; thenglysshmen delt lyke good com-
panyons with their prisoners, and suffred many to depart
on their othe and promyse to retourne agayne at a certayne
day to Bererath or to Burdeaux. Than the Englysshmen
entred into Auberoche, and ther the erle of Derby gave
a supper to the moost part of the erles and vycountes
prisoners, and to many of the knyghtes and squyers.
Thenglysshmen gave laude to God, in that that a thousande
of them had overcome x. M. of their enemyes and had
rescued the towne of Auberoche, and saved their com-
panyons that were within, who by all lickelyhod shulde
have ben taken within ii. dayes after. The next day anone
upon sonne rysing, thyder came therle of Penbroke, with
his company, a thre hundred speres and a foure thousande
archers; thane he sayd to therle of Derby, Certaynly cosyn,
ye have done me great uncourtesie, to fight with our
enneymes without me, seyng that ye sent for me, ye might
have ben sure I wolde nat fayle to come. Fayr cosyn, quoth
therle of Derby, we desyred gretryly to have had you with us:
we taryd all day tyl it was fere past noone, and when we
sawe that ye came nat, we durst nat abyde no lenger; for if
our eneemyes had knowen of our commyng, they had ben in
a great advantage over us, and nowe we have the advantage
of them: I pray you be content, and helpe to gyde us to
Burdeaux. So they taryed all that day and the nexte nyght
in Auberoche; and the next day betymes they departed,
and left captayne in Auberoche a knight of Gascoyne,
called Alyssander of Chamont; thus they rode to Burdeaux,
and ledde with them the moost part of their prisoners.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. CVIII

Of the townes that therle of Derby wanne in Gascoyne goyng towarde the Ryoll.

There was no joy to make, nor how to receyve therle of Derby and sir Gaultier of Manny for the takyng of the erle of Laylle, and mo than two hundred knyghtes with hym. So thus passed that wynter without any more doynge in Gascoyne that ought to be remembred. And when it was past Eester, in the yere of our Lorde MCCC.xlv. in the myddes of May, therle of Derby, who had layne all that wynter at Burdeaux, made a great assemble of men of armes and archers to the entent to go and lay siege to the Ryoll; the first day, fro Burdeaux, he rode to Bergerath, wher he founde therle of Penbroke, who had in likewyse made his assembly. Ther they taryed thre dayes, and than departed and nombred their company, and founde howe they were M. men of armes, and two M. archers: than they rode so longe, tyll they came to saynt Basyll and layd siege therto: they within consyrded howe the greatest men, and moost part of Gascoyne, were prisoners, and sawe howe they shulde have no socoure fro no parte: so all thynges consyrded they yelded themslye, and dyd homage to the kyng of England. Than therle passed forthe and toke they way to Agyllone; and in his way, he founde the castell of Rochemyllone the whiche was well furnysshed with soudyers and artillary; howbeit, therle of Derby commanded to gyve assaut, and so ther was a ferse assaut. They within cast out great barres of yron and pottes with lyme, wherwith they hurt dyvers Englysshemen, suche as adventured themselye to sarr; whan therle sawe his men hurt and coude do no thyng, he withdrue the assaut. The next day he made the vyllayns of the countrey to bring thyder fagottes, busshes, donge, strawe, and eth, and fylled part of the dykes, so that they might go to the walles; and so they made CCC. archers redy, and CC. men of the countrey to go before them with pavyshes, and havyng great pycaxes of yron, and whyle they dyd
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CVIII  undermine the wall, the archers shuld shote: and so they
dyte, that none within theur aspere at their defence. This
assaut endured the moste part of the day, so that fiinally,
the myners made a grete hole through the wall, so that ten
men myght entre a front: thanne they within were so
abasshed, some fledde into the church, and somme stale
away by a prive gate. So this towne and castell was
taken, robbed, and the moost parte slayne, except suche as were
fledde into the church, the which there of Derby caused
to be saved, for they yelded themselfe simply. Than there
sette there newe captayns, two Englyssh squyers, Rycharde
Wylle,¹ and Robert Lescot:² than therle went to Mount-
segure, and layd siege therto and taryd ther a fyftene
dayes; captayne within was sir Hewe Bastefol. And every
day there was assaut, and great engyns were brought thrynder
fro Burdeaux, and fro Bergerath, so that the stones that
they cast brake downe walles, roffes, and houses. Therle of
Derby sende to them of the towne, shewing them that if
they were taken by force, they shulde all dye; and if they
wolde come under they obeysance of the kynge of Englane,
he wolde pardon them all and take them for his frendes.
They of the towne wolde gladly have yelded theym, and
went and spake with their captayne in maner of counsayle,
to se what he wolde say: and he ansered theym, and sayd,
Sirs, kepe your defence, we ar able to kepe this towne this
halfe yere, if nede be. They departed fro hym in semyn
well content, but at nyght they toke and putte hym in
prison, sayeng, howe he shulde never go out therof, without
so be he wold agre to make their peace with therle of
Derby; and whan that he had sworne that he wolde do his
devoyre, they let hym out of prison, and so he went to the
barryers of the towne, and made token to speke with the
erle of Derby; sir Gaultier of Mannya was ther present, and
he went and spake with him. The knight sayd, Sir Gaultier
of Mannya, ye ought natte to have marveyle, though we
close our gates agaynst you, for we have sworne fealtie to
the Frenche kyng; and I se well that ther is no persone in
his behalfe, that wyll stoppe you of your way, but methynke
ye are lyke to go farther; but sir, for myselfe, and for the
menne of the towne, I desyre you that we may abyde in

¹ Walles.
² Scott.
Syr John Froissart

Composicyon, that ye make us no warr, nor we to you the space of a moneth; and duryng that terme, if the Frenche kyng or the duke of Normandy, come into this contrey so strong as to fyghe with you, than we to be quyte of our covenantaunt; and if they come nat, or one of them, than we shall put us under ye obeysance of the kyng of England. Sir Gaultier of Manny went to therle of Derby, to knowe his pleasure in that behalfe; therle was content, so that they within shuld make no fortification in that season; and also, that if any of thenglyssmen ther lacked any vitayls, that they might have it of them for their money; to this they were content, and sent xii. burgesses of the town to Burdeaux in hostage: than thenglyssmen were refresshed with provision of the town, but none of them entred. Than they passed forth and wasted and exyled the contrey, the which was pleasant and frutefull, and came to a castell called Aguyllon; and the captayne therof came to therle and yelded up the castell, their lyves and goodes saved; wherof they of the contrey had gret marveyle, for it was named one of the strongest castels of the worlde; and when the captayne that had yelded up the castell so soone came to Tholouz, the which was xvii. leages thense, they of that town toke hym, and layd treason to his charge, and hanged hym up. The sayd castell stode bytwene two great ryvers able to bere shyppe; the erle of Derby newe repeyre the castell and made captayne ther sir John of Gombray: 1 thane the erle went to another castell called Segart, the whiche he toke by assaut, and all the soudyours within slayne; and fro thense he went to the town of le Ryoll.

Cap. CIX

Howe therle of Derby layd siege to the Ryoll, and howe that the town was yelded to hym.

Thus the erle of Derby came before the Ryoll, and layed siege therto on all sydes, and made bastydes in the feldes and on the wayes, so that no provision coulde entre into the town, and nyghe every day ther was assaut; the siege endured a longe space. And when the
THE CRONYCLE OF

moneth was expyreth that they of Segur\(^1\) shulde gyve up
their towne, the erle sent thyder, and they of the towne
gave up and became under the obeysaunce of the kyng
of Englande; the captayne, sir Hewe Bastefolk, became
servant to the erle, with other that were within, upon
certayne wages that they hadde. Thenglyashmen that had
lyen longe before the Ryoll, more than nyne wekes, had
made in the meane space, two belfroys of great tymbre,
with iii. stages, every belfroy on four great whelys, and the
sydes towadres the towne were covered with cure boly to
defende them fro fyrre and fro shotte; and into every stage,
ther were poyned C. archers. By strength of men these
two belfroyes were brought to the walles of the towne, for
they had so fylled the dykes that they myght well be
brought just to the walles; the archers in these stages
shotte so holly toguyder, that none durst aper at their
defence, without they were well paysshed; and bytwene
these two belfroyes, there were a CC. men with pyccaxes, to
myne the walles, and so they brake through the walles.
Thane the burgesses of the towne came to one of the gates,
to speke with some lorde of the hoost; when the erle of
Derby knewe thereof, he sent to them sir Gaultier of Manny
and the baron of Stafford; and when they came ther, they
founde that they of the towne wolde yelde them, their lyves
and goode saved. [When] sir Agous de Baus, who was cap-
tayne within, knewe that the people of the towne wolde yelde
up, he went into the castell with his company of soudyers, and
whyle they of the towne were entretynge, he conveyed out of
the towne, gret quantyte of wyne and other provision, and
than closed the castell gates, and sayd, howe he wolde nat
yelde up so sone. The foresayd two lordes retourned to
therle of Derby, shewyng hym howe they of the towne
wolde yelde themself and the towne, their lyves and goodes
saved. Thane therle sende to knowe bowe the captayne
wolde do with the castell, and it was brought wordes agayne
to hym, howe he wolde nat yelde. Than therle studied a
lytell, and sayde Well, go take them of the towne to mercy,
for by the towne we shall have the castell. Thane these
lordes went agayne to them of the towne and recyved them
to mercy, so that they shulde go out into the felede, and
SYR JOHN FROISSART

delyver therle of Derby the kayes of the towne, sayenge, Sir, fro hensworth we knowlege ourselfe subgettes, and obeyssaunt Howe therle to the king of Englande; and so they dyd, and sware that they shulde gyve no comforte to them of the castell, but to greve them to the best of their powers: than therle com-
maunded that no man shulde do any hurt to the towne of Ryoll nor to none of them within. Than therle entred into the towne and layd siege rounde about the castell, as nere as he might, and rered up all his engyns, the which caste nght and day agaynst the walles, but they dyde lytell hurt, the walles were so stronge of harde stone; it was sayd that of olde tyme it had ben wrought by the handes of the Sarays, who made ther warkes so strongly, that ther is none such nowe a dayes. When the erle sawe that he coulde do no good with his engyns, he caused theym to cease; than he called to hym his myners, to thynent that they shuld make a myne under all the walles, the whiche was nat sone made.

CAP. CX

Howe sir Water of Manny founde in the towne of the Ryoll the sepulcre of his father.

WHYLE this siege endured and that the myners were aworke, the lorde Gaultier of Manny re-
membred how that his fader was slayyne goyng a pylumage to saint James, and howe he harde in his youth howe he shulde be buryed in the Ryoll or there about. Thane he made it to be enquered in the towne, yf there were any manne coude shewe hym his fathers tombe, he shulde have a hundred crownes for his labour: and there was an aged man came to sir Gaultier, and sayd, Sir, I thynke I canne brynge you nere to the place wher your father was buryed; thanne the lorde of Manne sayde, If your wordes be trewe, I shal kepe covenauent, and more. 

Nowe ye shall here the maner howe the lorde Gaultiers father was slayne. It was trewe, that somtyme there was a bysshoppe in Cambresis, a Gascoyne borne of the house of Myrpoys: and so it fortuned that in his dayes, ther was at a tyme a great tourneyeng before Cambrey, wher as there
THE CRONYCLE OF

were v. C. knyghtes on both parties. And ther was a knyght Gascoyne tourneyed with the lorde of Manny, father to sir Gaultier, and this knyght of Gascoyne was so sore hurt and beaten, that he had never helth after, but dyed: this knyght was of kynne to the sayde bysshoppe; wherfore the lorde of Manny was in his indygnacion, and of all his lynage. A two or thre yere after certayne good men laboured to make peace bytwene them, and so they dyd: and for amenest the lorde of Manny was bournde to go a pylgrimage to saynt James. And so he went thyder warde: and as he came foreby the towne of Ryoll, the same season therle Charles of Valoys, brother to kyng Philippe, lay at siege before the Ryoll, the whiche as than was Englyshe, and dyvers other townes and citties, than pertayning to the kyng of Eng- lande, father to the kyng that layed siege to Tourney: so that the lorde of Manny, after the retournyng of his pylgrimage, he came to se theryl of Valoys, who was ther as kynge. And as the lorde of Manny went at night to his lodgyng, he was watched by the way, by certayne of them of the lynage of hym that the lorde of Manny had made his pylgrimage for; and so without therys lodgyng he was slayne and murdred, and no man knewe who dyd it; howebeit, they of that lynage were helde suspict in the mater, but they were so stronge and made such excuses, that the mater past, for ther was none that wold pursue the lorde of Mannes quarell. Than therle of Valoys caused hym to be buryed in a lytell chapell in the felde, the which as than was without the towne of Ryoll: and when therle of Valoys had wonne the towne, than the walles were made more larger, so that the chapell was within the towne.

Thus was sir Gaultier of Mannes fader slayne, and this olde man remembred all this mater, for he was present whan he was buryed. Thane sir Gaultier of Manny went with this gode aged man, to the place wher as his father was buryed, and ther they founde a lytell tombe of marble over hym, the which his servauntes layd on hym after he was buryed. Thane the olde man sayde, Sir, surely under this tombe lyeth your father; than the lorde of Manny rede the scripture on the tombe, the whiche was in latyn, and ther he founde that the olde man had sayd trouth, and gave hym
Syr John Froissart

his reward. And within two dayes after he made the tombe to be raysed, and the bones of his father to be taken up and put in a cofre, and after dyd sende them to Valencennes in the county of Heynalt, and in the freres ther, made them to be buried agayne honourably, and dyd there his obsequy ryght goodly, the which is yet kept yerely.

CAP. CXI

Howe the erle of Derby wanne the castell of the Ryoll.

NOWE let us retourne to the siege about the castell of the Ryoll, the which had endured xi. wekes: so long wrought the mynours, that at last they came under the base court, but under the dongeon they coude nat gette, for it stode on a harde rocke. Than sir Agous des Baus their capten, sayd to his company, Sirs, we be under-mynd, so that we ar in great daunger. Than they were all sore afraied, and sayd, Sir, ye ar in a great danger, and we also, without ye fynde some remedy; ye ar our chefe, and we wyll obey you truely. We have kept this house right honourably a longe season, and though we nowe make a composycion, we can nat be blamed: assay if ye canne get graunt of therle of Derby to let us depart, our lyves and goodes saved, and we to delvyer to hym this castell. Than sir Agous dyscendedde downe fro the hygh towre, and dyd put out his heed at a lytell wyndo, and make a token to speke with some of the host; than he was demaunted what he wolde have: he sayd he wolde fayne speke with therle of Derby, or with the lorde of Manny. Whan therle knewe therof, he sayd to the lorde of Manny and the lorde Stafforde, Lette us go to the fortesse, and knowe what the capten woll say. Than they rode togyder, and whan sir Agous sawe them, he toke of his cappe and saluted them eche after other, and sayde, Lordes, it is of trouth that the Frenche kyng sende me to this towne, to defende and to kepe it, and the castell, to my power; and ye knowe right well howe I have aquyt myselfe in that behalfe, and yet wolde if I might, but always a man may nat abyde in one
THE CRONYCLE OF

place: sir, yt it woll please you, I and all my company wolde depart, our lyves and goodes saved, and we shall yele unto you the fortesse. Than thercle of Derby sayde, Sir Agou, ye shall nat go so away; we knowe ryght well we have so sore oppressed you, that we may have you when we lyst, for your fortesse standeth but upon stays; yelede you simply, and we wyll recyve you. Sir Agou sayde, Sir, If we dyde so, I thynke in you so moch honour and gentynesse, that ye wold deale but courteysly with us, as ye wold the Frenche kyngs shulde deale with any of your knyghtes; for Goddes-sake sir, blemysch nat your noblenessse for a poore sort of soudyours that be here within, who hath won with moche payne and paryl their poore lyveng, whom I have brought hyther out of the provynce of Savoy, and out of Dauphynye; sir, knowe for trouthe, that yt the lest of us shulde nat come to mercy, as well as the best, we woll rather sell our lyves, in suche wyse that all the woride shulde speke of us: sir, we desyre you to bere us some company of armes, and we shall pray for you. Than therle and the other two lordes went parte and spake togyder. They spake long togyder of dyvers thynges; finally, they regarded the trouthe of sir Agou, and consydered howe he was a stranger, and also they sawe that they coude nat undermyne the dongeon, they agreed to recyve them to mercy. Than the erle sayde to sir Agou, Sir, we wolde gladly to all strauers bere good company of armes; I am content that ye and all your company depart with your lyves saved, so that you bere away nothyng but your armoure. So be it, quod sir Agou. Than he went to his company, and shewed them how he had spedde. Than they dyd on their harness and toke their horses, wherof they hadde no mo but sixe; some bought horses of thenglyssmen, the whiche they payed for truely. Thus sir Agou de Baus departed fro the Ryoll, and yelded up the castell to the Englysshemen, and sir Agou and his company wente to Tholous.
CAP. CXII

How therle of Derby toke the towne of Mauleon, and after the towne of Franch in Gascoyne.

WHAN the erle of Derby had taken his pleasure at Ryoll, than he went forth and left an Englyssh knyght at Ryoll, to repayre and amende that was broken; and he rode to Mountpesance, and made assaut there: and within there were but men of the country that were gone therdyer with their goodes, in trust of the strength of the place; and so they defended theymselfe as longe as they might; but finally, the castell was wonne with assaut, and by scalyng. But there were many of thenglyssh archers slayn, and an Englysshe gentylman slayne called Rycharde Pennevort, he bare the lorde Staffordes baner. Therle of Derby gave the same castell to a squyer of his, called Thomas of Lancastre and left with hym in garyson xx. archers: than therle went to the towne of Mauleon, and made assaut, but he wonne it nat so; at nyght there about they lodged. The nexte day a knyght of Gascone, called sir Alysander of Chamont, sayd to therle, Sir, make as though ye wolde dyslodge and go to some other part and leve a small sort of your people styll before the towne, and they within woll yssue out, I knowe theym so well, and let them chase your men that be behynde, and let us lyue under the olyves in a busshement, and whan they be past us, lette part of us folowe them, and some retourne towardes the towne. Therle of Derby was content with that counsayle, and he caused to abyde behynde the erle of Quenforde, with a hundred with hym all onely, well enformed what they shulde do: than all the other trussed bagge and baggage and departed, and went halfe a leage, and ther layd sir Gaultier of Manny with a great busshement, in a vale amonge olyves and vynes, and therle rode on forth. Whan they of Mauleon sawe the erle departe and some styll abydinge behynde, they sayde among themselfe, Let us go yssue out, and go and fyght with our ennemyes, that ar abydinge behynde their maister: we shall soone dysconset them, the whiche
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXII

How therle of Derby toke the town of Maulson.

shall be a great honoure and profette to us; they all agreed to that opynion, and armed them quickly and yssued out who myght first; they were a four hundred. Whan therle of Quenfort and his company sawe them yssue, they reculed backe, and the Frenchmen folowed after in grete hast, and so ferr they pursued them that they past the bushment. Than sir Gaultier of Mannyaes company yssued out of their bushment, and cryed Manny, and part of them dashe in after the Frenchmen, and another part toke the way streight to the towne: they founde the baylles and gates opyn and it was nyght; wherfore they within wende it had ben their owne company, that yssued out before. Than thenglysshmen toke the gate and the brige and incontynent were lorde of the towne, for suche of the towne as were yssued out, were inclosed bothe before and behynde, so that they were all taken and slayne; and suche as were in the towne dyde yelde them to therle of Derby, who receyved them to mercy, and of his gentynes respyted the towne fro brennyng and robbynge, and dyde gyve that hole seignorie to sir Alysaunder of Chamont, by whose advyce the towne was won; and sir Alysaunder made a brother of his captayne ther, called Antony of Chamont; and therle left with hym certayne archers and other with pavvsshes. Than therle departed and came to Wyelfranche¹ in Angenoyas, the whiche was won by assault and the castell also; and he lefte there for captayne a squyer of his, called Thomas Coq.² Thus therle rode al about the contrey and no man resystd hym, and conquered townes and castelles, and his men wanne ryches mervayle to esteme.

CAP. CXIII

Howe therle of Derby wanne the cytie of Angolesme.

WHAN the erle of Derby had this towne at his pleasure theane he rode to Myremont, drawyng towards Burdeaux, for all this journee his curours never aproched to port saynt Mary. Therle was thre dayes before Myremont, and on the fourth day they yelded: therle gave it to a squier of his, called John

¹ Villafranca. ² Cook.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Bristowe: and after, his men wan a lytell towne closed, standing on the ryer of Gerone, called Thomynes; and after, the stronge castell of Damassene, the whiche they well garnysshed with men of armes and archers. Than they came before the cytie of Angolesme and layd siege therto, and therle sayde, he wolde nat depart thense tyll he had it at his pleasure. Thane they within made apoyntment with the erle, to sende xxiii. of their chiefe burgesses to Burdeux, in hostage for the respyte of a peace for a moneth; and if within that space the Frenche kynge do sende a suffycient persone to kepe the felde agynst therle of Derby, than they to have agayne their hostages, and to be quyte of their bonde; and yf nat, than they to put theym under the obesaunce of the kynge of Englanede. This done, thane the erle rode to Blames, and layed siege therto: within were two captayns of Poyctou, sir Guysshart Dangle, and sir Wylyym de Rochhouart, and they sayde, they wolde yelde to no manne. And whyle this siege endured, some of the Englysshemen rode to Mortayne in Poyctou, where as sir Boucyquaut was captayne, and made there a great assaut, but it avayled nat, but dywers of them were hurt and slayne: and so departed thens, and went to Myrebell, and to Alney; and after came agayne to the siege of Blames: every day there was some feate of armes done. The terme of the moneth expyred that they of Angolesme shulde yelde, the erle of Derby sent thyder his two marshals, to whome they of the cytie swere homage and fealtie, in the behalfe of the kyng of Englanede: and so they were in peace, and had agayne restored their hostages: and the erle sent thyder, at their desyers, John of Norwych, to be their captayne. Styll the siege endured before Blames, so that thenglysshmen were halfe wery, for wynter approched and there they coulde wynne nothyng: than they determynd to go to Bourdeaux tyll another season; and so they dyslodged and went over Gerande, and so to Burdeaux, and than departed his people into dyvers garysons, to kepe fronter warre.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXIII

Howe sir Godfray Harecourt was banystshed out of Fraunce.

IN this season sir Godfray of Harecourt fell in the indignation of the Frenche kyng, who was a great baron in Normandy and brother to therle of Harecourt, lorde of saynt Savoyre the vcount and dyvers other townes in Normandy; and it was sayde all was but for envy, for a lytell before he was as great with the kyng and with the duke of Normandy, as he wolde dyseyre, but he was as than openly banystshed the realm of Fraunce; and ye the kyng could have gette hym in his yre, he wolde have served hym, as he dyd sir Olyver of Clyssone, who was beheeded the yere before at Parys. This sir Godfray had some frendes, who gave hym warnyng secretly howe the kyng was dyspleased with hym; than he avoyed the reynme assone as he myght, and went into Brabant to the duke there, who was his cosyn, who receyved hym joyfully. And ther he taryed a longe space and lyved of suche revnewe as he had in Brabant, for out of Fraunce he coude gette nothyng: the kyng had seased all his landes there of Constantynye, and tooke the profet therof hymselfe: the duke of Brabant coude in no wyse gette agayne this kynyte into the kynges favoure, for nothyng that he coude do. This dyspleasure cost greatly the realme of Fraunce after, and specially the contrey of Normandy, for the tokens therof remayned a hundred yere after, as ye shall here in this hystorie.

CAP. CXV

Of the dethe of Jaques Dartvell of Gaunt.

IN this season raynged in Flaunders in great prosperity and puysaunce, Jaques Dartvell of Gaunt, who was as great with the kyng of Englande as he wolde dyseyre: and he had promysed the kyng to make hym lorde and herytour of Flaunders, and to endewe his sonne the prince
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of Wales therwith, and to make the countie of Flandres a dukedome. For the which cause, about the feast of saynt John Baptist the yere of our Lorde God M.CCC.xlv the kyng of Engalande was come to Sluse with many lorned and knyghtes, and had brought thyder with hym the yonge prince his sonne, on the trust of the promise of Jaques Dartvell. The kyng with all his navy lay in the havyn of Sluse, and there he kept his house, and thyder came to vysette hym his frends of Flandres. Ther were great counsaylles bytwene the kyng and Jaques Dartvell on the one partie, and the counsaylis of the good townes of Flandres on the other partie; so that they of the countrey were nat of the agrement with the kyng, nor with Jaques Dartvell, who preched to theym that they shulde disheryte the erle Loyes their owne naturall lorde, and also his yong sonne Loyes, and to enheryte the sonne of the kyng of Engelande, the which thyng they sayd surely they wolde never agre unto. And so the laste day of their counsayll, the whiche was kept in the havyn of Sluse, in the kynges great shyppe, called the Katheryne, there they gav a fynall answere by common acorde, and sayde, Sir, ye have desyred us to a thynge that is great and weyghtie, the which her-after may sore touche the countrey of Flandres, and our heyres: trewely we knowe nat at this day no persone in the worlde, that we love the preferment of so moche as we do yours; but sir, this thynge we can nat do alone, without that all the commynaltie of Flandres acorde to the same; sir, we shall goo home, and every man speke with his company generally in every towne, and as the moost parte agre, we shal be content; and within a moneth we shall be here with you agayne, and thane gyve you a full answere, so that ye shal be content. The kyng nor Jaques Dartvell coude as than have none other answere; they wolde fayne have had a short day, but it wolde nat be. So thus departed that counsayle, and every man went home to their owne townes. Jaques Dartvell taryed a lytell season with the kyng, and stylly he promysed the kyng to bring them to his entent: but he was diseysed, for asone as he came to Gaunt, he went no more out agayne, for suche of Gaunt as had ben at Sluse at the counsayle there, when they were 261
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXV
Of the death of Jaques Dartvell of Gaunt.

retourned to Gaunt, or Jaques Dartvell was come into the
towne, great and small they assembled in the market place:
and ther it was openly shewed what request the kynge of
Engelande had made to them, by the settynge on of Jaques
Dartvell. Than every man began to murmure agaynst
Jaques, for that request pleased them nothynge, and sayde
that by the grace of God there shulde no suche untrouthe
be founde in them, as willingly to disheryte their naturall
lorde and his ysue, to enheryte a stranger; and so they all
departed fro the market place, nat content with Jaques
Dartvell.

Nowe beholde and se what fortune fell: if he had ben as
welcome to Gaunt as he was to Bruges and Ipre, they
wolde agreed to his opinyon as they dyde, but he trusted so
moche in his prosperyte and greatnesse, that he thought
soonc to reduce them to his pleasure. Whan he retourned,
he came into Gaunt, about noone; they of the towne
knewe of his commyng, and many were assembled toguyder
in the strete where as he shulde passe, and whane they sawe
hym, they began to murmure, and began to ron toguyder
there heedes in one hood and sayde, Beholde yonder great
maister, who woll order all Flaunderes after his pleasure, the
whiche is nat to be suffred. Also their were wordes sowen
through all the towne, howe Jaques Dartvell had ix. yere
assembled all the revenewes of Flaunderes, without any count
gyven, and therby hath kept his estate; and also send great
rychesse out of the countrye into Engelande secretly. These
wordes set them of Gaunt on fyr; and as he rode through
the strete, he perceyved that ther was some newe mater
agaynst hym, for he sawe suche as were wonte to make
reverence to hym as he came by, he sawe theym tourne
their backes towaerde hym and entre into their houses. Than
he began to doute; and assone as he was alyghted in his
lodgyng, he closed fast his gates, doores and wyndose: this
was skante done, but all the strete was full of men, and
specially of them of the small craftes: ther they assayled
his house bothe behynde and before, and the house broken
up; he and his within the house defended themselye a longe
space, and slewe and hurt many without; but finally he
coude nat endure, for thre partes of the men of the towne
Syr John Froissart

were at that assault. Whan Jaques saw that he was so sore oppressed, he came to a wyndowe with grete humlyte bare of the dothe heeded, and sayd with sayf langage. Good people what ayleth you, why be you so sore troubled agaynst me: in what maner have I displeased you, shewe me, and I shall make you amendes at your pleasures. Than suche as harde hym answered all with one voyce, We woll have acompt made of the grete tresoure of Flaunders, that ye have sende out of the way, without any tytell of reason. Than Jaques answered melky and sayde, Certaynely sirs, of the tresoure of Flaunders I never toke nothynyng; withdrawe yerselfys paciently into your houses and come agayne to morowe in the mornynge, and I shall make you so good acompt, that of reason ye shal be content. Thane all they answered and sayd, Nay, we woll have acompt made incontinent; ye shall nat scape us so, we knowe for truthe, that ye have sende great rychesse into Englande, without our knowledge; wherfore ye shall dye. Whane he harde that worde, he joyned his handes togyder, and sore wepyng sayd, Sirs, suche as I am ye have made me, and ye have sworne to me or this to defende me agaynst all persons, and nowe ye wolde slye me without reason. Ye may do it and ye woll, for I am but one man among you all; for Goddessake take better aduyce, and remembre the tyme past, and conserde the grete graces and curtesyes that I have done to you, ye wold nowe rendre to me a small rewarde for the grete goodnes that I have done to you, and to your towne in tyme past. Ye knowe ryght well marchaundyse was nighe lost in all this crounyng, and by my meanes it is recovered; also I have governed you in grete peace and rest, for in the tyme of my governoynge, ye have had all thynges as ye wolde wysshe, corne, rychesse, and all other marchaundyse. Than they all cryed with one voyce, Come downe to us, and prech nat so hyghe, and gyve us acompt of the grete tresoure of Flandre, that ye have governed so long without any acompt makynge, the whiche partwyneth nat to an officier to do, as to receyve the goodes of his lorde or of a contrey without acompt. Whan Jaques sawe that he coude nat apease them, he drewe in his heed, and closed his wyndowe, and so thought to steale oute on the backesyde into a
THE CRONYCLE OF

churche that joyned to his house, but his house was so broken that iii. hundred persons were entred into his house; and finally there he was taken and slayne without mercy, and one Thomas Denyce gave hym his dethe stroke. Thus Jaques Dartvell endedde his dayes, who had ben a great maister in Flanders: poore men first mounteth up, and unhappy men sleeth them at the ende. These tidynges anon spreide abrode the countrey: some were sore thereof and some were gladde.

In this season therle Loyes of Flaunders was at Teremounde, and he was ryght joyouse when he harde of the dethe of Jaques Dartvell, his olde ennemy; howbeit yet he durst nat trust them of Flaunders, nor go to Gaunt. Whan the kyng of Engelande, who lay all this season at Sluse, abyding the answere of the Flemmynges, harde howe they of Gaunt had slayne Jaques Dartvell his great frende, he was sore displeased: incontynent he departed fro Sluse, and entred into the see, sore threnyng the Flemmynges and the countrey of Flaunders, and sayd howe his dethe shulde be well revenged. Than the counsayls of the gode townes of Flaunders ymagined well howe the kyng of England wolde be soore displeased with this dede; than they detersd to go and excuse themselfe, specially they of Bruges, Ipre, Courtra, Andewarpe, and of Francke. They sent into Englande to the kyng for a salve conduct, that they might come to their excuse; the kyng, who was as than somewhat aswaged of his dyspleasure, graunted their desyre; than there came into Engelande, men of estate out of the gode townes of Flaunders, except of Gaunt; this was aboute the feest of saynt Mychaell, and the king beyng at Westmynyster besyde London. There they so mekely excused them of the dethe of Jaques Dartvell, and swere solemnly that they knewe nothyng therof tyll it was done; if they had, he was the man they wolde have defended to the best of their powers, and sayde howe they were right sorie of his dethe, for he had governed the contrey right wysely; and also they sayde that though they of Gaunt hadde done that dede, they shulde make a sufficent amendes; also sayenge to the kyng and his counsell, that though he be deed, yet the kyng was never the farther of fro the love and favour
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of them of Flanders in all thynge except the inherytance of Flanders, the which in no wyse they of Flanders wol. Of the deeth put away fro the ryght heyres: sayeng also to the kyng, Sir, of Jaques ye have fayre yssue, bothe sonnes and daughter: as for the prince of Wales your eldest sonne, he canne nat fayle but to be a great prince, without the inherytance of Flanders: sir, ye have a yonge daughter, and we have a yonge lorde, who is herytoure of Flanders; we have hym in oure kepynge, may it please you to make a maryage bytwene them two, so ever after the county of Flanders shall be in the yssue of your chylyde. These wordes and suche other apacead the kyng: and finally was content with the Flemmynges and they with hym; and soo lytell and lytell the deeth of Jaques Dartvell was forgeten.

CAP. CXVI

Of the deeth of Wyllyam erle of Heynault, who dyed in Freese and many with hym.

In the same season the erle Wyllyam of Hevault, beynge at siege before the towne of Dautryche, and there hadde lyen a long season, he constrayned theym so soore, what by assautes and otherwyse, that finally he hadde his pleasure of them. And anone after in the same season, about the feest of saunt Remy, the same erle made a great assemble of men of armes, knyghtes and squyres, of Heynault, Flanders, Brabant, Holland, Guerle, and Jullyers; the erle and his company departed fro Dordreiche in Hollande, with a great navy of shyppes, and so sayled towrds Freese, for the erle of Heynault claymed to be lorde there; and yf the Fresons had been men to have brought to reason, the erle indeede hadde there great ryght, but there he was slayne, and a great nombre of knyghtes and squyres with hym. Sir John of Heynault aryved nat there with his nephue, for he aryved at another place; and whan he harde of the deeth of his nephue, lyke a manne out of his mynde he wolde have fought with the Fresons, but his servantes, and specially sir Robert of Glens, who as thanne was his squyer, dyd putte hym into his shyppe agayne agaynest his wyll; and
THE CRONYCLE OF

so he returned agayne with a small company, and came to mount saynt Gertrude\(^1\) in Hollande, wher the lady his nece was, wyfe to the sayd erle, named Jahan, eldest daughter to the duke of Brabant; and than she went to the lande of Buyche,\(^2\) the which was her endowris. Thus the countie of Heynalt was voyde a certayne space; and sir John of Heynalt dyd governe it unto the tyme that Margaret of Heynalt, daughter\(^3\) to therle Aubert, came therde and toke possessyon of that herytage, and all lordes and other dyde to her feaultie and homage. This lady Margaret was maryed to the lorde Loyes of Bavyer, emperour of Almayne\(^4\) and kynge of Romayns.

CAP. CXVII

Howe sir John of Heynalt became Frenche.

A NONE after, the French kyng entreated and caused the erle of Bloys to entreat this lorde John of Heynalt to become Frenche, promysing to gyve hym more revenues in Fraunce, than he had in Englande, to be assigned wher he wolde hymselfe devyse; to this request he dyd nat lightly agre, for he had spent all the floure of his youth in the servyce of the kyng of Englande, and was ever wel beloved with the kyng. Whan therle Loyes of Bloyes, who had maryed his daughter and had by her thre sones, Loyes, John, and Guy, sawe that he coude nat wynne hym by that meanes, he thought he wold assay another way, as to wyn the lorde of Saguynels,\(^5\) who was chefe companyon and grettest of counsell with the lorde John of Heynalt; and so they bytwene them devyseth to make hym blyevel that they of Englande wolde nat pay hym his pencyon; wherewith sir John of Heynalt was sore displeased, so that he renounced his servyce and good wyll that he bare to the kyng of Englande. And whan the Frenche kyng knowe therof, incontynent he sent suffycent messangers to hym, and so retayned hym of his counsaylle with certayne wages, and recompesed hym in Fraunce with as moche or more than he had in Englande.

\(^1\) Gertrude
\(^2\) Binck near Mens
\(^3\) mother
\(^4\) Germany
\(^5\) Fagnolle
Of the great hoost that the duke of Normandy brought into Gascone agaynst therle of Derby.

The Frenche kyng was well informed of the conquestes that the erle of Derby had made in the countrey of Gascone; thanne he made a great sommons, that all noble and nat noble able for the feate of warre, shulde be at Orlyaunce and at Bourges and there about, at a certayne day lymytted. By reason of this commande ment came to Parys duke Odes of Burgoyne, his sonne, and therle of Arthoys, and of Colayne, they came to Boulogne. T

the kyng with a thousande speares. Thane came the duke of Burbone, and therle of Ponthyeu his brother, with a great nombre of men of armes; thyder also came the erle of Ewe and of Gyynes constable of Fraunce with a great company, also therle of Tankervyll, the dolphyne of Auverne, therle of Forestes, therle of Dampmartyne, therle of Vendone, the lorde of Coucy, the lorde of Craon, the lorde of Sully, the byshoppe of Bewvayes, the lorde of Frennes, the lorde of Beaujewe, the lorde John of Chaalon, the lorde of Roy, and dyverse other, they all assembled in the cytie of Orlysaunce: they of that part of Loyre, and they of Poayctou, of Xaynton, of Rochell, of Caoursyn, and Lymosyn, they met in the marches of Tholouz. So all thes passed forth to Roueryng, and they founde moche more company assembled in the cytie of Rodes, and in the marches of Auverne and Provence; so at last they all came to the cite of Tholouz and there about, for they coude nat be all lodged in the cytie, for they were in nombre mo than a hundred thousand; this was in the yere of our Lorde God M.CCC.xlv. Anone after the feast of Christmas, the duke of Normandy who was chefe of that hoost, rode forth with his two marshals before hym, the lorde of Momorency, and the lorde saynt Venant: first they went to the castell of Myremont, the which the Englyshmen had wonne before, and captayne within was one John Bristowe: there they made assaut. Within were a hundred Englysshmen; and with the Frenchmen was sir Loyes of
CAP. CXVIII Spayne, with Genowayes crosbowes who sparredde no shotte, so that they within the castell coulde nat defende themselfe, but that the castell was won, and they all take and slayne with the captyayne. Than the marshals set ther newe men. Than they passed forthe and came to Vyle Franche in Agenoyes; there all the hoost layd siege, and assayled the town. At that season the captyayne, sir Thomas Corque 1 was nat there, he was at Berdeaux with therle of Derby, who had sent for hym; howbeit, they within defended themselfe valiantly, but finally they were taken perforce, and the town robbed and brest, and slayne the moste part of the soudiers. Than the hoost drew the to the cytie of Angolesme, and layd siege there; captyayne within was a squyer called John Normell. 2 Whan therle of Derby harde of this gret hoost and howe they had wonne agayne Myrmount and Vyle Franche, and brest the town, and left the castell voyde, than he sent four knyghtes with therscore men of armes, and thre hundred archers to Vyle Franche, to entre into the castell and to close the gates agayne of the town: and promysed them, that if the Frenchmen came thynere agayne to assayle theym, he wolde souuure them whatsoever fell therof: and so these four knyghtes, that is to say, sir Stephyn Tombey, sir Rycharde Heldone, sir Rffe Has- tynges, and sir Normant of Fynfroyde went thynere and newlye fortified the town and castell. Than therle of Derby desye the erle of Penbroke, sir Gaultier of Manny, sir Franque de Hall, sir Thomas Coque, sir John de la Touche, 3 sir Rycharde of Beavayes, sir Philippe Reckelove, sir Robert Neyyll, sir Thomas Briset, 4 and dyverse other knyghtes and squyres to go all to Aguyllon, and to kepe that fortes for he wolde be sore displeased if that shulde be lost. They departed and were a xl. knyghtes and squyres, and thre hundred men of armes, with archers; and so they entred into the stronge castell of Aguyllon, and there they founde a sixscore soudyours all redy that therle of Derby had left ther before; than they made provision for all thynge necessarie. And as these foresayd four knyghtes came towards Vyle Franche, they founde in their way great plente of beafes, mottons, and corne, the which they toke with them into their town, and they repayed agayn the castell,
SYR JOHN FROISSART

and mended the walles and gates of the towne, so that they CAP. CXVIII
were at last a fyftene hundred men, able to make defence. Of the great
and had vytayle sufficent for sixe monethes. The duke of
Normandy, who had long lyen at sieg before Angolesme,
sawe howe he coude nat wynne the towne by assaut for
every day he lost of his men; than he commanded to make
no more assautes but to remewe nerer to the towne. On a agaynst therle
day the seneshall of Beaucayre came to the duke and sayd,
Sir, I knowe well all the marchese of this countre; if it
wyll please you to lette me have a sixe hundred men of
armes, and I shall go abrode into the contre, and gette
vytayle for your hoost, for within a whyle we shall lacke;
the duke was content. The next day the seneshall toke
with hym certayne knightes, squyers, and lorde, that were
content to go under hym: first the duke of Burbon, therle
of Ponthieu his brother, the erle of Tankervyll, therle of
Forestes, the dolphyn of Auverne, the lorde of Pons, the
lorde of Partney, the lorde of Couy, the lorde Daubigny,
the lorde Dausemont, the lorde of Beaujewe, sir Guysharde
Dangle, sir Sayntre, and dyverse other, to a ix. C. speares.
They toke their horse in the evenyng and rode all nght
tyll the brekyng of the day in the mornyng, and so came to
a gret towne that was but newly wonne by thenglysshmen,
called Athenys: and there a spy came to the seneshall and
sayd, Sir, ther is in the towne a sixscore men of armes,
Gascons and Englysshe, and iii. hundred archers, who woll
defende the towne if ye gyve assaut, but I sawe this morn-
yng a ii. C. great beeestes putte out of the towne into the
medowes, joyninge to the towne. Than the seneshall sayd,
Sirs, I thinke it best, let all our company abyde styll here
in this valey and I wolle go with lx. with me, and fetche the
catayle hyther, and I thinke thenglysshmen wolle ysaue in-
contynent to rescue the pray, than shall ye mete with them.
So this was done. The seneshall with threscore well horsed,
rode by wyues covert about the towne by gidyng of the
spy, tyl at last they came into the fayre medowes, wher
the catayle pastured: than they drave all the beeestes togyder
alonge by the towne by another way than they came thyder:
they of the castell and on the walles sawe them, and began
to blowe and to styrrre in the towne, and awaked some out

269
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXVIII
Of the great hoost that the duke of Normandy brought into Gascony against the realm of Derby.

1 Lucy.

CAP. CXIX
Howe John Norwyche scaped fro Angolesme whan the towne was yelded to the Frenchmen.

Thus these lorde of France helde a great season sege before Angoleme, and they ranne over all the countrey that thenglysshmen hadde wonne before, and dyd moche trouble, and toke many prisoners and great prayes, the which they brought to their hoost; the two bretherne of Burbon achyved great laude and prayse for aways they went forth with the formast. Whan John Norwiche sawe that the duke wolde nat depart thems till he had the towne at his pleasure, and perceved howe their vitayls began to wast and that the erle of Derby made no maner to rescue them; and also he sawe well howe they of the towne enclynyd greatly to the Frenche party, for they wolde have tourned French, or that tyme, if they had durst, therfore he doubted of treason: wherfore he thought to save hymself and his company. On the evyn of the Purification of our lady, all alone he went to the wallles of the cyte, without shewyng to any man what he wolde do: he made a
SYR JOHN FROISSART

token with his hatte to them of the host; they that saw the signe came thyder and demaunded what he wolde. He sayde he wolde gladly speke with the duke of Normandy, or with one of his marshals: incontynent this was shewed to the duke who went thyder and certayne knyghtes with hym: assone as the captayne sawe the duke, he toke of his cap and saluted the duke, and the duke saluted hym and sayde, John, howe is it with you, woll you yelde yourselfe. Sir, quoth he, I am nat so yet determyned; but sir, I wold deseire you in the honoure of our lady, whose day shal be to morowe, that ye wolde graunt a truse to endure all onely but to morowe, so that you nor we, none to grewe other, but to be in peace that day. The duke sayde, I am content, and so they departed. The next day, which was Candelmas day, John Norwiche and his company armed them, and trussed all that they had to bere away: than they opaned their gate and issued oute: than they of the host began to styrre; than the captayne rode on before to them, and sayd, Sirs, beware, do no hurt to none of us, for we woll do none, we have truse for this day all onely, agreed by the duke your captayne; if ye knowe it nat, go and demaunde of hym, for by reason of this trewe, we may ryde this day whyther we woll. The duke was demaunded what was his pleasure in that mater; the duke answered and sayde, Let them depart whyder they woll a Goddename, for we can nat let them, for I woll kepe that I have promysed. Thus John Norwych departed and all his company, and passed the French host without any damage and went to Ayylon; and whan the knyghtes ther knewe howe he had saved hymselfe and his company, they sayde he had begyled his ennemyes by a good subtyltie. The next day after they of the cytie of Angolesme went to counsayle, and determyned to yelde up the towne to the duke: they sent to hym into the host certayne messangers, who at last spedde so well, that the duke toke them to mercy and pardoned them all his yvell wyll, and so entred into the cytie and into the castell, and toke hommage of the cytizens, and made captayne ther Antony Vyllers, and set a hundred soudyres with hym. Than the duke went to the castell of Damassene, where he helde siege xv. dayes and every day assaut; finally it was
THE CRONYCHLE OF

CAP. CXX

Howe the duke of Normandy layd siege to
Aguyllon with a hundred thousande men.

THE duke of Normandy and these lorde of Fraunce
dyd so moche that they came to the castell of Aguyl-
lone: there they layde their siege aboute the fayre
medowes, alonge by the ryver able to bere shyppe, every
lorde amonwe his owne company and every constable by
hymselfe, as it was ordayned by the marshals. This sege
endured tyll the feest of saynt Remy: ther were well C.
thousande men of warr, a horsebacke and a fote: they made
lightly every day two or thre assautes, and moost commonly
fro the mornynge tyll it was nere nyght without cesynge,
for ever her came newe assautes that wolde nat suffre
them within to rest. The lorde of Fraunce sawe well they
coude nat well come to the fortresses without they passed
the ryver, the which was large and depe. Than the duke
commanded that a bridge shuld be made, whatsoever it
coste, to passe the ryver; there were sete awarke, mo than
thre hundred workemen, who dyde worke day and nyght.
Whan the knyghtes within sawe this brige more than halfe
made over the ryver, they decked thre shyppes, and entred
into theym a certayne, and so came on the workemen,
and chased them away, with their defenders; and ther they brake all to peaces that had ben longe a makyng. Whane the Frenche lordes saw that, than they apayrelled other shyppes, to reyst agaynst their shyppes; and than the workemen beganne agayne to worke on the bridge, on trust of their defenders; and than they had worked halfe a day and more, sir Gaultier of Manny and his company entred into a shyppe, and came on the workemen, and made them to leave warke and to recule backe, and brake agayn all that they had made. This besynesse was nygh every day; but at last the Frenchmen kept so well their workemen, that the bridge was made perforce; and thanne the lordes and all their army passed over in maner of batayle, and they assawtedde the castell a hole day togyder without cesyng, but nothyng they wanne; and at nyght they returned to their lodgynges: and they within amended all that was broken, for they had with them workemen ynough. The next day the Frenchmen devyded their assauters into four parts, the first to begynne in the morning and to contynue tyll nyne, the seconde tyll noon, the thyrde to evyn song tyme, and the fourth tyll nyght: after that maner they assayled the castell sixe dayes togyder; howebeit they within were nat so sore traveyled, but alwayes they defended themselfe so valantly, that they without wanne nothyngne, but onely the bridge without the castell. Thane the Frenchmen toke other counsayle; they sende to Tholouz for eyght great engyns, and they made there fourte gretter, and they made al xii. to cast day and nyght agaynst the castell, but they within were so well pavyshed, that never a ston of their engyns dyde theym any hurt; it brake somwhat the coveryng of some houses. They within had also great engyns, the which brake downe all the engynus without, for in a shorte space they brake all to pecys sixe of the greatest of them without. Durynge this siege often tymes sir Water of Manny yssued out with a hundred or sixe score companyons, and went on that syde the ryver a forsyngyne, and returned agayn with great prayes in the syght of them without. On a day, the lorde Charles of Momorency, marshall of the host, rode forthe with a fvye hundred with hym, and whane he returnned, he drave before hym a great
THE CRONYCLE OF

nombre of beestes, that he had get togyder in the countrey
to refreshe toost with vytayle; and by adventure he
encountred with sir Gaultier of Manny. There was bytwene
them a great fight and many overthrown, hurte, and
slayne; the Frenchmen were five agaynst one. Tidynes
therof came unto Aguillon: than every man that myght
ysued out, therle of Penbroke first of all and his company;
and whan he came, he founde sir Gaultier of Manny a fote,
enclosed with his enneyes, and dyde meravyls in armes. In-
contynent he was rescued and remounted agayne, and in the
meane season, some of the Frenchmen chased their beesets
quycely into the hoost, or els they had lost them, for they
that yssued out of Aguillon set so fearsly on the French-
men, that they putte theym to the flyght, and delvyerd
their company that were takenne and tooke many French-
men prisoners, and sir Charles of Momorency had moche warke
to scape: than thenglysshmen retourne into Aguillon.
Thus every day almost there were suche renounters,
sbye the assautes. On a day all the hole hoost armed
them, and the duke commaundede that they of Tholoue, of
Carcassone, of Beaucayre, shulde make assaujt fro the morn-
ynge tyll noone, and they of Remerpre,1 Caours and
Agenoys fro noone tyll nyght: and the duke promysed
who soever coude wynne the brige of the gate shulde have
in warde a hundred crownes. Also the duke, the better to
mentayne this assaut, he caused to come on the ryver
diverse shyppes and barges: some entred into them to
passe the ryver, and some went by the bridge: at the last
some of them toke a lyttell vessell and went under the
brige, and dyde cast great hokes of yron to the drawe
bridge, and than drewe it to them so sore, that they brake
the chenes of yron that helde the bridge, and so pulled
downe the bridge perforce. Than the Frenchmen lept on the
bridge so hastely, that one overthrew another, for every
man desyred to wyn the hundred crownes. They within
cast downe barres of yron, peces of tymbre, pottes of lyme,
and hote water, so that many were overthrown fro the
bridge into the water and into the dykes, and many slayne
and sore hurt; howbeit the bridge was wonne perforce,
but it cost more than it was worthie, for they coude nat for

¹ Remerpre.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

all that wyn the gate. Than they drewe abacke to their lodgynges for it was late: thane they within yssued out, Howe the and newe made agayne their drawe bridge, stronger thane duke of ever it was before. The next day ther came to the duke two connying men maisters in carpentre, and sayde, Sir, if ye well let us have tymbre and workemen, we shall make foure scaffoldes as hygh or hyer thane the wallles. The duke commaundd that it shulde be done, and to get carpenters in the contrey, and to gyve them good wages; so these four scaffoldes wer made in four shyppes, but it was long first, and cost moch or they were finysshed. Than suche as shulde assayle the castell in them were apoynted and entred; and whan they were passed halfe the ryver, they within the castell let go four martynetes that they had newlye made, to resyst agaynst these scaffoldes. These four martynettes dyd cast out so great stones, and so often fell on the scaffoldes, that in a short space they were all to broken, so that they that were within them coulde nat be pavysshed by them, so that they were fayne to drawe backe agayne; and or they were agayne at lande one of the scaffoldes drowned in the water, and the moost part of them that were within it; the which was great damage, for therin were good knyghtes, desyringe their bodyes to avaunce. Whan the duke sawe that he coude nat come to his entend by that meanes, he caused the other thre scaffoldes to rest: than he coude se no waye howe he might gette the castell, and he had promysed nat to departe thense, till he had it at his wyll, without the kyng his father dyd sende for hym. Than he sende the constable of France, and the erle of Tankervyll to Parys to the kyng, and there they shewed hym the state of the siege of Aguyllone. The kynges mynde was that the duke shulde lyfe there styll, till he had won them by famyn, syth he coude nat have them by assaut.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP CXXI

Howe the kyng of Englande came over the see agayne to rescue them in Aguyllone.

The kyng of Englande, who had harde howe his men were sore constrained in the castell of Aguillon, than he thought to go over the see into Gascoyne with a great army: ther he made his provisyon, and sent for men all about his realme and in other places, wher he thought to spede for his money. In the same season the lorde Godfray of Harecourt came into Englande, who was banysshed out of Fraunce; he was well receyved with the kyng and retayned to be about hym, and had fayre landes assigned hym in Englande, to mentayne his degree. Than the kyng caused a great navy of shyppes to be redy in the havyn of Hampton,1 and caused all maner of men of warr to drawe thyder. About the feast of saynt John Baptyst, the yere of our Lorde God, M.CCC.xlv. the kyng departed fro the quene and lefte her in the gydinge of the lorde of Cane 2 his cosyn : and he stablysshed the lorde Persy and the lorde Nevyll to be wardyns of his realme with the archebysshoppe of Yorke, the bysshoppe of Lyn-colne, and the bysshoppe of Durham: for he never voyded his realme but that he lefte ever ynowe at home to kepe and defende the realme, yt nede were. Than the kyng rode to Hampton, and there taryed for wynde; than he entred into his shyppe and the prince of Wales with hym, and the lorde Godfray of Harecourt, and all other lordes, erles, barownes, and knyghtes, with all their companyes; they were in nombre a foure thousande men of armes, and ten thousande archers, besyde Iryssmen and Walshmen that followed the host a fote.

Nowe I shall name you certayne of the lordes that went over with kyng Edwarde in that journey. First, Edward, his eldtest sonne, prince of Wales, who as thanne was of the age of xiii. yeres or there about: the erles of Herforde, Northampton, Arundell, Cornewall, Warwyke, Huntyngedon, Suffolke, and Oxenforth: and of barons the lorde Mor-

1 Southampton.
2 Kent.
Syr John Froissart

Tymer, who was after erle of Marche, the lorde John, cap. cxxi Loyes, and Roger of Beauchampe, and the lorde Reynold Howe the Cobham; of lordes the lorde of Mombray, Rose, Lucy, Felton, Brastone, Myllon, Labey, Maule, Basset, Barlett, and Wylloughby, with dyvers other lordes: and of bachelors there was John Chandyoys, Fytzwaren, Peter and James Audelay, Roger of Vertuall, Bartylmewe of Bries, and in Aguyllone. Rycharde of Penbruges, with dyvers other that I can nat name: fewe ther were of strangers: ther was the eric Hanyou, sir Olphas of Guystels, and v. or vi. other knyghtes of Almayne, and many other that I can nat name. Thus they sayled forth that day in the name of God; they were well onwarde on their waye towards Gascone, but on the thirde day ther rose a contrary wynde and drave them on the marches of Cornwall, and ther they lay at ancre vi. dayes. In that space the kyng had other counsell by the meanes of sir Godfray Harcourt; he counselled the kyng nat to go into Gascoyne, but rather to set a lande in Normandy, and sayde to the kyng, Sir, the countre of Normandy is one of the plentious countreis of the worlde: sir, on jeopardy on my heed, if ye woll lande ther, ther is none that shall resyst you: the people of Normandy have nat ben used to the warr, and all the knyghtes and squyers of the contrey ar nowe at the siege before Aguyllon with the duke: and sir, ther ye shall fynde great townes that be nat walled, wherby your men shall have suche wynning, that they shal be the better therby xx. yere after: and sir, ye may folowe with your army till ye come to Cane in Normandy; sir, I requyre you byleve me in this voyage. The kyng, who was as than but in the flour of his youth, desyring nothyng so moche as to have dedes of armes, inclyned greatly to the sayeng of the lorde Harecourt, whom he called cosyn. Than he commanded the maryners to set their course to Normandy; and he toke into his shyp the token of thadmyrall therel of Warwyke, and sayd howe he wolde be admyrall for that vyage, and so sayled on before as governour of that navy, and they had wynde at wyll. Than the kyng arvyed in the yale of Constantyne, at a port called Hogue saynt Wast. Cotentin. Tydinges anone sprede abrode howe thenglyshmen were a lande; the townes of Constantyne sent worde therof to
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXXI
Parys, to kynge Philippe: he had well harde before howe
the kynge of Engelande was on the see with a great army,
but he wist nat what way he wolde drawe, other into Nor-
mandy, Bretanye, or Gascoyne. Assone as he kneue that
the kynge of Engelande was a lande in Normandy, he sende
his constable therle of Guynes, and the erle of Tankervell,
who were but newly come to hym fro his sonne fro the
siege at Aguylon, to the towne of Cane, commaundyng
them to kepe that towne agaynst the Englyshmen. They
sayd they wolde do their best: they departed fro Parys with
a good nombre of men of warre, and dayly there came mo
to them by the way; and so came to the towne of Cane,
where they were receiyved with great joye of men of the
towne and of the countrye there about, that were drewen
thyder for suretie: these lordees toke hede for the provisyon
of the towne, the which as than was nat walled. The kynge
thus was aryved at the port Hogue saynt Wast, nere to
saynt Sayvous the Vyeount, the right herytage to the lorde
Godfray of Harcourt, who as than was ther with the kynge
of Engelande.

CAP. CXXII
Howe the kynge of Engelande rode in thre batayls
through Normandy.

WHANE the kynge of Engelande arryved in the
Hogue saynt Wast, the kynge issuued out of his
shyppe, and the firste fote that he sette on the
grounde, he fell so rudely, that the blode brast out of his
nose. The knyghtes that were aboute hym toke hym up and
sayde, Sir, for Goddessake entre agaynse into your shyppe, and
come nat a lande this day, for this is but an yvell signe for
us. Than the kynge answered quickly and sayd, Wherfore,
this is a good token for me, for the land desyret to have me.
Of the whiche answeare all his men were right joyfull.
So that day and nyght the kynge lodged on the sandes, and
in the meane tyme dyschargd the shyppes of their horses
and other bagages. There the kynge made two marshals of
his hoost, the one the lorde Godfray of Harecourt, and the
other therle of Warwyke, and the erle of Arundell con-
Syr John Froissart

stable. And he ordaineth that the re of Huntyngeian shulde CAP. CXXII
kepe the flote of shyppes with C. men of armes, and iii. C. Howe the
archers: and also he ordaineth thre batayls, one to go on kynges En-
his right hande, closyng to the see syde, and the other on his lyfte hande, and the kynges hymselfe in the mylde, thrice batayls
lande rode in
and every night to lodge all in one feld. Thus they sette Normandy.
forth as they were ordaind, and they that went by the
see toke all the shyppes that they founde in their wayes;
and so long they went forthe, what by see and what by
lande, that they came to a good port, and to a good town
called Harflwe, the which incontynent was wonne, for they
within gave up for feare of dethe. Howebeit, for all that the
towne was robbed, and moche golde and sylver there founde,
and ryche jewels: there was founde so moche rycheesse, that
the boyles and vyllayns of the howst sette nothyng by good
furred gownes: they made all the men of the town to yssue
out and to go into the shyppes, bycause they wolde nat
suffre them to be behynde them, for feare of rebelyng
agayn. After the town of Harflwe was thus taken and
robbed without brennyng, than they spredde abrode in the
countrie, and dyd what they lyst, for there was nat to resyst
them. At laste they came to a great and a ryche town
called Cherbourgue; the town they wan and robbed it, and
brent parte therof, but into the castell they coude nat
come, it was so stronge and well furnysshed with men of
warre: thane they passed forthe, and came to Mount-
bourgue, and toke it and robbed and brent it cleene. In this
maner they brent many other townes in that countrie, and
wan so moche rycheesse, that it was marvell to rekyn it.
Thanne they came to a great towne well closed, called
Quarentyne, where ther was also a strong castel, and many
soudyours within to kepe it; thane the lorde came out of
their shyppes and feersly made assauit. The burgesses of
the towne were in great feare of their lyves, wyves and
childr: they suffred thenglysshemen to entre into the
towne agaynst the wyll of all the soudyours that were ther;
they putte all their goodes to thenglysshmens pleasures,
they thought that moost aduantage. Whan the soud-
yours within sawe that, they went into the castell: the
Englysshmen went into the towne, and two dayes toguyder
CAP. CXXII
Howe the kyng of England rode in three batayles through Normandy.

1 Barfleur.

they made sore assaults, so that when they within se no socoure, they yelded up, their lyves and goodes savyed; and so departed. Thenglysshmen had their pleasure of that good towne and castell, and when they sawe they might nat mentayne to kepe it, they set fyre therin and brent it, and made the burgesses of the towne to entre into their shyppes, as they had done with them of Harflewe,1 Chyerburghue, and Mountbourge, and of other townes that they had wonne on the see syde; all this was done by the batayle that went by the see syde, and by them on the see togyder. Nowe let us speke of the kinges batayle: whan he had sent his first batayle alonge by the see syde, as ye have harde, wherof one of his marshals therle of Warwyke was captayne, and the lorde Cobham with hym, than he made his other marshall to lede his hoost on his lyft hande, for he knewe the yssues, and entrees of Normandy better than any other dyd ther. The lorde Godfray as marshall rode forthe with fyve hundred men of armes, and rode of fro the kynges batayle as siks or sevyne leages, in brennynge and exilyng the countrie, the which was plentyfull of every thynge; the granges full of corne, the houses full of all ryches, riche burgesses, cartes and charyottes, horse, swyne, mottons, and other beestes. They toke what them lyset and brought into the kynges hoost, but the soudyours made no count to the kyng nor to none of his ofcyrers of the golde and sylver that they dyd gette, they kept that to themselfe. Thus sir Godfray of Harecourt rode every day of fro the kynges hoost, and for moost parte every nyght resorted to the kynges felde. The kyng toke his way to saiynt Lowe,2 in Constantyne, but or he came ther he lodged by a ryver, abyding for his men that rode along by the see syde; and when they were come, they sette forthe their caryage, and therle of Warwyke, therle of Suffolke, sir Thomas Hollande and sir Raynolde Cobham, and their company, rode out on the one syde, and wasted and exiled the contrey, as the lorde Harecourt hadde done; and the kyng ever rode bytwene these bataylles, and every nyght they logedde togyder.

2 Lo.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. CXXIII

Of the great assemble that the Frenche kynge made
to resynt the kyng of Englande.

Thus by thenslyshmen was brest, exyled, robbed,
wasted, and pylled, the good plentyfull countrey of
Normandy. Thanne the Frenche kyng sent for the
lorde John of Heynalt, who came to hym with a great
nombre; also the kyng sende for other men of armes, dukes,
erles, barowmes, knyghtes, and squyers, and assembled togider
the grettest nombre of people that had ben sene in France a
hundred yere before. He sent for men into so ferr countrea,
that it was longe or they came togider, wherof the kyng
of Englande dyde what hym lyste in the meanse season.
The French kyng harde well what he dyd, and warse and
sayd, howe they shulde never retoure agayne unfought
withall, and that suche hurtes and damages as they had
done shulde be derely revenged; wherfore he had sent
letters to his frendes in thempyre, to suche as wer farthest
of, and also to the gentyll kyng of Behayne, and to the
lorde Charles his son, who fro thensforthe was called kyng
of Almaygne, he was made kyng by the ayde of his father
and the Frenche kyng, and had taken on hym the armes of
thempyre: the Frenche kyng desyred them to come to hym
with all their powers, to thynthent to fyght with the kyng
of Englande, who brest and wasted his countrey. These
princes and lorde made them redy with great nombre of
men of armes, of Almaynes, Behaynnes, and Luxambroes,1
and so came to the Frenche kyng. Also kyng Philyppe send
to the duke of Lorayne, who came to serve hym with CCC.
speares: also ther came therele Samynes,2 in Samynoes, therle
of Salebruges,3 the erle of Flausers, the erle Wylyim of
Namure, every man with a fayre company. Ye have harde
here before of the order of thenslyshmen, howe they went
in thre batayls, the marshallis on the right hande and on
the lyft, the kyng and the prince of Wales his sonne in
the myddes. They rode but small journeys, and every day
toke their lodgynges bytwene noone and thre of the clocke,
and founde the countrey so frutefull, that they neded nat to
make no provisyon for their host, but all onely for wyne,
and yet they founde reasonably sufficent therof. It was no
marveyle though they of the countrey were afrayed, for
before that tyme they had never sene men of warre, nor
they wyt nat what warre or batayle ment. They fledde
away as farr as they might here spekyng of thenglysshmen,
and left their houses well stuffed, and graunges full of corne,
they wyt nat howe to save and kepe it. The kynge of Eng-
lande and the prince had in their batayle a thre thousand
men of armes and sixe thousande archers and a ten thou-
sande men a fote, besyde them that rode with the marshals.
Thus as ye have harde, the kynge rode forth, wastynge and
brennyng the countrey, without brekyng of his order: he
left the cytie of Constance, and went to a great towne
called saynt Lowe, a rych towne of drapery, and many riche
burgesses. In that towne ther were dwellyng an viii. or nyne-
score burgesses, crafty men: whanne the kynge came ther,
he toke his lodging without, for he wolde never lodge in
the towne, for feare of fyre, but he sende his men before,
and anone the towne was taken and clene robbed: it was
harde to thinke the great ryches that there was won, in
clothes specially; clothe wolde ther have ben solde good
chepe, yf ther had ben any byers. Than the kynge went
towarde Cane, the which was a greatter towne, and full of
drapery and other marchautdyse, and riche burgesses,
noble ladys and damosels, and sayre churches, and specially
two great and riche abbes, one of the Trynyte, another of
saynt Stephyn; and on the one syde of the towne, one of
the fayrest castels of all Normandy, and capitayn therin was
Robert of Brangny, with thre hundred Genowayes; and in
the towne was therle of Ewe and of Guynes, constable of
Fraunce, and therle of Tankervyll, with a good nombre
of men of warr. The king of England rode that day in good
order, and logedde all his batayls togyder that night, a two
leages fro Cane, in a towne with a lytell havyn, called
Haustrham, and thyder came also all his navy of shyppes,
with therle of Huntynge done who was governour of them.
The constable and other lordes of France that nyght watched
well the towne of Cane, and in the mornynge armed them
SYR JOHN FROISSART

with all them of the towne; than the constable ordayned
that none shulde yssue out, but kepe their defences on the
walles, gate, bridge, and ryver, and left the subbarbes voyde,
bycause they were nat closedde, for they thought they shulde
have ynoogh to do to defende the towne, bycause it was nat
closedde but with the ryver; they of the towne sayde howe
they wolde yssue out, for they were strong ynoogh to fyght
with the kyng of Englanede. Whan the constable sawe
their good wyse, he sayd, In the name of God be it, ye shal
nat fyght without me. Than they yssue out in good ordere,
and made good face to fyght and to defende them and to
putte their lyves in adventure.

CAP. CXXXIII

Of the batayle of Cane, and howe thenglysshmen
toke the towne.

THE same day thenglysshmen rose erly and apayrelled
them redy to go to Cane: the kyng harde masse 1 noyse P.
before the sonne ryssing, and than toke his horse,
and the prince his son, with sir Godfray of Harcourt mar-
shall and leader of the hoost, whose counsayle the kyng
moche folowed. Than they drewe towarde Cane with their
batels in good array, and so approched the good towne of
Cane. Whane they of the towne, who were redy in the
felde, sawe these thre batayls commyng in good ordere, with
their baners and standerdes wavynge in the wynde, and the
archers, the which they had nat ben accustomed to se, they
were sore afayd, and fledde away toward the towne without
any order or good array, for all that the constable coulde do:
than the Englysshmen pursued them egerly. Whan the
constable and the erle Tankervyll sawe that, they toke a
gate at the entry and saved themselves and certayne with
them, for the Englysshmen were entred into the towne.
Some of the knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce, suche as
knewe the way to the castell went thyder, and the captayne
ther receyved them all, for the castell was large. Thenglyssh-
men in the chase siewe many, for they toke non to mercy.
Than the constable and the erle of Tankervyle, beynge in
the lytell towre at the bridge fote, loked alonelhe strete and sawe their men alayne without mercy: they douted to fall in their handes. At last they sawe an Englyshe knyght with one eyre called sir Thomas Holand, and a fyve or sixe other knyghtes with hym; they knewe them, for they had sene them before in Pruce, in Grenade, and in other vyages: than they called to sir Thomas, and sayd howe they wold yelde themselfe prisoners. Than sir Thomas came thyder with his company and mounted up into the gate, and there founde the sayd lordes with xxv. knyghtes with them, who yielded them to sir Thomas, and he toke them for his prisoners, and left company to kepe them, and than mounted agayne on his horse and rode into the streates, and saved many lyves of ladys, damosels, and cloysterers fro defoyling, for the soudyers were without mercy. It fell so well the same season for thenglyshmen, that the ryver, which was able to bere shyppes, at that time was so lowe, that men went in and out besyde the bridge. They of the towne were entred into their houses, and cast downe into the strete stones, tymbre, and yron, and slewe and hurte mo than fyve hundred Englyshmen; wherwith the kyng was sore dyspleased. At night when he hard therof, he commanded that the next day all shulde be putte to the swerde and the towne brent: but than sir Godfray of Harecourt sayd, Dere sir, for Goddessake asswage somwhat your courage, and let it suffice you that ye have done; ye have yet a great voyage to do, or ye come before Calys, wherfore ye purpose to go; and sir, in this towne there is suche people who wyll defende their houses, and it wold cost many of your men their lyves, or ye have all at your wyll, wherby paraventure ye shall nat kepe your purpose to Calys, the which shulde redowne to your rech. Sir, save your people, for ye shall have neede of them in this moneth passe, for I thinke verely your adversary kyng Philipp well mete with you to fight, and ye shall fynde many strayt passages and remencounters; wherfore your men and ye had mo, shall stande you in gode stede; and sir, without any further sleynge, ye shall be lorde of this towne; men and women woll putte all that they have to your pleasur. Than the kyng sayd, Sir Godfray, ye ar our marshall, ordayne every thyng as ye wolle. Than sir
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Godfray with his baner rode fro strenge to strenge, and com-
manded in the kynges name non to be so hardy to put fyre
in any hous, to slee any persone, nor to vyolaye any woman.
When they of the towne hard that crye, they receyved the
Englysshmen into their houses, and made them good chere:
and some opyned their coffers, and bade themen take what
men toke them lyst, so they might be assured of their lyves: howe be the towne.
it ther were done in the towne many yvell dedes, murders,
and roberyes. Thus the Englysshemen were lorde of the
towne thre dayes, and wanne great richesse, the which they
sent by barkesse and barges to saynt Savoyoure, by the ryver
of Austrechen, a two leages thens, wheres all their navy lay.
Than the kyng sende therle of Huntyngdon with two
hundred men of armes and foure hundred archers with his
navy and prisoners and richesse that they had gotte, backe
agayn into Englyonde. And the kyng bought of sir
Thomas Hallande the constable of Fraunce and therle of
Tankervyll, and payed for them twentie thousande nobles.

CAP. CXXV

Howe sir Godfray of Harecourte fought with
them of Amyens before Parys.

Thus the kyng of England ordred his besynesse,
beynge in the towne of Cane, and sende into Englyonde
his navy of shyppes charged with clothes, jewelles,
vessels of golde and sylwer, and of other richesse, and of
prisoners mo than lx. knightes and thre hundred burgesses.
Than he departed fro the towne of Cane, and rode in the
same order as he dyde before, breynyng and exilynge
the countrey, and toke the way to Evreus, and so past by it;
and fro thens they rode to a great towne called Lovyers;
was the chiefe towne of all Normandy of drapery, riches,
and full of marchandysse: thenglysshmen sooone entred therin,
for as than it was nat closed; it was overron, spoyled, and
robbed without mercy; there was won great richesse.
Than they entred into the countrey of Evreus, and brennt
and pylled all the countrey, except the good townes closed
and castels, to the which the kyng made none assaut,
THE CRONYCLE OF
CAP. CXXV
bycause of the sparynge of his people and his artillery. On
the ryver of Sane, here to Rone, there was the erle of Hare-
court, brother to sir Godfray of Harecourt; but he was on
the Frenche partie, and therle of Dreux with hym, with a
good nombre of men of warre; but thenglyssmen left Roon,
and went to Gysors, where was a strong castell; they brent
the towne, and then they brent Vernon, and all the countrey
about Roon, and Pont de Lache, and came to Nauntes and
to Meulence, and wasted all the countrey about, and passed
by the stronge castell of Robeboyes; and in every place
a long the ryver of Sane they founde the briges broken: at
last they came to Poyssay, and founde the brige broken, but
the arches and joystes lay in the ryver: the kyng lay there a
v. dayes. In the mean season the brige was made to passe
the hooce without paryll; thenglysshe marshals ranne abrode
just to Parys, and brent saynt Germayne in Lay, and
Mountjoy, and saynt Crowde, and pety Bolayne by Parys,
and the quenes Bourge: they of Parys were nat well assured
of theymselfe, for it was nat as than closed. Than kyng
Philippe removed to saynt Denyse, and or he went caused
all the pentessys in Parys to be pulled downe; and at saynt
Denyse were redy come the kyng of Behayne, the lorde
John of Heynalt, the duke of Loryn, thercle of Flanlers,
thercle of Bloyes, and many other great lordses and knyghtes,
redy to serve the Frenche kyng. When the people of Parys
save their kyng depart, they came to hym, and knelyd
downe and sayd, A sir and noble kyng, what woll ye do, leve
thus this noble cytie of Parys. The kyng sayd, My good
people, doute ye nat, thenglyssmen woll aproche you no
nerer than they be. Why so, sir, quoth they, they be within
these two leages, and assone as they knowe of your depart-
ynge, they woll come and assayle us, and we be nat able to
defende them: sir, tary here stylly, and helpe to defende your
gode cite of Parys. Speke no more, quoth the kyng, for
I woll go to saynt Denyse to my men of warre, for I woll
encounter the Englysshmen, and fight agaynst them, what
soever fall therof. The kyng of Engelande was at Poisassy,
and lay in the nonery there, and kept ther the feest of our
lady in August, and satte in his robes of scarlet furred
with armynys; and after that feest he went forth in order as
they were before. The lorde Godfray of Harecourt rode out on the one syde, with five hundred men of armes and xiii. hundred archers; and by adventure he encountered a great nombre of burgesses of Amyense a horsebucke, who were ryding by the kynges commandement to Parys; they were quyckly assayled, and they defended themselves valiantly, for they were a great nombre and well armed; there were foure knyghtes of Amyense their captayns. This skirmisse dured longe: at the first metynge many were overthrown on bothe partes, but finally the burgesses were taken and nye all slayne, and thenglishmen toke all their caruyages and harness. They were very stuffed, for they were goynge to the French kyng well apoynted, bycause they had nat sene hym a great season before: ther were slayne in the felde a xii. hundred. Than the kyng of Engelande entred into the countrey of Beauvosyn, breynyng and exyling the playne countrey, and lodged at a fayre abbey and a ryche called saynt Messene, nere to Beaways; ther the kyng taryed a night and in the mornynge departed. And whan he was on his way he lokd behynde him and sawe the abbey a fyre; he caused incontinent xx. of them to be hanged that set the fyre ther, for he had commanded before on payne of dethe none to vyolate any church, nor to bren any abbey: than the kyng past by the cite of Beaways, without any assayt gvyng, for bycause he wolde nat trouble his peple nor wast his artillery. And so that day he toke his logyng betyme in a latell town called Nully. The two marshals came so nere to Beaways, that they made assayt and skirmysh at the barryers in thre places, the whiche assayt endured a long space; but the towne within was so well defended by the meanes of the byshoppe, who was ther within, that finally thenglishmen departed, and brent clene harde to the gates all the subbarbes, and than at night they came into the kynges felde. The next day the kyng departed, breynying and wastyng all before hym, and at night lodged in a good vyllage called Granculler; the next day the kyng past by Argies; ther was none to defende the castell, wherfore it was sone taken and brent. Than they went forth destroyynge the countrey all about, and so came to the castell of Poys, where ther was a good towne
and two castels. Ther was no body in them but two fayre
damosels, daughter to the lorde of Poys; they were sone
taken, and had ben vyolated, and two Englysshe knyghtes
had nat ben, sir Johan Chandos and sir Basset; they
defended them and brought them to the kyng, who for his
honour made them gode chere, and demaunded of them
wyther they wolde faynest go; they sayd to Corbe:1 and
the kyng caused them to be brought thyder without paryll.
That nyght the kyng lodged in the towne of Poys: they of
the towne and of the castels spake that nyght with the
marshals of thoost, to save them and their towne fro brent-
yng, and they to pay a certayne somme of floryns the nexte
day assone as the hoost was departed. This was graunted
them, and in the mornynge the kyng departed with all his
hoost except a certayne that were left there to recyve the
money that they of the towne had promysed to pay. Whan
they of the towne sawe thoost depart and but a fewe left
behyn, than they sayd they wolde pay never a peny, and
so ranne out and set on thenglysshmen, who defended them-
selwe as well as they might, and sende after thost for socoure.
Whan sir Reynolde Cobham and sir Thomas Hollande, who
had the rule of the regearde, harde therof, they retourned
and cryed Treason, treason, and so came agayne to Poys
warde, and founde their companyons styll fightynge with
them of the towne. Than anone they of the towne were
nijhe all slayne and the towne brent, and the two castels
beaten downe. Than they retourned to the kynges hoost,
who was as than at Araynes and there lodged, and had com-
maundad all maner of men on payne of dethe to do no
hurte to no towne of Arsyn, for there the kyng was mynded
to lye a day or two, to take advyce howe he myght passe the
ryver of Some, for it was necessarie for hym to passe the
ryver, as ye shall here after.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. CXXVI

How the French kyng folowed the kyng of Englande into Beauvoysinoys.

NOWE lette us speke of kyng Philippe, who was at saynt Denyse and his people aboute hym, and dayly encreased. Thane on a day he departed, and rode so longe that he came to Coppynyn du Guyse, and thre leages fro Amyense, and there he taryed. The kyng of Englande beyng at Araynes, wist nat where for to passe the ryver of Some, the which was large and depe, and all briges were broken and the passages well kept. Than at the kynges commaundement his two marshals with M. men of armes and two M. archers, went along the ryver to fynde some passag, and passed by Longpre, and came to the bridge of Atheny, the which was well kept with a gret nombre of knyghtes and squyers and men of the countrey. The Englysshmen alyghted a fote and assayed the Frenchmen from the mornynge tyll it was noone; but the bridge was so well fortifyf and defended, that the Englysshmen departed without wynning of any thynge. Than they went to a great towne called Fountayns on the ryver of Somme, the which was clene robbed and brenyt, for it was nat closed. Than they went to another towne called Longe in Ponthieu; they coulde nat wynne the bridge, it was so well kept and defended. Than they departed and went to Pyqueny, and founde the towne, the bridge, and the castell so well fortifyf, that it was nat lykely to passe there; the Frenche kyng hadde so well defended the passages, to thentent that the kyng of Englande shulde nat passe the ryver of Somme to fight with hym at his advauntage or els to famyshse hym there. Whane these two marshals had assayed in all places to fynde passage and coude fynde none, they retourned agayne to the king, and shewed howe they coude fynde no passage in no place; the same night the Frenche kyng came to Amyense, with mo than a hundred M. men. The kyng of Englande was right pensyfe, and the next morning harde masse before the sonne rysinge and than dysloged; and
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXXVI every man folowed the marshals baners, and so rode in the
country of Vimewe, aprochynge to the good town of
Abvylo, and founde a towne thery, wherunto was come
moche people of the country in trust of a lytell defence
that was there; but thenglyssmen anone wanne it, and all
they that were within slayne, and many taken of the towne
and of the country; the kyng toke his lodgynge in a great
hospytall that was there. The same day the Frenche kyng
departed fro Amyense, and came to Araynes about noone,
and thenglyssmen were departed thense in the mornynge.
The Frenchmen founde there great provision that the
Englyssmen had left behynde them, bycause they departed
in hast; there they founde fleshe redy on the broches,
brede and pastyes in the ovyns, wyne in tonnes and barelles,
and the tabuls redy layed. There the Frenche kyng lodged
and taryed for his lorde: that nyght the kyng of England
was lodged at Osyement. At nyght whane the two
marshalles were retourned, (who had that day overronne the
country to the gates of Abvylo and to saynt Valery, and
made a great skirmyshe there,) than the kyng assembled
togyder his counsayle and made to be brought before hym
certayne prisoners of the country of Ponthieu and of
Vymeu. The kyng right curtesly demaunded of theym if
ther were any among them that knewe any passage byneth
Abvylo, that he and his host might passe over the ryver of
Somme; yf he wolde shewe hym therof, he shulde be quyte
of his raunsome, and xx. of his company for his love. Ther
was a varlet called Gobyn a Grace, who stept forth and
sayde to the kyng, Sir, I promise you on the jeopardy of
my heed I shall bringe you to suche a place, where as ye
and all your host shall passe the ryver of Some without
paryll. There be certayne places in the passage that ye shall
passe xii. men a front two tymes bytwene day and nyght,
ye shall nat go in the water to the knees; but whan the
fluidde cometh, the ryver than waxeth so gret, that no man
can passe; but whan the fluidde is gon, the whiche is two
tymes bytwene day and nyght, than the ryver is so lowe that
it may be passed without danger, bothe a horsebacke and a
fote. The passage is harde in the botom with whyte stones,
so that all your caradge may go surely; therfore the passage

290
SYR JOHN FROISSART

is called Blanch Taque; and ye make redy to departe be CAP. CXXVI
tymes, ye may be ther by the sonne ryssing. The kynge sayde, If this be trewe that ye say, I quyte thee thy raunsome
and all thy company, and moreover shall gyve thee a hundred
nobles: than the kynge commaundde every man to be redy
at the sounde of the trumpette to departe.

C A P. CXXVII

Of the batayle of Blanchtaque bytwene the kynge
of Engelande and sir Godmar du Fay.

THE kynge of Engelande slepte nat moche that nyght,
for atte myndnight he arose and sowned his trumpette;
than incontinent they made redy caryages and all
thynges, and atte the brekyng of the day they departed
fro the towne of Oysement, and rode after the guydinge of
Gobyn a Grace, so that they came by the sonne ryssing to
Blanch Taque; but as than the fluidde was uppe so that
they might nat passe; so the kynge taryd there tyl it was
prime, than the ebbbe came. The Frenche kynge had his
currours in the countrey, who brought hym worde of the
demeanoure of the Englyssmen; than he thought to close
the kynge of Engelande bytwene Abyle and the ryver of
Some, and so to fyght with hym at his pleasure. And than
he was at Amyense he had ordayned a great barowne of
Normandy, called sir Godmar du Fay, to go and kepe
the passage of Blanche Taque, where the Englyshmen must
passe, or els in none other place. He had with hym M. men
of armes and sixe thousand a fote, with the Genowayes;
soo they went by saynt Reynynger in Ponthieu, and fro
thenes to Crotyay, wher as the passage lay; and also he had
with hym a great nombre of men of the countrey, and also
a great nombre of them of Mutterell; so that they were
a twelwe thousand men one and other. When the Engylsyhe
hoost was come thyder, sir Godmar du Fay aranged all his
company to defende the passage: the kynge of England lette
nat for all that; but whan the fluidde was gone, he com-
maundde his marshals to entre into the water in the name
of God and saynt George. Than they that were hardy and
£91
THE CRONYCLE OF

Coragous entred on bothe parties, and many a man reversed; ther were some of the Frenchmen of Arthoyes and Pycardy, that were as gladde to just in the water as on the drie lande. The Frenchmen defended so well the passage at the yssuing out of the water, that they had moche to do: the Genowayes dyde them great trouble with their crossbowes; on thother syde the archers of Engelande shotte so holly togyder, that the Frenchmen were fayne to gyve place to the Englysshmen. There was a sore batayle, and many a noble feate of armes done on both sydes; finally thenglysshmen passed over and assembled togyder in the felde; the kyng and the prince passed and all the lوردes: than the Frenchmen kept none array, but departed he that myght best. Whan sir Godmar sawe that dysconfiture, he fledde and saved hymselfe; some fledde to Abyyle and some to saynt Raygnery; they that were there a fote coude nat flee, so that ther were slayne a great nombre of them of Abyyle, Muttreyl, Arras, and of saynt Raygnier: the chase endured more than a great leag. And as yet all the Englysshmen were nat passed the ryver, and certayne currous of the kyng of Behayne and of sir John of Heynault came on them that were behynd, and toke certayn horses and caryages and slewe dyvers or they coude take the passage. The French kyng the same mornynge was departed fro Araynes, trustyng to have founde thenglysshmen bytewene hym and the ryver of Some; but whan he harde howe that sir Godmar du Fay and his company were dysconfityed, he targeted in the felde and demaunded of his marshals what was best to do. They sayd, Sir, ye can nat passe the ryver but at the brege of Abyyll, for the fludde is come in at Blanche taque. Than he retourned and lodged at Abyyle. The kyng of Encland whan he was past the ryver, he thanked God, and so rode forthe in lyke maner as he dyde before. Than he called Gobyn a Grace, and dyd quyte hym his ransome and all his company, and gave hym a hundred nobles and a good horse. And so the kyng rode forthe fayre and easely, and thought to have lodged in a great town called Norell; but whan he knewe that the towne pertayned to the countesse of Dammerle; suster to the lorde Robert of Arthoyes, the kyng assured the towne and countrey as moche as pertayned to
SYR JOHN FROISSART

her, and so went forthe; and his marshalles rode to Crotay on the see syde and brent the towne, and founde in the havyn many shippes and barkes charged with wynes of Poyctou,1 pertayning to the marchauntes of Xaynton and of Rochell: they brought the best therof to the kynges host. Than one of the marshals rode to the gates of Abvyle, and fro thens to saynt Reygnier, and after to the towne of Rue saynt Esperyte. This was on a Friday, and bothe batayls of the marshals retourned to the kynges hoost about noone, and so lodged all toguyder nere to Cressy in Ponthieu. The kyng of Englande was well enfourmed howe the Frenche kyng folowed after hym to fight. Than he sayd to his company, Lette us take here some plotte of grounde, for we wyl go no farther tylle we have sene our ennemyes; I have good cause here to abyde them, for I am on the ryght herytage of the quene my mother, the which lande was gyven at her maryage; I wolle chalenge it of myne adversary Philipppe of Valoys. And bycause that he had nat the eyght part in nombre of men as the Frenche kyng had, therfore he commandad his marshals to chose a plotte of grounde somewhat for his advauntege; and so they dyde, and thyer the kyng and his hoost went; than he sende his curours to Abvyle, to se if the Frenche kyng drewe that day into the felde or natte. They went forthe and retourned agayne, and sayde howe they coude se none apearece of his commynge; than every man toke their lodgyng for that day, and to be redy in the mornynge, at the sound of the trumpet, in the same place. This Friday the Frenche kyng taryd styll in Abvyle abyding for his company, and sende his two marshals to ryde out to se the dealynge of thenglyssmen; and at nyght they retourned, and sayde howe the Englyssmen were lodged in the feldes. That nyght the Frenche kyng made a supper to all the chefe lorde that were ther with hym; and after supper, the kyng desyred them to be frendes ech to other: the kyng loked for the erle of Savoy, who shulde come to hym with a thousande speares, for he had receyved wages for a thre monethe of them at Troy in Campaigne.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXXVIII

Of the order of the Englysshmen at Cressy, and howe they made thre batayls a fote.

On the Friday, as I sayd before, the kyng of Englande lay in the feldes, for the contrey was plentyfull of wynes and other vytayle, and if nede had ben, they had provision folowyng in cartes and other caryages. That night the kyng made a supper to all his chefe lorde of his hoost and made them gode chere: and when they were all departed to take their rest, than the kynge entred into his oratorie, and knelled downe before the aiter, prayeng God devoutly, that if he fought the next day, that he might achye the journey to his honour; than aboute mydnyght he layde hym downe to rest, and in the mornyng he rose betymes and harde masse, and the prince his sonne with hym, and the moste part of his people were confessed and houseled: and after the masse sayde, he commaunded every man to be armed and to drawe to the feld to the same place before apoynted. Than the kyng caused a parke to be made by the wode syde behynde his hoost, and ther was set all cartes and caryages, and within the parke were all their horses, for every man was a fote; and into this parke there was but one entre. Than he ordyned thre batayls; in the first was the yonge prince of Wales, with hym the erle of Warwyke and Canforde, the lorde Godfray of Harecourt, sir Reynolde Cobham, sir Thomas Holande, the lorde Stafforde, the lorde of Manny, the lorde Dalaware, sir John Chandos, sir Bartylmew de Bomes, sir Robert Nevyll, the lorde Thomas Clyfforde, the lorde Bouchier, the lorde de la Tumyer, and dyvers other knygthes and squyers that I can nat name; they wer an viii. hundred men of armes and two thousande archers, and a thousande of other with the Walashmen: every lorde droue to the feld apoynted, under his owne baner and penone. In the second batayle was therle of Northampton, the erle of Arundell, the lorde Rosse, the lorde Lygo, the lorde Wylloughby, the lorde Basset, the lorde of saynt Aubyne, sir Loyes Tueton, the

1 Oxford.
2 Mohun.
3 Burghersh.
4 Latiomer.
5 Lucy.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

lorde of Myleton, the lorde de la Sell, and dyvers other, about an eight hundred men of armes and twelue hundred archers. The thirde batayle had the kyng: he had sevyn hundred men of armes and two thousande archers: than the kyng lept on a hobby, with a whyte rodde in his hand, one of his marshals on the one hande and the other on the other hand; he rode fro renke to renke, desyringe every man to take hede that day to his right and honour. He spake it so swetely, and with so good countenance and mery chere, that all suche as were dysconfit toke courage in the seyng and heryng of hym. And whan he had thus visyted all his batayls, it was than nyne of the day; than he caused every man to eate and drinke a lytell, and so they dyde at their lesar. And afterwarde they ordred agayme their bataylles: than every man lay downe on the yerth and by hym his salet and bowe, to be the more fressher whan their ennemyes shulde come.

CAP. CXXIX

Thorder of the Frenchmen at Cressy, and howe they behelde the demeanour of thenglysshmen.

T HIS Saturday the Fренче kyng rose betymes, and harde masse in Abyle in his lodgyn in the abbey of saynt Peter, and he departed after the somne rysing. Whan he was out of the towne two leages, aprochynge toward his ennemyes, some of his lorde sayd to hym, Sir, it were good that ye ordred your batayls, and let all your fotemen passe somewhat on before, that they be nat troubled with the horsemen. Than the kyng sent iii. knyghtes, the Moyne Bastell, the lorde of Noyers, the lorde of Beaujewe, and the lorde Dambeagny to ryde to aviewe thenglysse hoste, and so they rode so nere that they might well se part of their dealyng. Thenglysshmen sawe them well and knewe well howe they were come thyder to avieu them; they let them alone and made no countenance towards them, and let them retourne as they came. And whan the Fренче kyng sawe these foure knyghtes retourne agayme, he taryed tyll they came to hym, and sayd, Sirs, what tidynges.
These four knyghtes eche of them loked on other, for ther was none wolde speke before his companyon; finally, the kyng sayd to Moyne, who pertayned to the kyng of Behaygne, and had done in his dayes so moch, that he was reputed for one of the valyantest knyghtes of the worlde, Sir, speke you. Than he sayd, Sir, I shall speke, syth it pleaseth you, under the correction of my felawe; sir, we have ryden and sene the behavyng of your enemeyes; knowe ye for trouth they are rested in thre batayls abidyng for you. Sir, I woll counsell you as for my part, savyng your dyspleasure, that you and all your company rest here and lodg for this nyght, for or they that be behynde of your company be come hyther, and or your batayls be set in gode order, it wyll be very late, and your people be wery and out of array, and ye shall fynde your enemis fresshe and redy to receyve you. Erly in the mornynge ye may order your bataylies at more leaser, and advyse your enemis at more delyberacyon, and to regarde well what way ye woll assayle them, for sir, surely they woll abyde you. Than the kyng commaunded that it shuld be so done; than his ii. marshals one rode before, another behynde, sayeng to every baner, Tary and abyde here in the name of God and saynt Denys. They that were formast taryed, but they that were behynde wolde nat tary, but rode forthe, and sayd howe they wolde in no wyse abyde tyll they were as ferr forward as the formast: and when they before sawe them come on behynde, than they rode forward agayne, so that the kyng nor his marshals coude nat rule them. So they rode without order or good aray, tyll they came in sight of their enemeyes; and assone as the formast sawe them, they recoulued them abacce without good aray; wherof they behynde had marvell and were abashed, and thought that the formast company had ben fightynge; than they might have had leaser and rome to have gone forwarde if they had lyst; some went forthe, and some abode styll. Thecommons, of whom all the wayes bytwene Abylle and Cressy were full, whan they sawe that they were nere to the enemies, they toke their swerdes, and cryed Downe with them, let us sle them all. Ther was no man, though he were present at the journey, that coude ymagen or shewe the trouth of the
SYR JOHN FROISSART

yvell order that was among the Frenche partie, and yet they CAP. CXXXIX
were a mervelous great nombre. That I write in this boke Thorder of
I lerned it specially of the Englysshmen, who well behelde the French-
their dealyng; and also certayne knyghtes of sir Johan of Cressy.
Heynaultes, who was alwayes about kyng Philyppe, shewed
me as they knewe.

CAP. CXXX

Of the batayle of Cressy bytwene the kyng of
England and the Frenche kyng.

THENGLYSSHMEM who were in thre batayls, lyeng
on the grounde to rest them, assone as they saw
the Frenchmen aproche, they rose upon their fete
fayre and easely without any hast, and aranged their
batayls: the first, which was the princes batell, the archers
there stode in maner of a herse and the men of armes in
the botome of the batayle. Therle of Northampton and
thelre of Arundell with the second batell were on a wyng
in good order, redy to confort the princes batayle, if nede
were. The lordes and knyghtes of France came nat to the
assemble togyder in good order, for some came before and
some came after, in such hast and yvell order, that one of
them dyd trouble another. Whan the French kyng saw the
Englysshmen, his blode chaunged, and sayde to his marshals,
make the Genowayes go on before, and begynne the batayle
in the name of God and saynt Denys. Ther were of the
Genowayes crosbowes, about a fiftene thousand, but they
were so wary of goyng a fote that day a six leages armed
with their crosbowes, that they sayde to their constables, We
be nat well orded to fyght this day, for we be nat in the
case to do any great dede of armes, we have more nede of
rest. These wordes came to the erle of Alanson, who sayd, A
man is well at ease to be charged with suche a sorte of
rascalles, to be faynt and fayle nowe at moost nede. Also
the same season there fell a great rayne and a cylys with a
terryble thonder, and before the rayne ther came fleyng
over bothe batayls a great nombre of crowes, for feare of
the tempest commynge. Than anone the eyre beganne to
PP
waxe clere, and the sonne shyne fayre and bright, the
which was right in the Frenchmens eyen and on the Englysh-
mens backes. Whan the Genowayes were assembled toguyder,
and beganne to aproche, they made a great leape and crye
to abashe thenglyshmen, but they stode stylly and styredde
nat for all that. Thane the Genowayes agayne the seconde
tyme made another leape and a fell crye, and stepped for-
warde a lytell, and thenglyshmen removed nat one fote.
Thirdly, agayne they leapt and cryed, and went forthe tyll
they came within shotte: thane they shotte feersly with
their crossbowes. Than thenglysshe archers stept forthe one
pace, and lette fly their arowes so holly and so thyczke, that
it semed snowe. Whan the Genowayes felte the arowes
persynge through heedes, armes and brestes, many of them
cast downe their crossbowes and dyde cutte their strynges,
and retourned dysconfisted. Whan the Frenche kyng sawe
them flie away, he sayd, Slee these rascals, for they shall
lette and trouble us without reason. Thane ye shulde have
sene the men of armes dasshe in amongethernemand kylled
a great nombre of them; and ever stylly the Englysshmen shot
where as they sawe thykeste preace: the sharpe arowes ranne
into the men of armes and into their horses, and many fell,
horse and men, amonge the Genowayes, and whan they
were downe, they coude nat relye agayne, the preace was
so thyczke that one overthrew another. And also amonge
the Englysshemen there were certayne rascalles that went a
fote with great kaynes, and they went in amonge the men of
armes, and slye and murde and mordredde many as they lay on the
grounde, bothe erles, barowynes, knyghtes, and s quyres,
wherof the kyng of Engleande was after dyspleased, for he
had rather they had bene taken prisoners. The valyant
kyng of Behaygne, called Charles of Luzenbourge, sonne to
the noble emperour Henry of Luzenbourge, for all that he
was ngyhe blynde, whan he understode the order of the
batayle, he sayde to them about hym, Where is the iorde
Charles my son. His men sayde, Sir, we can nat tell, we
thynke he be fightynge. Than he sayde, Sirs, ye ar my men,
my companyons, and frendes in this journey, I requyre you
bring me so farre forwarde, that I may tryke one stroke
with my swerde. They sayde they wolde do his commaunde-
ment, and to the intent that they shulde nat less hym in CAP. CXXX the prease, they tyed all their raynes of their bridelles eche of the to other, and sette the kyng efore to acomplyshe his batayle of desyre, and so thei went on their ennemyes. The lorde
Charles of Behaygne his sonne, who wrote hymselfe kyng of Almaygne, and bare the armes, he came in good order to the \(^1\) Behaygne F. batayle; but whane he sawe that the matere wente awrie on their partie, he departed, I can nat tell you whiche waye. The kyng his father was so farre forewarde, that he strake a stroke with his swerde, ye and mo than foure, and fought valyantz and so dyde his company; and they adventured themselfe so forwarde, that they were ther all slayne, and the next day they were founde in the place about the kyng, and all their horses tyed eche to other. The erle of Alan
sone came to the batayle right ordynaty and fought with thenglyshmen; and the erle of Flaunders also on his parte; these two lorde with their companyes coosted the Englysh archers and came to the prynces batayle, and there fought valyantz longe. The Frenche kyng woldeayne have come thyder whanne he sawe their baners, but there was a great hedge of archers before hym. The same day the Frenche kyng hadde gyven a great blacke courser to sir Johan of Heynault, and he made the lorde Johan of Fussels **Sommeille. to ryde on hym, and to bere his banerre. The same horse tooke the bridell in the tethe, and brought hym through all the currours of thenglyshmen, and as he wolde have re-
turned agayne, he fell in a great dyke and was sore hurt, and had ben ther deed, and his page had nat ben, who followed hym through all the batayles and sawe wher his maister lay in the dyke, and had none other lette but for his horse, for thenglyshmen wolde nat yssue out of their
batayle, for takynge of any prisoner; thane the page alyghted and relyved his maister; than he went nat backe agayn the same way that they came, there was to many in his way. This batayle bytwene Broy and Cressy this Saturday was ryght cruell and fell, and many a feat of armes done that came nat to my knowledge. In the night dyverse knyghtes and sgyers lost their maisters, and somtyme came on thenglyshmen, who receyved thym in suche wyse, that they were ever nighe slayne, for there was none taken to

239
mercy nor to raunsome, for so the Englysshmen were deter-
myned. In the mornynge the day of the batayle certayne
Frenchemen and Almaynges perforce opyned the archers of
the princes batayle, and came and fought with the men
of armes hande to hande. Than the seconde batayle of
thenglysshmen came to socour the princes batayle, the
whiche was tyme, for they had as than moche ado; and
they with the prince sent a messanger to the kyng, who
was on a lytell wyndmyll hyll. Than the knyght sayd to the
kyng, Sir, therle of Warwyke, and therle of Canfort,\footnote{Oxford.}
sir Reynolde Cobham and other, suche as be about the prince
your sonne, ar feersly fought with all and are sore handled,
wherfore they desyre you that you and your batayle wolle
come and ayde them; for if the Frenchmen encrease, as they
dout they woll, your sonne and they shall have moche ado.
Than the kyng sayde, Is my sonne deed or hurt, or on the
yerthe felled?\footnote{Aunale.} No sir, quoth the knyght, but he is hardely
matched, wherfore he hathe nede of your ayde. Well, sayde
the kyng, retourne to hym, and to them that sent you
hyther, and say to them that they sende no more to me for
any adventure that falleth, as long as my sonne is alyve;
and also say to them that they suffer hym this day to wynne
his spurres; for if God be pleased, I woll this journey be his
and the honoure therof, and to them that be aboute hym.
Than the knyght retourned agayn to them, and shewed the
kynges wordes, the which gretily encouraged them, and
repoyned in that they had sende to the kyng as they dyd.
Sir Godfray of Harecourt wolde gladly that the erle of
Harecourt his brother myght have bene saved; for he hard
say by them that sawe his baner, howe that he was ther in
the feld on the Frenche partie, but sir Godfray coude nat
come to hym betymes, for he was slayne or he coude come
at hym, and so was also the erle of Almare,\footnote{Aunale.} his nephe.
In another place, the erle of Alenson, and therle of Flandres,
fought valyantly, every lorde under his owne baner; but
finally, they coude nat resyst agaynst the puyssance of the
Englysshmen, and so ther they were also slayne, and dyvers
other knyghtes and squyers. Also therle Lewes of Bloyes,
nephe to the Frenche kyng, and the duke of Lorayne
fought under their baners, but at last they were closed in

\footnote{Aunale.}
SYR JOHN FROISSART
among a company of Englyshmen and Walshemen, and CAP. CXXX
there were slayne, for all their prowess. Also there was of the
slayne the erle of Ausser, therle of saynt Poule and many batayle of
other. In the evenynge the Frenche kynge, who had lefte
about hym no mo than a therscore persons, one and other,
wherof sir John of Heynalt was one, who had remounted
ones the kynge, for his horse was slayne with an arowe; than
he sayde to the kynge, Sir, departe hense, for it is tyme;
lesse nat your selfe wylfully; if ye have losse at this tyme, ye
shall recover it agayne another season. And soo he toke the
kynge horse by the bridell, and ledde hym away in a maner
perforce. Than the kynge rode tyll he came to the castell of
Broy. The gate was closed, bycause it was by that tyme
darke; than the kynge called the captayne, who came to
the walles, and sayd, Who is that calleth there this tyme of
nyght. Than the kynge sayde, Opyn your gate quickly, for
this is the fortune of Fraunce. The captayne knewe than it
was the kynge, and opyned the gate, and let downe the
bridge; than the kynge entred, and he had with hym but
fyve barownes, sir Johan of Heynalt, sir Charles of Mo-
morency, the lorde of Beaujewe, the lorde Dabegny, and
the lorde of Mountfort. The kynge wolde nat tary there,
but dranke and departed thesen about mydnyght, and so
rode by suche guydes as knewe the country, tyll he came
in the mornyng to Amyense, and there he rested. This
Saturday, the Englyshmen never departed fro their batayls
for chasyng of any man, but kept styll their feld, and
ever defended themselfe agaynst all such as came to assayle
them. This batayle ended aboute evynsonge tyme.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXXXI

Howe the next day after the batell the Englysshmen disconfyted dyverse Frenchemen.

On this Saturday, whan the nyght was come and that thenglysshmen hard no more noyse of the Frenchmen, than they reputed themselfe to have the vctorie, and the Frenchmen to be dysconfited, slayne and fledde away. Than they made great fyers and lyghted up torchesse and candelles, bycause it was very darke; than the kyng avayled downe fro the lytell hyll where as he stode; and of all that day tyll than, his helme came never of on his heed. Than he went with all his batayle to his sonne the prince and enbrasde hym in his armes and kyst hym, and sayde, Fayre sonne, God gyve you good perseverance; ye ar my good son, thus ye have aqyted you nobly; ye ar worthy to kepe a realme; the prince inclyned himselfe to the yerthe, honouryng the kyng his father. This night they thanked God for their good adventure and made no boost thereof, for the kyng wolde that no manne shulde be proude or make boost, but every man humbly to thanke God. On the Sunday in the mornynge ther was suche a myst, that a man myght nat se the bredethe of an acre of lande fro hym. Than there departed fro the hoost, by the commandement of the kyng and marshallset fuy hundred speares and two thousand archers, to se if they might se any Frenchmen gathered agayne togieder in any place. The same mornynge out of Abyle and saynt Reyngnyer in Ponthieu, the commons of Rome, and of Beaujoys,1 yssued out of their townes, natte knowyng of the dysconfiture the day before. They met with thenglysshmen, wenyng they had bene Frenchmen; and whan thenglysshmen sawe them, they sette on them freelly, and there was a sore batayle, but at last the Frenchmen fledde and kept none array. Their were slayne in the wayes and in hedges and busshes, mo thane seyvn thousande, and if the day had ben clere, there had never a one scape. Anone after, another company of Frenchmen were mette by the Englysshmen, the archebysshoppe of Rome, and the

1 Beaujoys.
great priour of Fraunce, who also knewe nothynge of the CAP. CXXXI dysonfiture the day before, for they harde that the Frenche Howe the kyng shulde a fought the same Sunday, and they were goynge next day after thyderwarde. Whane they mette with the Englysshmen, the bateil the Englysshmen disconffyted there was a great batayle, for they were a great nombre, but they coude nat endure agaynst the Englysshmen, for they dyverse were nyghte all slayne, fewe scaped, the two lorde were Frenchmen. slayne. This mornynge thenglysshmen mette with dyverse Frenchmen, that had loste their way on the Saturday and had layen all nyght in the feldes, and wost nat where the kyng was nor the captayns. They were all slayne, as many as were mette with; and it was shewed me, that of the commons and men a fote of the citie and good townes of France, ther was slayne foure tymes as many as were slayne the Saturday in the great batayle.

CAP. CXXXII

How the next day after the batayle of Cressey they that were deed were nombred by thenglysshmen.

THE same Sunday, as the kyng of Englande came fro masse, suche as had ben sente forthe retourned and shewed the kyng what they had sene and done, and sayde, Sir, we thynke surely ther is now no more aparence of any of our enemys. Than the kyng sende to serche howe many were slayne, and what they were. Sir Reynolde Cobham, and sir Richard Stafforde with thre harailes went to serche the feld and contrey; they visyted all them that were slayne and rode all day in the feldes, and retourned agayne to the hooste as the kyng was goynge to supper: they made just report of that they had sene, and sayde howe ther were xi. great princes deed, fourscore baners, xii. C. knyghtes, and mo than xxx. thousande other. Thenglysshmen kept styl their feld all that nyght; on the Monday in the monrynge the kyng prepared to depart. The kyng caused the deed bodyes of the great lorde to be taken up, and conveyed to Mutterell, and there buryed in holy grounde, and made a crye in the country to graunt truse for thre dayes, to thyntent that
they of the countrey might serche the felde of Cressy to bury the deed bodyes. Than the kyng went forthe and came before the towne of Muttrel, by the see, and his marshals ranne towards Hedyne and Brent Vambam, and Seram, but they dyd nothyng to the castell, it was so strong and so well kept; they lodged that night on the ryver of Hedyne, towards Blangy. The next day they rode towards Bolayne and came to the towne of Wysame, there the kyng and the prince lodged, and taryd there a day to refresshe his men; and on the Wednysday the kyng came before the stronge towne of Calys.

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the kyng of Englande layd siege to Calys, and howe all the poore people were put out of the towne.

In the towne of Calys ther was captayne a knyght of Burgone, called sir John de Vien, and with hym was sir Andew Drehaen, sir John de Sury, sir Bardoun de Belborne, sir Godfray de Lament, sir Pepyn de Urmue, and dyvers other kynghtes and squyers. Whan the kyng of Englande was come before Calys, he layd his siege and ordyned bastides bytwene the towne and the ryver; he made carpenters to make houses and lodgynge of great tymbre, and set the houses lyke streses and covered them with rede and brome, so that it was lyke a lytell towne; and there was every thynge to sell, and a markety place to be kept every Tuesday and Saturday for fleshe and fyssh, mercery ware, houses for cloth, for breede, wyne, and all other thynge necessarie, such as came out of England or out of Flanders; ther they myght byye what they lyst. Thenglysshmen ran ofte tymes intou the countrey of Guynes, and into Trivynys, and to the gates of saynt Omers, and somtyme to Boleyn: they brought into their hoost great prayses. The kyng wolde nat assayle the towne of Calys, for he thought it but a lost labour; he spared his peple and his artillery, and sayd, howe he wolde fanysshem them in the towne with longe siege, without the French kyng come and
Syr John Froissart

Reyse his siege perforce. When the capten of Calys sawe the maner and thordier of thenglyssmen, than he constringed all poore and meane peple to yssue out of the towe: and on a Wednysday ther yssued out of men, women, and children, mo than xvii. C. and as they passed through the hoost they were demaunded why they departed, and they answered and sayde, bycause they had nothyng to lyve on. Than the kyng dyd them that grace, that he suffred them to passe through his host without danger, and gave them meate and drinke to dyner, and every person i.i.d. sterlyng in almes, for the which dyvers many of them prayed for the kynges prosperyte.

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the duke of Normandy brake up his siege before Aguyllon.

The duke of Normandy beyng at sege before the strong castell of Aguyllon, so it was that about the myddes of Auguste, he made a great assaut to the castell so that the most part of his host were at the assaut. Thyder was come newlye the lorde Philip of Burgone, erle of Arthoys and of Bolone, and cosyn germayn to the duke of Normandy. He was as than a yong lusty knyght, and asonne as the skymysse was begon, he toke his horse with the spurres, and came on the skirmysse warde, and the horse toke the bytte in his teth, and bare away his maister, and stumbled in a dyke and fell horse and man: the knyght was so brosed with the fall, that he had never helthe after, but dyed of the same hurt. Than anone after the Frenche kyng sent for his sonne the duke of Normandy, commaundyng hym in any wyse to breke up his siege before Aguyllon, and to retourne into Fraunce, to defende his herytage fro thenglyssmen; and therupon the duke toke counsayle of the lordes that were there with hym what was best to do, for he hadde promysed nat to depart thens tyll he had won the castell, but the lordes counsayled hym, sythe the kyng his father had sende for hym to depart. Than the next day betymes the Frenchemen trussed bagge and baggage in great hast, and departed
towards France: than they that were within the fortress
issued out with the penon of the lorde Gautiers of Manny
before them; they dashed in amonge the hynder company
of the Frenchmen, and sliue and toke dyverse of theym,
to the nombre of threscore, and brought them into their
fortres, and by those prisoners they knewe of the journey
that the kyng of Englande had made that season into
Fraunce, and howe that he lay at siege before Calys.

Or the French kyng departed fro Amyense to Parys warde
after the batayle of Cressy, he was so sore dyspleasedede with
sir Godmar du Fay, bycause the kyng sayd he dyd nat his
dever truely in kepyng of the passage of Blanch taque wher
as thenglysshmen passed over the ryver of Some, so that
if the French king coude a gette hym in that hete, it wold
have cost hym his heed: and dyvers of the kynges counsell
wolde that he shuld a dyed, and sayd he was a tretor, and
cauzer of that great losse that the kyng had at Cressy.
But sir John of Heynault excuseyd hym and refrayned the
kynges yeell wyll, for he sayd howe coude it lye in his
power to resyst the hole puyssance of thenglysshmen, whan
all the flour of the realme of Fraunce togodyer coude nat
resyst them. Than anone after came to the kyng and to
the queene the duke of Normandy who was well receyved
with them.

CAP. CXXXV

Howe sir Gautier of Manny rode through all
Fraunce by save conduct to Calys.

It was nat long after, but that sir Gautier of Manny
fell in communicacion with a knyght of Normandy,
who was his prisoner, and demaunded of hym what
money he wolde pay for his raunsome. The knyght answered
and sayde he wolde gladly pay thre M. crownes. Well,
quoth the lorde Gautlyer, I knowe well ye be kynne to
the duke of Normandy and wel beloved with hym, that I
am sure, and if I wolde sore oppresse you, I am sure ye
wolde gladly pay x. thousand crownes, but I shall deale
otherwyse with you. I wolle trust you on your faythe and
promise: ye shall go to the duke your lorde, and by your
SYR JOHN FROISSART

meanes gette a save conduct for me and xx. other of my company to ryde through Fraunce to Calys, payeng curtesly for all our expenses. And if ye can get this of the duke or of the kyng, I shall clerely quyte you your ransome with moche thanke, for I greatly desyre to se the kyng my maister, nor I wyll lye but one nyght in a place, tyll I come there; Fraunce by and if ye can nat do this, retourne agayn hyder within a save conduct moneth, and yelde yourself stylly as my prisoner. The knyght was content and so went to Parys to the duke his lorde, and he obtayned this passport for sir Gaultier of Manny, and xx. horse with hym all onely: this knyght retourne to Agyullon, and brought it to sir Gaultier, and ther he quyted the knyght Norman of his raunson. Than anone after, sir Gaultier toke his way and xx. horse with hym, and so rode through Auvergne and when he taryed in any place, he shewed his letter and so was lette passe but when he came to Orlauncce, for all his letter he was arrested and brought to Parys, and there put in prison in the Chatelet. Whan the duke of Normandy knewe therof, he went to the kyng his father and shewed him howe sir Gaultier of Manny had his save conduct, wherfore he requeryed the kyng as moche as he might to delyver hym, or els it shulde be sayde howe he had betrayed hym. The kyng answered and sayd howe he shulde be put to dethe, for he reputed hym for his great enemey. Than sayd the duke, Sir, if ye do so, surely I shall never bere armour agaynst the kyng of Englande, nor all suche as I may let. And at his departyng, he sayd, that he wolde never entre agayyn into the kynges host: thus the mater stode a certayne tyme. There was a knyght of Heynalt, called sir Mansart de Sue; he purchased all that he myght to helpe sir Water of Manny, and went ofen in and out to the duke of Normandy. Finally, the kyng was so counselle, that he was delyverd out of prison and all his costes payed: and the kyng sende for hym to his lodgingyn of Nesle in Parys, and there he dynd with the kyng, and the kyng presented hym great gyftes and jewels, to the value of a thousand floreyns. Sir Gaultier of Manny receyved them on a condycyon, that when he cam to Cales, that if the kyng of Englande his maister were pleased that he shulde take them, than he was content
THE CRONYCLE OF

to kepe them, or els to sende them agayne to the Frenche kyng, who sayde he spake lyke a noble man. Than he toke his leave and departed, and rode so long by his journeys that he came into Heynalt, and taryed at Valencennes thre days, and so fro thens he went to Cales, and was welcome to the kyng. But thane the kyng harde that sir Gaultier of Manny had receyued gyftes of the Frenche kyng, he sayde to hym, Sir Gaultier, ye have hytherto truely served us, and shall do, as we trust: sende agayn to kyng Philipppe the gyftes that he gave you, ye have no cause to kepe theym: we thanke God we have ynombre for us and for you: we be in good purpose to do moche good for you, acordyng to the good servyce that ye have done. Thanne sir Gaultier toke all those jewels and delyverd them to a cosyn of his called Mansac, and sayd, Ryde into Fraunce to the kyng there and recommend me unto hym, and say howe I thanke hym M. tymes for the gyft that he gave me, but shewe hym howe it is nat the pleasure of the kyng my maister that I shulde kepe them, therfore I sende them agayne to hym. This knyght rode to Parys and shewed all this to the kyng, who wolde nat receyve agayne the jewelles, but dyde gyve them to the same knyght sir Mansac, who thanked the kyng, and was nat in wyll to say nay.

CAP. CXXXVI

Howe therle of Derby the same seson toke in Poyctou dyvers townes and castels, and also the cyte of Poycters.

YE have harde here before howe the erle of Derby was in the cytie of Burduex, duryng the season of the siege before Aguylone; and assone as he knewe that the duke of Normandy had broken up his siege, than he sende into Gascoyne for all his knightes and squyers that helde of the Englisshe partie. Than came to Burdesux the lorde Dalbret, the lorde de Lansere, the lorde of Rosam, the lorde of Musydent, the lorde of Funyaers, the lorde of Torton, the lorde of Bouqueton, sir Amery of Trast and dyvers other, so that therle had a xii. hundred
SYR JOHN FROISSART

men of armes, two thousand archers and three thousand
fotemen. They passed the ryver of Garon, bytwene Burdeaux
and Blay; than they toke the way to Zaynton, and came
to Myrabell, and wan the towne with assaut and the
castell also, and sette therin newe captayne and soudyours.
Than they rode to Alnoy and wan the castell and the
towne, and after they wanne Surgeres and Benon, but the
castell of Marant, a thre leages fro Rochell, they coulde nat
gette. Than they went to Mortayn on the see syde in
Poyctou, and toke it perforce, and made ther a garyson for
them. Than thei rode to Lusignen; they brenn the towne
but the castell wolde nat be wonne. Than they went to
Taylbourge, and wan the brige, towne and castell and
dwele all that were within, bycause a knyght of theyrs was
slayne in thassautyng. The country was so afrayed that
every man fledde into stronge holdes and townes and for-
sok their owne houses. They made none other aparance of
defence, but all knyghtes and squyers kep them styll in
their fortresses, and made no semblant to fyght with
thenglysshyngmen. Than at last the erle of Derby came and
layd siege to saynt John Dangle and made there a gret
assaut (within the towne ther were no men of warre,) tyll
agaynst night, when thassaut seased. Sir Wylyam Ryon
mayre of the towne and the moost part of the burgesses
sende to therle of Derby, to have a safe conduct for sixe
of their burgesses to come into the hoost, to treat with therle
the same night or els the next day, the which was graunted.
And the next mornynge these burgesses came to therles tent,
and there concluded to become good Englysshyngmen, as long as
the kyng of Englynde or some other for hym, wolde kepe
and defende them fro the Frenchmen. Ther therle refreshed
hym in that towne thre dayes and toke homage of the
burgesses there. Than the erle went to the stronge towne of
Nyort, wherin was captayne the lorde Guysharde Dangle;
ther therle made thre assautes, but nothing coude he
wynne. Than they departed thens and went to Burge saynt
Maxymien, the which was wonne perforce and all that were
within slayne. After they went to Monstreil Boyvin, wherin
ther were a two hundred money makers that forde there
money for the French kyng: they sayde they wolde nat

1 St. Maixont.
2 Monstreil
3 Bonmin.
yelde up but defende the towne: but there was made suche a feere assaut, that it was won and all they within slayne. Therle newe for tyfted the castell, and made there a garson. Than the erle came before the cytie of Poycters the whiche was great and large: the erle besieged it on the one syde, for he had nat nombre suffycyent to lay rounde about. In-contynent they made assaut, and they of the cytie who were a great nombre of meane people, nat very mete for the warre, they defended themself so well at that tyme, that they toke but lytell damage: the assaut ceased and every man went to his logynge. The next day certayne knygghtes of the host toke their horses and rode about the towne, and returned and made report to therle of that they had sene; than they determynd the nexte day to assaut the cytie in thre places, and the greatest nombre to assaut wher as was the wekest place of the cytie, and thus it was done. And as than in the towne ther was no knight that knewe what ment any feate of warre, nor the people were nat expert in dedes of armes, to knowe howe to defende assautes, so in the wekyst place thenglyshmen entred. Whan they within sawe the towne wonne they fledde away out at other gates, but ther were slayne a viii. hundred for all were put to the swerde, men, women and chyldren, and the cytie overron and robbed, the whiche was full of great riches as well of thynhabytantes, as of them of the countrye that were come thyder for surety. Dyvers churches were there distroyed and many yvell dedes done, and mo had ben done, and therle had nat ben: for he commaunded on payne of dethe, no man to brenne no churche nor house, for he sayde he wolde tary there a ten or xii. dajes, so that therby part of the yvell dedes were seased, but for all that there was robereyes enough. Therle lay ther a xii. dajes and lenger myght have done, if it had pleased hym, for ther was none to resyst hym; all the contrey trymbled for feare of hym. Than therle departed to Poycters and left it voyde, for it was to great to be kept: at their departyng, they had so moche rychess, that they wydt natte what to do therwith: they sette by nothyng but golde and sylver and fethers for men of warre. Thanne they retourned by small journeys to saunt Johan Dangle; there therle rested hym a certayne
Syr John Froissart

Space, and thenglyshmen gave many good juels to the ladies and damosels of the towne, and so dyd therle hymself, and made every day gret dyners, suppers, and bankettes, and made great revell and sport among them; he achyved suche grace among them there, that they sayd he was the moost noble prince that ever rode on horsebacke. Than he toke his leave of them, and made the mayre and the burgesses to renewe their othe and to kepe the towne as the ryght herytage of the kyng of Engelande. Than the erie retourned by suche fortresses as he had wonne tyll he came to the cytie of Bourdeaux: than he gave leave every man to depart and thanked them of their good servyce.

CAP. CXXXVII

How the kyng of Scottes duryng the siege before Calys came into England with a gret host.

It is longe nowe syth we spake of kyng Davyd of Scotlande; howbeit tyll nowe there was none occasion why, for the tewse that was takene was well and trewey kept; so that whan the kyng of Englande had besieged Calays and lay there, than the Scottes determyned to make warre into Engelande and to be revenged of such hurtes as they had taken before: for they sayde than howe that the realme of Engelande was voyde of men of warr, for they were, as they sayd, with the kyng of Engelande before Calys, and some in Bretaygne, Poyctou, and Gascoyne. The Frenche kyng dyd what he coude to sterre the Scottes to that warre, to the entent that the kyng of Engelande shulde breke up his siege and retourne to defende his owne realme. The kyng of Scottes made his sommons to be at saynt Johns towne on the ryver of Tay in Scotlande; thryder came erles, barownes and prlates of Scotlande, and there agreed that in all haste posyble they shulde entre into Engelande. To come in that journey was desyred Johan of the Out iles, who governed the wyld Scottes, for to hym they obeyed and to no man els; he came with a thre thousande of the moost outragyoust people in all that countrey. Than all the Scottes were assembled, they were of one and other, a
THE CRONYCLE OF

fifty thousand fightynge menne. They coude nat make their assemble soo secrete but that the quene of Englynde, who was as thanne in the marches of the Northe about Yorke, knewe all their dealynge: thane she sent all about for menne and lay herselfe at Yorke; than all men of warre and archers came to Newcastell with the quene. In the meane season the kyng of Scottes departed fro saynt Johannes towne and wente to Done Fremelyne, the firste day. The nexte day they passed a lytell arme of the see and so came to Estermelyne, and than to Edenbrough. Than they nombed their company, and they were a thre thousande men of armes, knyghtes and squyers, and a thretie thousande of other, on hackenayes: thanne they came to Rousbourgh, the firste fortesse Englyshe on that parte; captayne there was sir Wylyam Montague. The Scottes passed by without any assay makyng, and so went forthe brennyng and distroyenge the countrey of Northumberlande; and their currous ranne to Yorke, and brennt as moche as was without the walles, and retourned agayne to their host within a dayes journey of Newcastell upon Tyne.

CAP. CXXXVIII

Of the batayle of Newcastell upon Tyne bytwene the quene of England and the kyng of Scottes.

THE quene of England, who desyred to defende her contrey, came to Newcastell upon Tyne and there taryd for her men, who came dayly fro all parites. When the Scottes knewe that the Englysshmen assembled at Newcastell, they drue thyderwarde and their currous came rennyng before the towne; and at their retournynge they brennt certayne small hamelettes there about, so that the smoke therof came into the towne of Newcastell: some of the Englysshmen wolde a yssued out to have foughht with them that made the fyers, but the captayns wolde nat suffre theym to yssue out. The next day the kyng of Scottes, with a xl. thousande men, one and other, came and lodged within thre lytell Englysshe myle of Newcastell in the lande
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of the lorde Nevyll, and the kyng sent to them within the
towne, that if they wolde yssue out into the felde, he wolde
fyght with them gladly. The lorde and prelates of
England sayd they were content to adventure their lyves
with the ryght and herytage of the kyng of Englund their
maister; than they all yssue out of the towne, and
were in nombre a twelue hundred men of armes, thre thou-
sand archers, and seynte thousande of other, with the
Walshmen. Than the Scottes came and lodged agaynst
them nere togyder: than every man was sette in order of
batayle: than the quene came among her men and there
was ordayned four batayls, one to ayde another. The firste
had in governaunce the bysshoppes of Dyrham and the
lorde Percy: the seconde the archbysshoppes of Yorke and
the lorde Nevyll: the thyrde the bysshoppes of Lyncolne,
and the lorde Mombray: the fourthe the lorde Edwarde
de Baylleule, captayne of Berwyke, the archbysshoppes of
Canterbury and the lorde Rose: every batayle had lyke
nombre, after their quantyte. The quene went fro batayle
to batayle desyrring them to do their devoyre to defende
the honoure of her lorde the kyng of Englund, and in the
name of God every man to be of good hert and courage,
promysyng them that to her power she wolde remembre
theym as well or better as thoughe her lorde the kyng were
ther personally. Than the quene departed fro them, recom-
mending them to God and to saynt George. Than anone
after, the batayles of the Scottes began to set forwarde,
and in lykewise so dyd thynglyshmen. Than the archers
began to shote on bothe parties, but the shot of the Scottes
endured but a short space, but the archers of Englund shot
so feernly, so that when the batayls aproched, there was a
harde batell. They began at nyne and endured tyll noone: the
Scottes had great axes sharpe and harde, and gave with them
many great strokes; howbeit finally thnglyshmen obtayned
the place and victorie, but they lost many of their men.
There were slayne of the Scottes, therle of Syr, therle of Ostre, therle of Patryes, therle of Surlant, therle Dastredare, therle of Mare, therle John Douglas, and the lorde Alysaunders Ram-
sey, who bare the kynges baner, and dyvers other knyghtes
and squyers. And there the kyng was taken, who fought
RR

1346
CAP.
CXXXVIII
Of the batayle of Newcastell upon Tyne.

818
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXXXVIII
Of the batayle of Newcastell upon Tyne.

1 Opie.

2 Aberdeen.

valiantly, and was sore hurt; a squyer of Northumberland toke hym, called John Coplande, and assone as he had taken the kynge, he went with hym out of the felde, with viii. of his servauntes with hym, and soo rode all that day, tyll he was a fyftene leages fro the place of the batayle, and at nyght he came to a castell called Orgulus; and than he sayde he wolde nat delyver the kynge of Scottes to no man nor woman lyveyng, but all onely to the kynge of Engelande, his lorde. The same day there was also taken in the felde the erle Morette, the erle of Marche, the lorde Wylyam Duglas, the lorde Robert Vesy, the bysshoppe of Dadudame, the bysshoppe of saynt Andrewes, and dyvers other knyghtes and barownes. And ther were slayne of one and other a xv. thousands, and the other saved themself as well as they might: this batell was beyside Newcastell, the yere of our lorde M.CCC. xlvi. the Saturday next after saynt Mychaell.

CAP. CXXXIX

How John Copland had the kynge of Scottes prisoner, and what profet he gatte therby.

W HAN the queene of Engelande, beyng at Newcastell understode howe the journey was for her and her men, she than rode to the place where the batayle hade ben: thane it was shewed her howe the kynge of Scottes was taken by a squyer called John Coplande, and he hadde caryed away the kynge no man knewe whyder. Than the queene wrote to the squyer commaundyng hym to bring his prisoner the kynge of Scottes, and howe he had nat well done to depart with hym without leave. All that day thenglysshmen taryed styl in the same place and the queene with them, and the next day they returnd to Newcastell. Whan the quenes letter was brought to Johan Coplande, he answered and sayd, that as for the kynge of Scottes his prisoner, he wolde nat delyver hym to no man nor woman lyveyng, but all onely to the kynge of Engelande his soverayne lorde; as for the kynge of Scottes, he sayd he shuld be savely kep, so that he wolde gyve acompte for hym. Thanne the queene sende letters to the kynge to Calays,
SYR JOHN FROISSART

wherby the kyng was enfourmed of the state of his realme. Than the kyng sende incontynent to Johan Coplande, that he shulde come over the see to hym to the siege before Calays. Than the same Johan dyd putte his prisoner in safe kepynge in a stronge castell, and so rode through Engeland till he came to Dover, and there toke the see and arrayed before Calays. Whan the kyng of Engelande sawe the squire, he toke hym by the hande and sayde, A welcome my squire, that by your valyantnesse hath taken myne adversary, the kyng of Scottes. The squire knelde downe and sayde, Sir, yf God by his grace have suffred me to take the king of Scottes by true conquest of armes, sir, I thynke no man ought to have any envy thereat, for as well God may sende by his grace suche a fortune to fall to a poore squire, as to a great lorde; and sir, I requyre your grace be nat mycontent with me, though I dye nat delyver the kyng of Scottes at the commaundement of the queene. Sir, I holde of you, as myne othe is to you, and nat to her but in all good maner. The kyng sayd, Johan, the good serveyce that ye have done and your valyantnesse is so moche worth, that hit must countervayle your trespasse and be taken for your excuse, and shame have they that bere you any yvell wyll therfore. Ye shall retourne agayne home to your house, and thame my pleasure is that ye delyver your prisoner to the queene my wyfe, and in a rewarde I assigne you nere to your house, where as ye thynke best yourselfe, fbye hundred pounde sterlyng of yerely rent to you and to your heyres for ever, and here I make you squyer for my body. Thane the thryde day he departed and retournd agayne into Engelande, and when he came home to his owne house, he assembled togynder his frendes and kynne, and so they toke the kyng of Scottes, and rode with hym to the cytie of Yorke, and there fro the kyng his lorde he presented the kyng of Scottes to the queene, and excused hym so largely, that the queene and her counsell were content. Than the queene made good provision for the cytie of Yorke, the castell of Rosbourn, the cyte of Dyrham, the towe of Newcastell upon Tyne, and in all other garysons on the marchesse of Scotlande, and left in those marchesse the lorde Percy and the lorde Nevyll, as governoure there.
THE CRONYCLE OF

Thanne the quene departed fro Yorke towards London. Then she sette the kynge of Scottes in the strong towre of London, and therle Morette and all other prisoners, and sette good kepyng over them. Than she went to Dover and there tooke the see, and had so good wynde, that in a shorte space she arryved before Calays, thre dayes before the feest of Al Sayntes, for whose commyng the kynge made a great feest and dyner, to all the lorde and ladys that were ther. The quene brought many ladys and damoselles with her, as well to acompany her as to se their husbandes, fathers, bretherne and other fredes that lay at siege there before Calays and had done a longe space.

CAP. CXL

Howe the yonge erle of Flaunders ensured the kynges daughter of Englannde.

The siege before Calais enduredde longe, and many thinges fell in the meane season, the whiche I canne nat write the fourthe parte. The Frenche kynge had sette men of warre in every fortresse in those marchesse, in the countie of Guynes, of Arthoyes, of Bolyone, and aboute Calays, and had a great nombre of Genowayes, Normayns and other on the see, so that whan any of the Englyshmen wolde goo a foragyng, other a fote or horsebacke, they founde many tymes harde adventures, and often there was skirmishing about the gates and dykes of the towne, and often tymes some slayne and hurte on bothe parties; some daye the one part lost and some daye the other. The kynge of Englannde caused engyns to be made to oppresse theymwe within the towne, but they within made other agayne to resist them, so that they toke lytell hurt by them; but nothyng coude come into the towne but by stelth, and that was by the meane of two maryners, one called Maraunt, and the other Mestryll, and they dwelt in Abyle; by theym two, they of Calays were often tymes reconforted and fresshed by stelth, and often tymes they were in great peryl, chased and nere taken, but alwayes they scaped, and made many Englyshmen to be drownned.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

All that wynter the kyng lay styll at the siege, and thought and ymagined ever to kepe the commentie of Flandours in frendshyppe, for he thought by their meanes the soner to come to his entent. He sende ofte tymes to them with fayre promyses, sayeng that if he myght gette Calys, he wolde helpe them to recover Lysle, and Doway, with all their appurtenaunces. So by occasyon of suche promyses, whyle the kyng was in Normandy towards Cressey and Calays, they went and layd siege to Bethwyn, and ther captayne was sir Ouadeart de Rony, who was banysshed out of Fraunce. They helde a great siege before that towne, and sore constrayned them by assaut: but within were four knyghtes captayns, set there by the Frenche kyng to kepe the towne, that is to say, sir Geffray of Charney, sir Ewstace of Rybamont, sir Baudwyn of Nekyn,1 and sir John of Landas: they defended the towne in suche wyse, that the Flemmynges wan nothyng ther, but so departed and retournd agayne into Flandours. But whyle the kyng of Englande lay at siege before Calys, he sent styll messangers to them of Flanders, and made them great promyses to kepe their amyte with hym, and to oppress the drift of the French kyng, who dyde all that he coulde to drawe them to his opynyon. The kyng of Englande wolde gladly that the erle Loyes of Flandours, who was as than but fyftene yere of age, shulde have in maryage his doughter Isabell; so moche dyd the kyng that the Flemmynges agreed therto; wherof the kyng was gladde, for he thought by that mariadge, the Flemmynges wolde the gladlyer helpe hym: and the Flemmynges thought by havynge of the kyng of Englande on their partie, they might well resyst the Frenchmen; they thought it more necessary and profytable for them, the love of the kyng of Englande, rather than the French kyng. But the yong erle, who had ben ever norysshed amonge the noble men of France, wolde nat agre, and sayd playnly, he wolde nat have to his wyfe the doughter of hym that slewe his father. Also duke Johan of Brabant, purchased greatly that the erle of Flandours shulde have his doughter in maryage, promysing hym that if he wolde take her to his wyfe, that he wolde cause hym to enjoy the hole erldome of Flanders, other by fayre meanes

1 d'Annequin.
or otherwyse. Also the duke sayde to the Frenche kyng, Sir, if the erle of Flanders woll take my daughter, I shall fynde
the meanes that all the Flemmynges shall take your part
and forsaie the kyng of Englaunde; by the whiche promyse
the Frenche kyng agreed to that maryage. Whan the duke
of Brabant had the kynges gode wyll, than he sent certayne
messangers into Flanders to the burgesses of the good
townes, and shewed them so fayre reasons, that the coun-
sayles of the good townes sent to the erle their naturall
lorde, certifuyng hym that if he wolde come into Flanders
and use their counsayle, they wolde be to hym trewe and
good frendes, and delyver to hym all the rightes and jurys-
dicyons of Flanders, as moche as ever any erle hadde: the
erle toke counsayle and went into Flaunders, wher he was
receyved with great joye and gyven to hym many great
presentes. Assone as the kyng of Englaunde harde of this,
he sende into Flaunders the erle of Northampton, therle of
Arundell, and the lorde Cobham. They dyde so moche with
the offycers and commons of Flaunders, that they had rather
that their lorde therle shulde take to his wyfe the kyng of
Englandes daughter, than the daughter of the duke of
Brabant; and so to do they affectously desyred their
lorde, and shewed hym many fayre reasons to drewe hym
to that way, so that the burgesses that wer on the duke of
Brabantes partie durste nat say the contrary. But than
the erle in no wyse wolde concet therto, but ever he sayde
he wolde natte wedde her, whose father had slayne his,
though he myght have halfe of the hole realme of Englaunde.
Whane the Flemmynges saves that, they sayd howe their
lorde was to moche French and yvell counsayled, and also
sayd howe they wolde do no good to hym, syth he wolde
nat belyve their counsayls. Than they toke and putte hym
in cortoyse prison, and sayd howe he shulde never depart
without he wolde folowe and byleve their counsayls: also
they sayd, that the erle his father belyved and loved to
mocene the Frenchemen, for if he wolde a byleved them, he
shulde have ben the greatest lorde in all christendome, and
recovered agayne Lysle, Doway, and Bethwyn, and yet
alyve. Thus the mater abode a certayne space: the kynges
of Englaunde lay styll at the siege before Calays, and kept a
SYR JOHN FROISSART 1347

great court that Christmas; and about the begynnynge of Lent after, came thysker out of Gascoyne the erle of Derby, Howe the erle of Penbroke, the erle of Canforte, and dyvers other yonge erle knyghtes and squyres, that had passed the see with the erle. Thus the erle of Flaunders was long in danger amonge the Flemmynges in courtoyse prison, and it greatly anoyed hym. Than at last he sayde he wolde byleve their counsayle, for he knewe well, he sayd, that he shulde have more profet there than in any other contrey. These wordec rejoysed greatly the Flemmynges; than they toke hym out of prison and suffred hym to go a haukyng to the ryver, the which sport the erle loved well; but ever ther was good watche layde on hym, that he shulde nat steale away fro theym, and they were charged on their lyves to take good hede to hym, and also they were suche as were favourable to the kyng of England: they watched hym so nere, that he coude nat pyssse without their knowle ge. This endured so longe that at last the erle sayd that he wolde gladly have to his wyfe the kyng of Englandes daughter. Than the Flemmynges sende worde therof to the kyng and to the quene, and poynyte a day that they shulde come to Bergus in the abbey, and to bringe their daughter with theym, and they wolde bring thyder their lorde the erle of Flanders, and there to conclude up the maryage. The kyng and the quene were gladde therof, and sayde that the Flemmynges were good men; so to Bergus bytwene Newport and Gravelynge, came the most saedd men of the gode townes in Flaunders, and brought with them the erle ther lorde in great estate. The kyng of Englande and the quene were ther redy; the erle courtesly inclyned to the kyng and to the quene; the kyng toke the erle by the ryght hande right swetely, and ledde hym forthe, sayeng, As for the dethe of the erle your father, as God helpe me, the day of the batayle of Cressey, nor the nexte day after I never herde worde of hym that he shulde be there. The yong erle by semblant made as though he had ben content with the kynges excuse. Than they fell in communycacyon of the maryage: there were certayne artycles agreed unto by the kyng of Englande and the erle Loyes of Flaunders, and great amyties ther was sworne bytwene them to be
THE CRONYCLE OF

holden; and there the erle syuenced Isabell the kyng of
Englanes daughter, and promysed to wedde her. So that
journey brake of, and a newe day to be apoynted at more
leazer: the Flemmynges returned into Flandre with thei
lorde, and the kyng of Englande with the quene went
agayne to the siegre of Calaia. Thus the mater stode a
certayne tyme, and the kyng and the quene prepayred
greatly agayne the maryage for Jewelles and other thynges
to gyve away, acordyng to their behayvous. The erle of
Flandre dayly past the tyme at the ryver, and made
semblant that this maryage pleased him greatly: so the
Flemmynges thought that they were than sure ynowh
of hym, so that there was nat so great watch made on hym as
was before. But they knewe nat well the condycion of their
lorde, for whatsover countenance he made outwarde, his
inwarde courage was all Frenche. So on a day he went forthe
with his hawkes, the same weke the maryage shulde have
ben finysshed; his fauconer cast of a faukon to an hearon,
and therle cast of another. So these two faukons chased the
hearon, and the erle rode after, as to folowe his faucon; and
whan he was a gode way of and had the advantage of the
feldes, he dassed his spurres to his horse and galoped
forth in suche wyse, that his kepars lost hym: stylle he
goloped forthright, tyll he came into Arthoyes, and ther he
was in suretie: and so than he rode into Fraunce to kyng
Philip and shewed hym all his adventure. The kyng and
the Frenchmen sayd howe he had dalt wysely: the Englyssh-
men on the other syde sayd howe he had betrayed and
disseyved them; but for all that, the kyng left nat to kepe
the Flemmynges in amyte, for he knewe well the erle had
done this dede nat by their counsell, for they wer sore
dyspleased therwith; and the excuse that they made the
kyng soone byleved it in that behalfe.
CAP. CXLI

Howe sir Robert of Namure dyde homage to the kyng of England before Calayes.

WYLYE the kyng lay at siege before Calayes, ther came to se the kyng and the quene dyvers lorde and knightes of Flandes, of Brabant, of Heynuault, and of Almaygne, and there departed none agayme but that had great gyftes gyven them. The same season there was newlye come into the countie of Namure and of Liege out of the Holy Lande, sir Robert of Namure, and the lorde of Lespentyne hadde made hym knyght at the holy sepulcre. This sir Robert was as than a yong lusty knight and was nat desyred of any of bothe kynges; than he came of his owne good mynde, well accompanied and richely to the siege before Calayes, and there presented hymselfe to the kyng of Englande, who joyfully recceived hym, and so dyde the quene and all the other lorde; he entred greatly into the kynges favour, bycause he bare the name of sir Robert de Arthoys, his uncle. Thus sir Robert became the kynges liege man: the kyng gave hym thre hundred pounte sterlynge by yere out of his cofers, to be payde at Bruges: there he taryed with the kyng before Calaytell the town was wonne, as ye shall here after.

CAP. CXLII

Howe thenglysshmen wanne the Rochdaren, and howe sir Charles de Bloyes layed siege thereto.

IT is longe nowe syth we spake of sir Charles de Bloyes as than the duke of Bretaygne, and of the countesse of Mountforde, but it was bycause of the truse that was takenne at Vannes the whiche was well kept; for duryng the trewse, eyther partie kept peassably that they had in possessyon: and assone as the trewse was expyre they made agayne feersse warr. There was come into Bretaygne.
THE CRONICLE OF

fro the kyng of Englelde, sir Thomas Dangorne, and sir Johan Hartwell: they came thyder fro the siege of Calays, with a hundred men of armes, and foure hundred archers; they taryd with the countes of Mountforde, at Hanybont, and with them sir Tanguy of the Castell Bretonne Bretonart. Theglisshmen and Bretons of that parte made often tymes journeys agaynst sir Charles de Bloyes men: somtyme they wanne and somtyme they lost: the contrey was exyled and destroyed by reason of these men of warre. On a day these Englysshmen went and layde siege to a good towne called Rochdaren, and often tymes they made assautes, but the towne was so well defended that theglisshmen wanne nothyng; captayne within the towne was Tassart de Guynes. They within the towne were thre partes, rather Englysshe than Frenche; and so they tooke the captayne and sayde they wolde sse hym without he wolde yelde hymselfe Englysshe to them. Thanne he sayde he wolde do as they wolde have hym and so therupon they let hym go; and than he taryed with the Englysshmen and tourned to the countes of Mountforde partes, and so he was styll captyayne of the towne and left certayne soudyours to kepe the towne and castell. Whan sir Charles du Bloyes herde therof, he aware that the mater shulde natte longe be so: thane he sende for menne all aboute Bretaygne and Normandy, and assembled in the ctye of Naunte sixtene hundred menne of armes and twelue thousande atote; ther were with hym a four hundred knyghtes and xxiii. baners. So he came and layde siege to Rochdaren lately before wonne by the Englysshmen, and had great engys that caste day and nyght, the which sore constrayned them within. Than they of the towne sende messangers to the countesse of Mountforde, that acordyng to her promye, to sende them some ayle and conforte. Than the countesse sende all aboute to assemble men togyder, and shortly she had a thousande menne of armes and eyght thousande atote, and she made captyyyns of theym theforsayd thre knyghtes, who sayd they wolde never retourne tylly they had reysed the seige before Rochdaren or els to dye in the quarrell. And so they sette forthe, and came nere to the hoost of sir Charles of Bloyes, and lodged
Syr John Froissart

by a ryver syde that night to thynent to fight the next CAP. CXLII
day. And when every man was at rest, sir Thomas Dan-
gorne and sir Johan Artwell caused halfe their company
thenglysh-
men wanne to be armed, and departed fro their hoost about mydnight,
the Roch-
and sodenly entred into the lorde Charles hoost on the one
daren.
syde, and beate downe and slew moche people, and they
taryd so longe, that all the hoost was moved and every
man redy so that they coulde nat retourne agayne without
batayle. There they were enclosed, and fought withall
sharply, so that they might nat bere the Frenchmens dedes,
but ther they were taken and sir Thomas Dangorne sore
hurt, but sir Johan Artwell saved hymselfe as well as he
might by the ryver and returned to his company, and
shewed them his adventure; thanne they were determyned
to have retournd agayne to Hanybont.

CAP. CXLIII

Of the batayle of Rochedaren and how sir Charles
de Bloys was there taken by thenglyshmen.

THE same seson that the Englyshmen were thus in
counsayle and had determyned to have departed,
there came to them a knyght from the countesse
of Mountforte, called Garnyer lorde of Cadudall, with a
hundred men of armes: and assone as he was come and
knewe all their demenour he sayde, Nay sirs, lette us nat
thus tourne agayne, leape on your horses and suche as have
non lette them come afote; lette us nowe go loke on our
ennemyes for nowe they thynek themselfe sure, I warant
we shall dysconfet them. Than the horsemens rode forthe
and the fotemen followed, and aboute the sonne ryssinge
they dasshed into the lorde Charles hoost, and every manne
ther was aslepe and at rest for they thought to have no
more ado at that tyme. Thenglyshmen and Bretons
bete downe tentes and pavilyons and slew people downe
right for they were sodenly taken; ther was much people
slayne, and sir Charles de Bloyes and all the lords of
Bretayne and Normandy that were there with hym were
taken prisoners.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXLIII

Thus the siege of Rochedare was reysed, and the lorde
Of the batayle Charles was brought to Hanybont: but suche fortresses as
were of his partie helde styll, for his wyfe who called her-
selfe duchesse of Bretygne toke the warre in hande.

CAP. CXLIII

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled a great hoost
to rayse the kyng of England fro the
siege before Calys.

KINGE Phylippe who knewe well howe his men were
sore constraigned in Calays, commaunded every
manne to be with hym at the feest of Pentecost in
the cyte of Amyense or ther about: ther was non durst say
nay. The kyng kept there a great feest: theyde came
duke Odes of Burgoyne and the duke of Normandy his
eldest sonne and the duke of Orlyanse his youngest sonne,
the duke of Burbon, therye of Foytz, the lorde Loyes of
Savoy, sier John of Heynalt, the erle of Armnynke, the erle
of Forestes, therye of Valenntenoyys and dyvers other erles,
barons, and knyghtes. Whan they were all at Amyense
they toke counsayle; the Frenche kyng wolde gladly that
the passages of Flaunders myght have ben opyen to hym,
fo than they thought they might sende part of his men to
Gravelyne, and by that way to refresche the towne of Calys,
and on that syde to fyght easly with thenglyshmen. He
sende great messangers into Flendars to treat for that
mater, but the kyng of Engelande had ther suche frendes
that they wolde never acorde to that curtesy. Than the
Frenche kyng said howe he wolde go thyder on the syde
towarde Burgoyne. The kyng of Engelande sawe well howe
he coude nat get Calays but by famyne; than he made a
stronge castell and a hygh, to close up the passage by the
see, and this castell was set bytwene the towne and the see,
and was well fortyfied with springailles, bombardes, bowes,
and other artillery: and in this castell were therscore men
of armes and two hundred archers; they kept the havyn in
suche wyse, that nothyng coude come in nor out; it was
SYR JOHN FROISSART

thought that therby they within shulde the soner be famysshed. In that season the kyng of Engylande so exhorted them of Flaundyers, that there yssued out of Flaundyers a hun turd thousande, and went and layde siege to the towne of Ayre, and brent the contrey all about, as Meryvell,\textsuperscript{1} La Gorge,\textsuperscript{2} Estelles\textsuperscript{3} le Ventre,\textsuperscript{4} and a marche called la Loe, and to the gates of saynt Omer and Turwype.\textsuperscript{5} Than the kyng went to the towne of Arras, and sette many men of warr to the garysons of Athoys, and specially he sent his constable, sir Charles of Spaygne to saynt Omer, for the erle of Ewe and of Guynes, who was constable of Fraunce, was prisoner in Engylande, as it hath ben shewed before. The Flemmynges dyd the Frenchmen great trouble or they departed; and when the Flemmynges were returned, than the French kyng and his company departed fro Arras, and went to Hedyn. His host with the caryage held well in length, a thre leagues of that contrey, and ther he taryed a day, and the next day to Blangy; ther he rested to take adyse what way to go forthe: than he was counsayled to go through the contrey called la Belme: and that way he toke and with hym a CC.M. one and other, and so passed by the countie of Franqueberg,\textsuperscript{6} and so came streyght to the hyll of Sangattes, bytwene Calys and Wyssant: they came thyder in goodly order with baners displayed, that hit was great beautie to beholde their puyssant array; they of Calys whan they sawe them lodge it semed to them a newe siege.

CAP. CXLV

Howe the kyng of Engylande made the passages about Calays to be well kept that the Frenche kyng shulde nat aproche to reyse his siege.

Y

E shall here what the kyng of Engylande dyd and caused to be done, whane he sawe and knewe that the French kyng came with so great an hoost to rayse the siege, the whiche had coste hym so moche good and payne of his body, and lost many of his men, and knewe well howe he had so constrained the towne that hit

\textsuperscript{1} Mervell. \textsuperscript{2} La Gorgue. \textsuperscript{3} Estaires. \textsuperscript{4} Lovembic. \textsuperscript{5} Thaumante. \textsuperscript{6} Fauquem-berpke.
THE CRONYCLE OF

coulde nat longe endure for defaute of vitayls: it greved hym sore than to depart. Than he advysed well howe the Frenchmen coude nat aproche neither to his hoost nor to the towne, but in two places, other by the downes by the see syde or elles above by the hyghe way, and there was many dykes, rockes, and maresshes, and but one way to passe, over a bridge called Newlande; bridge. Thane the kyng made all his navy to drawe along by the cost of the downes, every shyp well garnysshed with bombardes, crossbowes, archers, springalles and other artyllary, wherby the Frenche boost myght nat passe that way: and the kyng caused the erle of Derby to go and kepe Newlande bridge, with a great nombre of men of armes and archers, so that the Frenchmen coude natte passe no way, without they wolde have gone through the marshes, the whiche was unpossyble. On the other syde towarde Calys, ther was a hyghe towre kept with xxx archers, and they kept the passage of the downes fro the Frenchmen the whiche was well fortiffyd with great and double dykes. Whan the Frenchmen were thus lodged on the mount of Sangu, the commons of Tumey who were a fyftene hundred came to that towre, and they within shotte at them, but they passed the dykes and came to the fote of the wall with pykes and hokes. There was a sore assaute, and many of them of Tourney sore hurt, but at laste they wann the towre, and all that were within slayne and the towre beaten downe: the French kyng sent his marshals to advysse what way he myght aproche, to fyght with the Englysshemen: so they went forthe, and whan they had advised the passages and straytes, they retorned to the kyng and sayd, howe in no wyse he coude come to the Englysshemen without he wolde lese his people. So the mater rested all that day and nyght after. The nexte day after masse, the Frenche kyng sende to the kyng of Englande, the lorde Geffray of Charney, the lorde Ewstace of Rybmount, Guy of Nele, and the lorde of Beajewe, and as they rodde that stronlye way they sawe well it was harde to passe that way: they prayed moche the order that the erle of Derby kepte there at the bridge of Newlande by the whiche they passed. Than they rode tyll they came to the kyng, who was well acompanyed with
SYR JOHN FROISSART

noble men aboute hym; thanne they foure lyghted and
came to the kynge and dyde their reverence to hym; thane the
lorde Eustace of Rybalmart said, Sir, the kynge my
maister sendeth you worde by us, that he is come to the
mount of Sangate to do batayle with you, but he canne
ynde no way to come to you; therafore, sir, he wolde that
ye shulde apoynt certayne of your cownsayle, and in lyke-
wise of his, and they bytwene theym to adyses a place for
the batayle. The kyng of Engeland was redy adysesd to
answere, and sayd, Sirs, I have well understande that ye
desyre me, on the behalfe of myne adversary, who kepeth
wrongfully fro me myne herytage, wherfore I am sory:
say unto hym fro me if ye lyst, that I am here and so
have bene nygher an hole yere, and all this he knewe right
well: he might have come hyther soner if he had wolde,
but he hath suffred me to abyde here so long, the which
hath ben gretyly to my coste and charge; I nowe coude do
so moche if I wolde, to be sone lorde of Calays, wherfore I
am natte determynedde to folowe his devysy and ease, nor
to depar fro that whiche I am at the poyn to wynne, and
that I have so sore desyred and derely bought. Wherfore if
he nor his men canne passe this way, lette theym seke some
other passage if they thynke to come hyther. Thane these
lordes departed and were conveyed tyll they were pase
Newlande bridge; than they shewed the Frenche kynge the
kyng of Engelandes surnswere. In the meane season whyle
the Frenche kynge studyed howe to fight with the kyng of
Engelande, ther came into his hoost tow cardynalles from
pope Clement in legacion, who toke great payne to ryde
bytwene these hoostes, and they procuredde so moche, that
ther was granted a certayne treatise of acorde, and a re-
spyte bytwene the two kynges and their men, beyngte there
at siege and in the felde all onely. And so ther were four
lordes apoynted on eyther parte to counsell togyer and
to tret for a peace: for the Frenche kyng, ther was the
duke of Burgoynye, and the duke of Burbone, sir Loyes of
Savoy, and sir John Heynalt: and for thenglyshe parte,
therle of Derby, the erle of Northamton, the lorde Reynolde
Cobham and the lorde Gaultyer of Manny; and the two
cardynalles were meanes bytwene the parte. These lordes
mette thre dayes and many devyses put forthe, but none
toke effect: and in the meane season the kyng of Englane
dayes fortifyed his host and felde, and made dykes on the
downes that the Frenchmen shuld nat sodenly come on
them. These thre dayes passed without any agrement;
than the two cardynalies returned to saunt Omers, and
whan the Frenche kyng sawe that he coulde do nothyng,
the next day he dyslogged betymes and toke his waye to
Amyens, and gave every man leave to depart. Whane they
within Calays sawe their kyng depart they made great
sorowe; some of the Englysshmen folowed the tayle of the
Frenchmen and wanne somers, cartes and caryages, horse,
wyne and other thynges, and toke prisoners whom they
brought into the hoost before Calays.

CAP. CXLVI
Howe the towne of Calys was gyven up to the
kyng of England.

AFTER that the Frenche kyng was thus departed fro
Sangate, they within Calays sawe well howe their
socoure fayled them, for the whiche they were in
great sorowe. Than they desyrede so moche their captayne
sir John of Vyen, that he went to the walles of the towne
and made a sygne to speke with some person of the hoost.
Whan the kyng harde therof, he sende thyder sir Gaultier
of Manny and sir Basset: than sir John of Vyen sayd to
them, Sirs, ye be right valyant knyghtes in dedes of armes,
and ye knowe well howe the kyng my maister hath sende
me and other to this towne, and commaunded us to kepe it
to his behofe, in suche wyse that we take no blame nor to
hym no dammage; and we have done all that lyeth in oure
power. Nowe our socours hath fayled us, and we be so
sore strayned that we have nat to lyve withall, but that we
muste all dye or elys enrage for famyn, without the noble
and gentyl kyng of yours woll take mercy on us: the
which to do we requyre you to desyre hym, to have pyte on
us and to let us go and depart as we be, and lette hym take
the towne and castell and all the goodes that be therin, the
SYR JOHN FROISSART

whiche is great habundaunce. Than sir Gaultyer of Manny
sayde, Sir, we knowe somewhat of the entencyon of the kynge
our maister, for he hath shewed it unto us; surely knowe
for trouth it is nat his mynde that ye nor they within the
towne shulde departe so, for it is his wyll that ye all shulde
put your selfes into his pure wyll, to ransome all suche as
pleaseth hym and to putte to dethe suche as he lyste:
for they of Calays hath done hym suche contrarayes and
dispyghtes, and hathe caused hym to dyspende soo moche
good, and loste many of his menne, that he is sore greved
agaynst them. Than the captayne sayde, Sir, this is to harde
a mater to us; we ar here within, a small sorte of knyghtes
and s quyers, who hath trewely served the kynge our maister
as well as ye serve yours in lyke case, and we have endured
moche payne and unease; but we shall yet endure asmoche
payne as ever knyghtes dyd rather thanne to consent that
the worst ladde in the town shulde have any more yvell
than the grettest of us all: therfore, sir, we pray you that
of your humylite, yet that ye woll go and speke to the
kynge of Engelande and desyre hym to have pytie of us, for
we truste in hym somoche gentylnesse, that by the grace of
God his purpose shall chaung. Sir Gaultier of Manny and
sir Basset retorned to the kynge and declared to hym all
that hadde ben sayde. The kynge sayde he wolde none
otherwise but that they shulde yeldel them up symply to
his pleasure. Than sir Gaultyer sayde, Sir, sayng your
dypleasure in this, ye may be in the wronge, for ye shall
gyve by this an yvell ensample: if ye sende any of us your
servauntes into any fortresse, we wol nat be very gladde to
go if ye putte any of them in the towne to dethe after
they be yelded, for in lykewise they woll deale with us
if the case fell lyke: the whiche wordes dyverse other
lordes that were there present sustayned and mayntyned.
Than the kynge sayde, Sirs, I woll nat be alone agaynst you
all; therfore, sir Gaultyer of Manny, ye shall goo and say to
the captyayne that all the grace that he shall finde nowe in
me is that they lette sice of the chiene burgesses of the
towne come out bare heeded, bare foted and bare legged,
and in their shertes, with haulters about their neckes, with
the kayes of the towne and castell in their handes, and lette
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXLVI theym sixe yeilde themselfe purely to my wyll, and the reydewe I wyll take to mercy. Than sir Gaultyer retourne and founde sir John of Vyen styll on the wall, abydinge for an answere: thanne sir Gaultier shewed hym all the grace that he coulde gette of the kynge. Well, quoth sir Johan, sir, I requyre you tary here a certayne space tyll I go into the towne and shewe this to the commons of the towne, who sent me hyder. Than sir John went unto the market place and sownde the common bell. Than inconty- nent men and women assembled there; than the captayne made reporte of all that he had done, and sayde, Sirs, it wyll be none otherwyse; therenfore nowe take advyse and make a shorter answere. Thanne all the people beganne to wepe and to make such sorowe, that there was nat so hard a hert if they had sene them but that wolde have had great pytie of theym; the captayne hym selfe wepte pytceously. At last the moost riche burgesse of all the towne, called Ewstace of saynt Peters, rose up and sayde openly, Sirs, great and small, great myschiefe it shulde be to suffre to dye suche people as be in this towne, other by famyn or otherwyse, whan there is a meane to save theym: I thynke he or they shulde have great myrtye of our Lorde God that myght kepe theym fro suche myscheye: as for my parte, I have so good truste in our Lorde God, that if I dye in the quarell to save the residewe, that God wolde pardone me; wherfore, to save them, I wyll be the first to putte my lyfe in jeopardy. Whan he had thus sayde, every man wors- hypped hym, and dyvers kneled downe at his fete with sore wepyng and sore sighes. Than another honest burgesse rose and sayde, I wyll kepe company with my gosyppe Ewstace; he was called John Dayre. Than rose up Jaques of Wysant, who was riche in goodes and herytage; he sayd also that he wolde holde company with his two cozyns; in likwyse so dyd Peter of Wysant his brother: and thanne rose two other; they sayde they wolde do the same. Thanne they went and appareled them as the kynge desyred. Than the captayne went with them to the gate: ther was great lamentacyon made of men, women, and chyldren at their departyng: than the gate was opyned and he yssue out with the vi. burgesses and closed the gate agayne, so
that they were bytwene the gate and the barriars. Than he sayd to sir Gaultier of Manny, Sir, I delyer here to you as the captyne of Calays, by the hole consent of all the peple of the towne, these six burgesses; and I swere to you truely that they be and were to day moost honourable, riche, and most notable burgesses of all the towne of Calys; wherfore, gentyll knyght, I requyre you pray the kynge to have mercy on theym, that they dye nat. Quoth sir Gaultier, I can nat say what the kynge wyll do, but I shall do for them the best I can. Thane the barriyers were opyned, the sixe burgesses went towards the kynge, and the captyne entred agayne into the towne. Whan sir Gaultier presented these burgesses to the kynge, they kneled downe and helde up their handes and sayd, Gentyll kynge, beholde here we sixe, who were burgesses of Calays and great marchantes: we have brought to you the kayes of the towne and of the castell and we submyt oure selye clerly into your wyll and pleasure, to save the resydue of the people of Calays, who have suffred great payne. Sir, we beseeche your grace to have mercy and pytie on us through your hygh nobles: than all the erles and barownes, and other that were there, wept for pytie. The kynge lokked felly on theym, for greatly he hated the people of Calys, for the gret damages and dyspleasures they had done hym on the se before. Than he commaunded their heedes to be sryken of. Than every man requyred the kynge for mercy, but he wolde here no man in that behalfe. Than sir Gaultier of Manny sayd, A noble kynge, for Goddes-sake, refrayne your courage; ye have the name of soverayyne nobles, therfore nowe do nat a thyng that shulde blemyshe your renome, nor to gyve cause to some to speke of you villany; every man wol say it is a great crueltie to put to deth suche honest persons, who by their owne wylles putte themselfe into your grace to save their company. Than the kynge wryed away fro hym, and commaunded to sende for the hangman, and sayd, They of Calys had caused many of my men to be slayne, wherfore these shall dye in likewyse. Than the quene beynge great with chyld, kneled downe and sere wepyng, sayd, A gentyll sir, syth I passed the see in great parell, I have desyred nothyng of you; therfore nowe I humbly requyre you, in the honour of the Son of the Virgyn.
Mary and for the love of me that ye wold take mercy of these sise burgesses. The kyng behelde the quene and stode styll in a study a space, and than sayd, A dame, I wold ye had ben as nowe in some other place, ye make suche request to me that I can nat deny you; wherfore I gyve them to you, to do your pleasure with them. Than the quene caused them to be brought into her chambre, and made the halters to be taken fro their neckes, and caused them to be newe clothed, and gave them their dyner at their lesor; and than she gave ech of them sise nobles and made them to be brought out of thoost in savedgard and set at their lyberte.

CAP. CXLVII

Howe the kyng of Englande repeopled the towne of Calys with Englysshmen.

Thus the strong towne of Calays was gyven up to kyng Edwarde of England the yere of our Lorde God MCCC.xlvi. in the moneth of August. The kyng of England called to hym sir Gaultier of Manny and his two marshals, therle of Warwyke and therle of Stafforde, and sayd to them, Sirs, take here the kayes of the towne and castell of Calys; go and take possessyon there and putte in prison all the knyghtes that be there, and all other soudyours that came thyder symply to wynne their lyveng; cause them to avoyde the towne, and also all other men, women and chylde, for I wolde repeopele agayne the towne with pure Englysshmen. So these thre lorde with a hundred with them went and toke possessyon of Calys, and dyd put in prison sir John de Vien, sir John of Surrey, sir John of Belborne, and other. Than they made all the soudyers to bring all their harnesse into a place apoynted, and layed it all on a hepe in the hall of Calys. Thanne they made all maner of people to voyde, and kept there no mo persons but a preest and two other auncyent personages, suche as knewe the customes, lawes and ordynanaces of the towne, and to signe out the herytages howe they were devyded. Than they prepared the castell to lodge the kyng and quene, and prepared other houses for the kynges company. Than
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the kyng mounted on his horse and entred into the townewith trumpets, tabours, nakquayres and hornes, and there the kyng lay till the quene was brought a bedde of a fayre lady named Margarete. The kyng gave to sir Gaultier of Manny dyvers fayre houses within the town, and to theris Stafford, to the lorde of Bethene, to sir Bartylmewe of Bomes, and to other lorde to repople agayn the town.
The kynges mynde was when he came into Englande to send out of London a xxxvi. good burgesses to Calys to dwell there, and to do somoche that the town myght be peopled with pure Englysshmen; the which entent the kyng fulfylled. Than the newe towne and bastyd that was made without the towne was pulled downe, and the castell that stode on the havyn rasshed downe, and the great tymbre and stones brought into the towne. Than the kyng ordayned men to kepe the gates, wallis and barreryers, and amended all thynge within the towne; and sir John de Vien and his company were sent into Englande and were halfe a yere at London, than they were putte to raunsome. Methynke it was great pyte of the burgesses and other men of the towne of Calys, and women and chyldren, whane they were fayne to forsake their houses, herytages and goodes, and to bere away nothyng, and they had no restorment of the Frenche kyng, for whose sake they lost all: the moost part of them went to saynt Omers. The cardynall Guy de Boloyn, who was come into France in legacyon and was with the Frenche kyng his cosyn in the cytie of Amyense, he purchased somoche that a truse was taken bytwene the kynges of Englanede and of Fraunc, their contres and herytages, to endure two yeres. To this truse all parties were agreed, but Bretayne was clerely excepte, for the two ladys made styll warre one against the other. Than the kyng of Englanede and the quene returne into Englanede, and the kyng made captayne of Calys sir Amery of Pavy, a Lumbarde borne, whom the kyng had greatly avunced. Than the kyngse sende fro London xxxvi. burgesse to Calays, who were ryche and sage, and their wyves and children, and dayly encreased the nombre, for the kyng graunted there suche lyberties and franchysse, thath men were gladde to go and dwell there. The same tyme
was brought to London sir Charles de Bloyes, who called hymselfe duke of Breten; he was putte in cortoyse prison, in the Towre of London with the kyng of Scottes and the erle of Morette; but he had nat ben there longe but at the request of the queene of Engaine the kyng of Engaine her cosyn germayne was receyvedde on his fayth and trouth, and rode all about London at his pleasure; but he might natty past one night out of London, without it were with the kyng or with the queene. Also the same tyme ther was prisoner in Engaine therle of Ewe and Guynes, a right gentyll knyght; and his dealynge was suche, that he was welcome wher soever he came, and with the kyng and queene, lordeys and damosels.

CAP. CXLVIII

Of the dealynge of a brigant of Languedocke, called Bacon.

All this yere these two kynges helde well the trewse taken bytwene them; but sir Wylyam Duglas and the Scottes beyng in the forest of Gedeours made warre dayly on the Englyshmen. Also suche as were in Gascoyne, Poyctou, and Xayntone, as well Frenche as Englysh, kept nothyng the trewse taken bytwene the two kynges, but conquered often tymes townes and castels one upon the other by force, by purchase or by stelth, nyght and day; and oftentimes ther fell bytwene them many fayre aventures, somtyme to the Frenchmen, and somtyme to the Englышmen, and always the poore brigantes wanne in robynge of townes and castels; and some therby came riche, so that they were made capitayns of other brigantes; there were some well worthe xl. thousande crownes. Often tymes they wold spye wher was a good towne a dayes journey or two fro them: than they wolde assemble xx. or xxx. of them togyder, and go by covert wayes day and night and so entre into the towne unknowne in the mornynge, and sette fyre on some house; than they of the towne wolde thynke that it was done by some men of warre and so flye away out of the towne; and thanne these

334
SYR JOHN FROISSART
brigantes wolde breke up cofers and houses, and robbe and
take what they lyste and flye away whan they had done.
Among other ther was a brigant in Languedocke; he spyed
the stronge castell of Couborne, in Lymosyn; he rode in the
nyght with xxx. companions, and toke the castell by
stelthe, and the lorde of the same castell prisoner, who
was called Coubourne, and putte hym in prison in his owne
castell and ther kept hym so longe, that at last they
ransomed hym at xxiii. thousande crownes; and they kept
styll the castell and made sore warr in the contrey. And
after by fayre promyse the Frenche kyng bought hym and
his castell, and gave hym xx. thousand crownes and made
hym ussher of armes about hym: and this brigant Bacon
was ever well horsed, aparelled and armed lyke an erle;
and so he contynued as longe as he lyved.

CAP. CXLIX
Of another page called Croquart.

In lyke case ther were brigantes in Breteyne who made
warre and wanne townes and castelles, and lyved by
robery and helde of no man; for that they wanne
thei kept to themselfe, and solde to them of the country
townes and castells derely. And among other, ther was
one as a mayster called Croquart, who was before but a
poore page attendyng on the lorde Dercle in Holland.
Whan this Croquart began to waxe a man, his lorde gave
hym leave to depart and go to the warres into Breteyne;
and ther he fyll in servyce with a man of armes and bare
hymselfe well, and at a skyrmyssh his maister was taken
and slayne; thanne bycause of his prowes his felowes dyde
chuse hym capityayne in stede of their mayster. And than
he dyd gette so moche by wynnyng of townes and castelles,
that he was esteemed to be worthe xi. thousand crownes
besyde his horse, wherof he had a xx. or xxx. good courser
and double horse; and he had the brute to be one of the
moost expert men of armes in all that countre, and he was
chosen in a batayle to be one of the xxx. of the Englyshe
partie and he wan ther the price of all other. The Frenche
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CXLIX kyng made hym offers and promyse that if he wolde become Frenche, to make hym a knyght and to mary him rychely, and to gyve hym two thousande pounde of revenewes yerely; but he wolde in no wyse consent therto. And it fortuned hym on a day to ryde a yonge horse the which he had bought for thre hundred crownes, and he spurred hym soo sore that the horse ranne away with hym and in ronnyng fell in a dyke and brake his maysters necke: thus ended Croquart.

CAP. CL

Howe sir Amery of Pavy Lumbart solde the towne of Calys wherof he was captayne to the lorde Geffray Charney of Fraunce.

ALL this season in the towne of saynt Omers was the lorde Geffray of Charney, and kept the fronters ther using every thynge touchynge the warre as kyng. Than he bethought him howe that Lumbardes naturally be covetouse: wherfore he thought to assay to gette the towne of Calys, wherof Amery of Pavy Lumbarde was capitayne; and by reasone of the trewe they of saynte Omers myght go to Calys and they of Calys to saynt Omers, so that dayly they resorted toguyder to do their merchandyses. Than sir Geffray secretly fyll in treaty with sir Amery of Pavy, so that he promysed to deliuer into the Frenchmens handes the towne and castell of Calys for xx. thousande crownes. This was nat done so secretly but that the kyng of Englane had knowledge therof: than the kyng send for Amery de Pavy to come into England to Westmynster to speke with hym, and so he came over, for he thought that the kyng had nat had knowlege of that mater, he thought he had done it so secretly. Whan the kyng sawe hym, he toke hym apart and sayd, Thou knowest well I have gyven the in kepynge the thynge in this worder that I love best, next my wyfe and children; that is to say, the towne and castell of Calys, and thou hast solde it to the Frenchmen; wherfore thou haste well deserved to dye. Than the Lumbard kneled downe
and sayd, A noble kyng, I cry you mercy; it is trewe that ye say; but, sir, the bargayne may well be broken for as yet I have received never a peny. The kyng had loved well the Lumbard and sayd, Amery, I wolle that thou go forwarde on thy bargayne, and the day that thou apoyntest to delverye the towe, let me have knowlege therof before; Calys. and on this condycion I forgvye the thy trespas. So ther-upon the Lumbard retourned agayn to Calays and kept this mater secrete. Than sir Geffray of Charney thought well to have Calays and assembled a certayne nombre secretly, a v. hundred speares; ther were but a fewe that knewe what he purposed. I thinke he never made the Frenche kyng of knowledge therof; for if he had, I troue the kyng wolde nat a consented therto bycause of the truse. This Lumbard had apoynted to delverye the castell the first nyght of the newe yere: the Lumbarde sende worde therof by a brother of his to the kyng of Engelande.

CAP. CLI

Of the batayle at Calays bytwene the kyng of Engelande, under the baner of sir Gaultyer of Manny, and sir Geffray of Charney and the Frenchemen.

WHAN the kyng of England knewe the certayne day apoynted, he departed out of England with thre C. men of armes and vi. C. archers and toke shyping at Dover, and in the evenynge arryved at Calays so secretely that no man knewe therof, and went and layde his men in bushmentes in the chambers and towres within the castell. Than the kyng sayde to sir Gaultyer of Manny, I wol to ye be chiefe of this enterprice, for I and my sonne the prince wol floppy under your baner. The lorde Geffray of Charney, the last day of Decembre at nyght, departed fro Arras and all his company, and came nere to Calis about the hour of mydnight, and than taryed there abydyngne for his company, and sende two squires to the posterne gate of the castell of Calys, and there they
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLI

founde sir Amery redy: than they demaunded of hym if it
were tyme that the lorde Geffray shulde come; and the
Lumbarde sayde Yes. Than they retourned to their maister
and shewed hym as the Lumbard sayd: than he made his
men passe Newlande bridge in good order of batayle; than
he sende xii. knyghtes with a hundred men of armes to go
and take possession of the castell of Calays, for he thought
well if he myght have the castell he shulde soone gette the
towne, seyng he had so gode a nombre of men with hym
and dayly might have mo whane he lyst. And he delyvered
to the lorde Edward of Renc xx. thousande crownes to pay
the Lumbarde; and sir Geffray hoved styll in the feldes
prively with his baner before hym. His entent was to
entre into the towne by the gate or els nat: the Lumbarde
had lette downe the bridge of the posterne and suffred the
hundred men of armes to entre peassably; and sir Edward
delyvered at the postern xx. thousand crownes in a bagge
to the Lumbarde, who sayde, I trust here be all, for I have
no leaser now to tell them, for it wyll be anone day: than
he cast the bagge with crownes into a cofer and sayde to
the Frenchmen, Come on sir, ye shall entre into the dongyron,
than shall you be sure to be lوردes of the castell. They
went thyder, and he drewe apart the barre, and the gate
opyned. Within this towre was the kyng of England with
two hundred speares, who yssued out with their swordes and
axes in their handes, cryeng Manny, Manny, to the rescue;
what weneth the Frenchmen with so fewe men to wyn the
castell of Calays. Than the Frenchmen sawe well that defence
coud nat avayle them: than they yelded themselfe prisoners,
so that ther were but a fewe hurt: than they were put into
the same towne in prison. And thenglyshmen ysaued out
of the castell into the towne and mounted on their horses,
for they had all the Frenche prisoners horses: than tharchers
rode to Bolayne gate, wher sir Geffray was with his baner
before hym, of goyles, thre skuchens of sylver; he had great
desyre to be the first shulde entre into the towne; he sayd
to the knyghtes that were about him, Without this Lumbarde
opyn the gate shortly, we are lyke to dye here for colde.
In the name of God, sir, said Pepyn de Werre, Lumbardes are
malicious people and subtyll; he is nowe lokynge on your
crownes to se if they be all good or nat, and to reken if he have his hole somme or no. Therewith the kyng of the Engleande and the prince his sonne was redy at the gate, under the baner of sir Gautier of Manny, with dyvers other baners, as the erle Stafforde, the erle of Suffolke, the lorde John Montagu, brother to therle of Salysbury, the lorde Beachame, the lorde Berele, and the lorde Dalawerre: all these were lorde and had baners; there were no mo in that journey. Than the great gate was set open and they all yssued out: whane the Frenchmen sawe them yssue, and herde them cry Manny to the rescue, they knewe well they were betrayed. Than sir Geffray sayd to his company, Sirs, if we fly we are clese lost; yet wer we better to fight with a gode herte, in truste the journey shall be ours. The Englysshmen herd these wordes and sayd, By saynt George ye say trewey, shame have he that flyeth. The Frenchmen alighted a fote and put their horses fro them and ordred themself in batayle. Whan the kyng sawe that he stode styll and sayd, Let us order our selfe to fight, for our enneymes woll abyde us. The kyng sende part of his company to Newland bridge, for he herde say ther were a great nombre of Frenchmen. Than thyder went a six baners and thre hundred archers; and there they founde the lorde Monau of Frenes and the lorde of Creques kepyng the bridge; and bytwene the bridge and Calays ther were many crosbowes of saynt Omers and Ayre, so thar was a sore fray, and slayne and drowned mo than sixe hundred Frenchmen, for they were soone discomfitted and chased into the water. This was erly in the mornyng, but incontynent it was day: the Frenchmen kept their grounde a whyle, and many feates of armes there done on bothe partes; but the Englysshmen ever encreased by commyng out of Calays and the Frenchmen abated. Than the Frenchmen sawe well they coulde nat longe kepe the bridge; than suche as had their horses by them mounted and shewed their horses heles, and thenghlyssmen after them in chase; there was many a man overthrown. They that were well horsed saved themselues, as the lorde Frenes, the lorde Creques, the lorde of Sempy, the lorde of Louchinleych, and the lorde of Namure, many Longvillers. were taken by their owne outrage that might have ben.
THE CRONYLE OF

saved if they had lyst. Whane it was fayre day that
every man myght knowe other, than some of the French
knyghtes and quyres assembled togyder agayne, and turned
and fought feerely with the Englyshmen, so that ther were
some of the Frenchmen that toke good prisoners, wherby
they had bothe honour and profet.

Nowe let us speke of the kyng, who was ther unknowen of
his ennemyes, under the banner of sir Gaultyer of Mamy,
and was a fote among his men to seke his ennemyes, who
stode close togyder with their speares a v. fote long. At
the first meatynge there was a sore rencontre, and the
kyng light on the lorde Eustace of Rybemount, who was a
stronge and a hardy knight; there was a long fght bytwene
hym and the king, that it was joy to beholde them; at last
they were put a sondre, for a great company of bothe parties
came the same way and fought there feerely togyder. The
Frenchmen dyd ther right valiantly, but specially the lorde
Eustace of Ribamont who strake the kyng the same day two
tymes on his knees, but finall y the kyng himselfe toke hym
prisoner, and so he yelded his swerde to the kyng (and sayd)
Sir knyght, I yelde me as your prisoner; he knewe nat as
than that it was the kyng. And so the journey was for
the kyng of Englande; and all that wer ther with sir Geffray
slayne or taken: ther was slayne sir Henry of Boys, and sir
Pepyn de la Warre, and sir Geffray taken. Than this
journey was achiyved by Calis, the yere of our Lorde
M.CCC.lvii. the last day of Decembre towaerde the next
mornynge.

CAP. CLII

Of a chapelet of perles that the kyng of Englande
gave to sir Eustace of Rybemont.

W

HAN this batayle was done the kyng returned
agayne to the castell of Calays, and caused all
the prisoners to be brought thyder. Than the
Frenchmen knewe well that the kynghe had ben there per-
somally hymselfe under the baner of sir Gaultier of Mamy.
The kyng he sayd he wolde gyve them all that night a supper
in the castell of Calys; the hour of supper came and tables
SYR JOHN FROISSART

coverd, and the kyng and his knyghtes were ther redy every
man in newe apparell, and the Frenchmen also wer ther and
made good chere, though they were prisoners. The kyng
satte downe, and the lordes and knyghtes about hym right
honorably: the prince, lorde and knyghtes of Englande
served the kyng at the first messe, and at the seconde
they satte downe at an other table; they were all well
served and at great leaser. Thane whan supper was
done and the tables take away, the kyng e taryed styll in
the hall with his knyghtes and with the Frenchmen, and
he was bare heeded, savyng a chapelet of fyne perles that
he ware on his heed. Than the kyng went fro one to
another of the Frenchmen, and whan he came to sir Geffray
of Charney, a lytell he changed his countenance and loked
on hym (and sayd) Sir Geffray, by reason I shulde love you
butte a lytell, whan ye wolde steale by night fro me that
thyng which I have so derely bought, and hath cost me so
moch gode. I am right joyouse and gladde that I have taken
you with the proffe; ye wolde have a better market than I
have had, whan ye thought to have Calys for xx. thousande
crownes; but God hath holpen me, and ye have fayled of
your purpose; and therwith the kyng went fro him, and he
gave never a worde to answere. Than the kyng came to sir
Eustace of Rybemont, and joyously to hym he said, Sir
Eustace, ye are the knyght in the worlde that I have sene
moost valyant assayle his ennemyes and defende hymselfe,
nor I never founde knyght that ever gave me so moche ado,
body to body, as ye have done this day: wherfore I gyve
you the price above all the knyghtes of my court by right
sentence. Than the kyng toke the chapelet that was upon
his heed, beyng bothe fayre, goodly and rych, and sayd,
Sir Eustace, I gyve you this chapelet for the best doar in
armes in this journey past of eyther party; and I desyre
you to bere it this yere for the love of me. I knowe well
ye be freisse and amorouse, and often tymes be among
ladies and damoselles; say wheresover ye come that I dyd
gyte it you, and I quyte you your prison and ransome,
and ye shall depart to morowe, if it please you.
The same yere a thousande thre hundred xlix. kyng
Philyppe of Fraunce wedded his seconde wyfe the Wednesday
341
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLII

Of a shapelet of perles that the kyng of Englande gave to sir Eustace of Rybemont.

the xxix. day of January, dame Blanche, daughter to kyng Philype of Naverre who dyed in Spayne; she was of the age of eyghtene yere or there about. Also the nynetene day of February next after in the beginnyng of Lent, the duke of Normandy, the kynges eldest sonne, wedded his seconde wyfe at saynt Genevefe nere to saynt Germanye in Lay, Jane, countesse of Bolayyne, somtyme wyfe to the lorde Phyllyppe, sonne to the duke Eudos of Burgoyne; the which lorde Phyllyppe dyed before Aguyllone a thre yere before that. She was daughter of the erle Wyllyam of Bolayne and of the daughter of Loyes, erle of Evreux: this lady helde in her handes the duchy of Burgoyne, and the countesse of Arthoyes, Bolayne, Auvergne, and dyverse other landes.

CAP. CLIII

Of the dethe of kyng Philype of France, and of the coronacyon of his sonne John.

In the yere of our Lorde God M.CCCC.I. at the beginnyng of August, sir Raoll of Caours and dyverse other knyghtes and squyres to the nombre of sixscore men of armes, fought before a castell called Auleon, with a capitayne of the kynges of Englandes in Bretayne, called sir Thomas Dangorne; and the same sir Thomas ther slayn, and to the nombre of a C. men of armes with hym. The same yere the xxii. day of August, king Philype dyed at Nogent and was carued to our ladyes church in Parys; and the Thursday after he was buryed at saynt Denye on the lyft hande of the hygh auter, and his bowelles were buryed at the Jacopyns in Parys, and his hert at Bourfontayne in Valoys. The xxvi. day of Septembre next ensuyng, on a Sunday, was sacred and crowned at Reyns kyng John, eldest son to kyng Philyp; and the same day the quene also was crowned. And ther the kyng made certayne knyghtes: his eldest son dolphyn of Vyen and Loyes his seconde son erle of Alanson, the erle of Stempes, the lorde John of Arthoyes, the duke Philype of Orlyauance, brother to the kyng, the duke of Burgoyne, son to the quene by her first husbande, the lorde Philyp of Burgoyn,
Syr John Froissart

therle Dammartyn, and dyvers other. And the Monday after the kynge departed and went to Parys by Laon, Soyssons, of the deth and Senlys; and the kynge and queene entred into Parys in great tryumphe the xvii. day of Octobre, and there kept a great feest the hole weke; and the kynge taried ther at Neele and at his palys tyll it was saynt Martyns tyde, and there made ordynaunce for his parlyament. The Tuesday the xvi. day of Novembre, Raiffe, erle of Ewe and of Guynes, constable of France, who was newly come out of prison in England, was taken in the kynges house at Neele, in Parys, wher the kynge was, by the provost of Parys at the kynges commandement, and in the same house he was put in prison tyll the Thursday after, and about the hour of matyns the same day he was beheeded in prison, in the presence of the duke of Burbon, the erle Armynake, the erle of Monford, the lorde John of Bolayne, therle of Revell and dyvers other knyghtes, who were there present by the commandement of the kynge who was at his palays. This constable was beheeded for high treasons, the which he confessed to the duke of Athenes and to dyvers other; he was buryed in the Augustyns in Parys, without the walles of the church by the apoyntment of the kynge, for honour of the frendes of the sayd constable. In the moneth of January folowynge, Charles of Spayne to whom the kynge had gyven the countie of Angolen, was than made constable of France. The first day of Aprill next after, the lorde Guy of Neell, marshall of Fraunce, fought in Xaynton with dyvers Englysshmen and Gascoyns; and the sayde marshall and his men were ther dysconfited, and the marshall taken prisoner, and the lorde Wylyam his brother, the lorde Arnolde Dandrehen and dyvers other. On Good Friday, the x. day of Aprill, the yere of our Lorde MCCC.li. was presented a reed hatte to Gyles Rygalt of Roussy who was abbot of saynt Denyce, and was made cardynall in the palais of Parys in the presence of the kynge, by the byshoppe of Laon and Parys, by authorite of a bull fro the pope the which hadde not been accustomed ther before. In Septembre, after the Frenchmen recovered the towne of saynt John Dangle, the which thenglysshmen had kept fyve yere, it was delyvered up by thenglysshmen bycause they had noothyng to lyve by, without any maner of batayle. In the moneth of
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLIII
Of the death of kyunge Philippe of France.

Octobre was publysshed the fraternyte of the noble house of saynt Owen ner to Parys; and all suche as were bretherne ther bare a starre on his bonet and on his mantell before. This yere was the grettest darth that any man lyveng coude remembre throughout all France; for a ceptyer of whete was worthe at Parys viii. li. parisien, and a septier of otes at ix. s. of parays, for a bushell of pees viii. s. and other grenes there after. In the same moneth of Octobre, the same day that the fraternyte of saynt Owen was celebrate, thenglyshmen toke the towne of Guynes for all the truse: the same yer ther was a maryage made bytwene the constable of France and the daughter of sir Charles de Bloves.

CAP. CLIII

Howe the kyng of Naver made sir Charles of Spaygne constable of France to be slayne.

In the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.lii. in the vygill of our Lady, in the myddes of august, the lord Guy of Neell, lorde of Offemont as than marshall of France, in Bretayne was slayne in bataile, the lorde of Briquebeke, the cathelayne of Beauaways and dyvers other nobles, as well of Bretayne as of other marches of France. The iii. day of Septembre shulde a fought in Parys, the duke of Bresvic 1 agayne the duke of Lancastre for certayne words that he shulde say of the duke of Bresvic, the which duke spealed hym in the court of France: these two dukes came into the felde all armed, in a lystes made for the sayd duke of Almayne, chaunger, and for the duke of Englande, defender. And though thenglyshmen wer enemies to the French kyng, and that thenglysh duke came thynder under save conduct to fight in the defence of his honour, yet the Frenche kyng wold nat suffre them to fight, for assone as they had made their othes in such case requyse, and were on their horses redy with their speares in their handes, than the kyng toke on hym the mater, and dyd set them in aco and grement. The vi. day of Decembre folowyng, pope Clement the vi. dyed at Avygnon, the xi. yere of his pontificate; and the xi. day of the same moneth, about the hour

1 Brunswick. Bosme P.
of thre, was chosen pope a cardynall of Lymosyn, called CAP. CLIII by his tytle the cardynall of Ostie: but bycause he was Howe the byshopphe of Cleremont he was called most commonly the kyng of cardynall of Cleremont; and when he was chosen pope, he was named Innocent; his owne proper name was Stephyn Aubert. The yere of our Lorde M. iiiii. C. liii. the viii. day of January, anone after the brekyng of the day in the mornynge, the kyng Charles of Never, erle of Evreux, caused to be slayne in the towne of the Egle in Normandy, in an hostre, the lorde Charles of Spayne, constable of France, in his bedde, by certayne men of armes that he sent to do that dede, and hymself abode without the towne tyll they had done and retourned agayne to hym; and as it was sayde, with hym was the lorde Philippe of Naver, his brother, and the lorde Loys of Harcourt, the lorde Godfray of Harcourt his uncle and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers, as well of Normandy as of Naver. Than the kyng of Naver and his company went to the cote of Devreux, wherof he was erle, and fortified the towne; and with hym also ther was the lorde of Maule, John Malet lorde of Gravylle, the lorde Almorie of Mulent, and dyvers other nobles of Normandy. And thane the kyng of Naver went to the towne of Mant, and he had sent dyvers letters into divers gode townes of France, howe that he had put to deth the constable for dyvers great trespaces by him commytted, and he sent the erle of Namure to the French kyng to Parys, to excuse hym. Than the kyngse sende to Mant, the cardynall of Bolayne, the byshopphe of Laon, the duke of Burbon, the erle of Vaudone and other to treat with the kyng of Navere. For though he had caused to dye the constable of France, yet he thought he shulde nat clene lese the favourof the Frenche kyng, whose daugther he had maried; therfore he made request of pardon to the kyng. It was thought in the realme of Fraunce that great warre shulde ensowe bytwene these two kynges: for the kyng of Naver had made great assemblies of men of warre in dyvers regions, and fortified his townees and castels; finally, there was agrement made bytwene these two kynges upon certayne condycions, wherof part foloweth herafter: that is to say, the French kyng shall deliever to the kyng of Naver, xxxviii. M. li. tornois of ____
I354

THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLIIII

Howe the kyng of Naver made sir Charles of Spayne to be slayne.

lande, as well for certeyn rent that the kyng of Naver had out yerely of the tresur in Pares, as upon other landes that
the Frenche kyng ought to assigne hym by certeyne treates
granted long before bytwene their predecessors, bycause of
the countie of Champayne; and also for the maryage of the
kyng of Naver for maryeng of the kynges daughter, at
which mariaghe he was promysed great landes, that is to say,
xii. M. li. of land. Also the kyng of Naver wolde have the
countie of Beamont le Roger, the land of Bretuell, in Nor
mandy, Conches and Dorbec, the ycount of Ponteuy by
the see, and the bayllage of Constantyne, the which thynges
were agreed unto by the French kyng. Howbeit, the countie
of Beamont, and the landes of Conches, Bertuell and Dor
bec partesnamed to the lorde Philip, duke of Orleance, brother
to the French kyng, who gave hym other landes in recom-
pence thereof. Also it was agreed, that the lordes of Harcourt
and all his other aylies shuld holde of him for all their landes
wher soever they were in France, if they lyst, or els nat: also
it was agreed, that he shuld holde styll all the sayd landes,
besyde them that he helde before in parie, and if he lyst,
to kepe his esheker two tymes in the yere, as nobly as ever
dyd any duke of Normandy. Also the French kyng to pardon
the deth of the constable and all suche as were consenteyng
thereo, and to promyse by his oth, never to do any hurt or
damnage to any person for that occasion: and also the kyng
of Naverr to have a great some of money of the French kyng:
and ar the kyng of Naver wolde come to Parys, he wolde
have in hostage the erie of Aniowe, seconde son to the kyng.
Than he came to Pares with a great nombre of men of
armes, and the iii. day of March he came into the parly-
ament chambre wher the kyng satte and dyvers of the peres
of the realme with him and his counsell. Ther was the
cardynall of Bolayne: ther the kyng of Naver desyred the
French kyng to pardon hym the deth of the constable of
France, sayeng, how he had gode cause so to do, the which
he offred ther to prove or els to be at the kynges pleasure;
and also he sayd and swere, that he dyd it nat for no grudge
to the kyng nor in dispyte of his office; sayeng also, howe
ther was nothyng so grevous to him as to be in the dis-
plesur with the kyng. Than the lorde Jaques of Burbone,
Syr John Froissart

as than constable by the kynge commandement, sette his handes on the kynge of Naver, and caused hym to go abacke out of the kynge presens. Than quene Jane, and quene Blanche, suster to the kynge of Naver, the which Jane had ben wyfe to kynge Philippe last deed, came to the Frence kynge and kneled downe, and the lorde Reynold Detrey with them, and he sayd, My right redouted soveraygne lorde, beholde here these two ladys, and quenes Jane and Blanche: sir, they understande howe the kynge of Naver is in your displeasur, wherof they be sorie and requyre you to forgyve hym your yvell wyll, and by the grace of God he shall so berere himselfe fro hens forwarde, that you and all the people of France shal be pleased with hym. Than the constables and the marshalles went agayne for the kynge of Naver, and so brought hym into the kynge presense, and ther he stode bytwene the two quenes: than the cardynall sayd, Sir, kynge of Naver, the kynge my maister is nat well content with you for the dede that ye have done it rede nat to be rehearsed, for ye have publysshed it yourselfe by youre owne wrytyng so that every man doth knowe it: ye ar so bounde to the kynge, that ye ought nat thus to have done: ye be of his blode so nere as every man knoweth, that ye ought to holde of hym, and also ye have wedde his daughter, wherefore your trespasse is the greater; howbeit, at the instaunce and love of these ladys the quenes, who hath effectuously requyred for you, and also the kynge thynketh that ye dyde it without great advysement and by small counsayle, therfore the kynge pardoneth you with good hert and wyll. Than the two quenes and the kynge of Naver kneled downe and thanked the kynge. Than the cardynall sayd agayne, Let every man fro hensforthe beware, though he be of the kynge lynage, to do any suche lyke dede, for surely though he be the kynge sonne, if he do any suche to the leest officer parteyning to the kynge, he shall abyde the justyce of the realme in that case. Than the court broke up, and so every man departed. The xxi. day of Marche, a kynght baneret of the lowe marchese called sir Reynolde of Presigny, lorde of Maraunt beyside Rochell, was drawen and hanged on the gybbette by judgement of the parlyament and by the kynge counsayle. The yere of our Lorde
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLIII

God MCCC.liii. in the moneth of August, the erle of Harcourt and sir Loyes his brother counsayled with the Frenche kyng, and as it was sayde, they shewed the kyng all the mater of the dethe of the constable. And in Sep- tembreme the cardynall of Bolayone went to Avygon; some sayd the kyng was dyspleased with hym; howbeit, the space of a yere that he had ben in France, he was as preyv with the kyng as any other. The same season there went out of the realme of France, the lorde Robert de Lorris, chamberlayne with the kyng: and if the kyng had takyn hym in his yre, some thought it shulde have cost hym his lyfe, bycause it was noyed that he had shewed to the kyng of Naverre certayne secretes of the Frenche kyng, in likewyse as the lordes of Harcourt had shewed the kyng of Navers secretes to the Frenche kyng. In the moneth of Novembre the kyng of Naver went out of Normandy without knowledge of the French kyng, and sported hym in dyvers places tyll he came to Avygon. And in the same moneth, the archebysshop of Rowan, chanceler of Franece, the duke of Burbone, and dyvers other Englyssh lordes wente to Avygon to the pope, to treat for a peace bytwene the kynges of England and of France: and also the same moneth, the Frenche kyng went into Normandy to Cane, and toke in his handes all the landes of the kyngge of Navers, and set in his officers in every towne and castell except siete, that is to say, Evreux, Ponthieu, Chirburge, Gavrey, Arranges, and Mortaygne; these wolde nat yele up for ther were Naveroys within them that answered and sayd they wolde nat deliever up their townes and castels but all onely to the kyngge of Naver their lorde, who had sette them there. In the moneth of January, by save conduct, came the lorde Robert de Lorris to the Frenche kyng, and was a x. dazes at Parys, or he coude speke with the kyng: and whan he had spoken with hym, yet he was nat reconsyled at the full, but returned agayne into Avygon by the ordynance of the kynges counsell, to be as one of them that were ther for the treaty bytwene Englynde and France. In the ende of February tidynes came howe trewe was taken bytwene the sayde two kynges, to endure to the feest of saunt John Baptyst; and in the mean tyme, the pope to do what he
Syr John Froissart

myght to make a further peace: and therfore he sende CAP. CLIII
messangers to bothe kynges, that they shulde sende further Hows the
authorite by their embassadours, to conclude on another kyng of
Naver made
sir Charles
made newe money of fyne golde, called florence of the lambe, of Spaygne
for in the pyell there was gravyn a lambe; lii. of theym went to a marke weght, and after they were made, the
tyng made xlviii. to goo for a marke weght, and the
course of all other florens was prohibyted. The same
moneth, sir Grancher de Lore came to Parys to speke with
the tyng as messanger fro the kyng of Naver, and he
retourned agayne in February and bare with hym a letter
of save conduct to the kyng of Naver. The same yere
about Lent came dyvers Englysshmen nere to the town of
Nauntes in Bretayne, and entred into the castell by scalyng,
a lii.; but sir Guy of Rochfort, who was captayn and was
as than in the town, he dyd so moche with assaut that
the same nyght he wanne the castell agayne, and all
thenglysshmen taken and slayne. At Easter the yere of our
Lorde M.CCC.lv. kyng Johan of France sent into Normandy
his eldest son Charles, dolphyn of Vienoys, to be his
lieutenant ther, and there he taryed all that somer, and the
men of the contre graunted hym iii. M. men of armes for
thre monethes. Also in the moneth of August, the kyng
of Naver came out of Naver to the castell of Chierburge in
Constantyne, and with hym a x. M. men of warre one and
other. Ther were dyvers treates communed of, bytwene the
kyng of Naver and the Frenche kyng: but suche as were in
the castell of Evruix and Pontheau robbed and pulled the
countre all about; and some of them came to the castell of
Conches, the whiche was as than in the French handes and
wan it, and newe fortifyed it; many thynge dyde the
Naveroyys agaynst the Frenchmen; finally, the ii. kynges
were agreed. Than the kyng of Naver went to the castell
of Vernell to the dolphyn, and he brought the kyng of
Naver to Parys: and the xxiii. day of Septembre, the kyng
of Naver and the dolphyn came to the Frenche kyng to the
castell of Lour; than the kyng of Naver made his reverence and excused hymselfe honorably, in that he departed out of the realme of France; and also he sayd it was shewed
THE CRONYCLE OF

hym how the kyng shulde nat be well content with hym. Than the Frenche kyng desyred hym to shewe what they were that had made that report; than he answered, that syth the deth of the constable, he had don nothyng agaynset the French kyng but as a true man ought to have done: howebeit, he desyred the French kyng to pardon every thynge, promysynge to be true as he ought to be to his father and chiefe lorde. Thane the duke of Athenes sayde in kynges behalfe, the kyng doth pardon hym all thynge with a good hert.

C A P. C L V

Of an inposycion and gabell ordayne in Fraunce by the thre estates for the feates of the warres.

ALSO in the yere of oure Lorde MCCC.1v. in the moneth of Octobre, the prince of Wales, eldest son to the kyng of England, went into Gascoyne and went nere to Tholouz, and so paste the ryver of Garon and went into Carcassone and brent the bowere, but the cytie was well defended: and fro thens he went to Narbon, brennyng and exilynge the contrey: and in the moneth of Novembre, he retourned to Burdeux with great pyllage and many prisoners for no man resystyd hym. And yet in the contrey was therle of Armynake, lieutenant to the French kyng in Languedocke, and also the lorde of Foitx, the lorde Jaques of Burbon, the lorde of Pontheu, the constable of France, and the lorde John of Cleremont, marshall of Fraunc, and a farre greter company than the prince had. The same yere, in the ende of Octobre, the kyng of England came to Calys, and he rode with a great hoost to Hedyn and brake the parke ther, and brent the house within, and about the parke, but he entred nat into the town nor castell. And the Frenche kyng, who had made his assemble at the cytie of Amyens heryng of the kyng of Englande rode towarde hym; but the kyng of England was returnyng to Calys, and the French kyng folowed hym tyll he came to saynt Omers, and than he send his marshall Dauthayne, and dyvers other, to the kyng of England, offerying to fight.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

body to body or power to power, what day soever he wold apoynt. But the kyng of England refused that batayle, and so retourned agayn into England, and the Frenche kyng to Parys.

The same yere, about the feest of saynt Andrue, there was assembled at Pares, by the kynges commaundement, the prelates of France, the barownes and the counsayls of the good townes; and ther the chanceler of France, in the parlyament chambre, resyted the state of the warres of France, desyring them therupon to take advyce what ayd might be gyven to the kyng to mentayne and defende the sayd warres, and also he sayde, it is come to the kynges knowledge howe that his subgettes ar sore greved, by reason of the mutacyon of the moneys; therfore the kyng offereth to make gode money and dourable, so that they wolde graunt hym suffi-
cient ayyde to mentayne his warres. They answered, that is to say the clery, by the mouth of the archbyshopp of Reyns, the nobles, by the duke of Athenes, and the good townes, by the mouth of Stepyn Marcelli, provost of the marchantes of Parys; all they sayde they were redy to lyve and dye with the kyng, and put their bodyes and goodes into his servyce, requyryng to have deliberacon to speke togyder: the which was graunted them. The same yere, the vigyll of the Concepcion of our Lady, the kyng gave the duchy of Normandy to Charles, dolpyn of Vienoys, his eldest son, and the next day he made his homage. After the delyberacyon taken by the thre estates, they answered to the kyng in the parlyament chambre, by the mouthes of the sayde thre persons, howe they wolde fynde hym for one yer xxx. M. men at their costes and charge: the finance to pay the wages of so many men of warre was esmethed to l. M. li. parisien. And the thre estates ordenid this some to be leyved of every person and of every estate, men of the church, nobles, and other every man viii. d. parisien of every pounde, and that the gabell of salt shulde ron through the realme; but bycause they were nat in certayne if this inposicyon and gabell shulde suffyce, therfore it was ordayned that the thre states shulde retourne agayn to Parys to se and knowe if this inposicyon wolde serve or no, the first day of March. At the which day, thyder agayn
THE CRONYCLE OF

they came all, except certayne of the great townes of Picardy
and Normandy, and some nobles of the same. Such as were
at the imposicion makyng came thyder, and they founde
that the first grant wolde nat suffycie to reysye the sayde
some; wherfore they ordaynyed a newe subsedy, that is to
say, that every person of the blode royall, or otherwyse,
clerke, lay, religious or relygious, except and nat except,
householders, curates of churches havyng rentes or revenewes,
oxices or administraycon, women, wydowes, chyldeyn marayed
or natte marayed, havyng any thynge of their owne or in
any others kepyng, none age or administraycon; and all
other of every estate, authorite or privilege, that they as
than used, or have used in tyme past, if it be C. li. of
revenues or under, if it be for terme of lyfe in herytage,
in plege, or by meanes of office, or pencyon, duryng lyfe, or
at wyll, shall pay to his ayde and subsidie of every iii. li.
xl. souces: and of x. ii. of revenewes or above, xx. souces.
Labourers and workemen lyveng by their labour shall pay
x. souces; servantes, prentyes, lyveng by their servyces,
takyng C. s. by yere or more, shall in likeweys pay x. s.
taking these moneys after the rate of Parys money in that
countre, and at Tourney for the money currant in that
partes. And if servantes have nat by yere but C. s. or
under, they shall pay nothing, without they have goodes
after the rate, than shall they pay as others do. And also
beggers, monkes, and cloysters without offyce or admynis-
tracyon, nor chyldeyn beyng in warde, under the age of xv.
yere, havyng nothyng in their handes, nor noones havyng no
revenewes above x. li. shall pay nothyng. Nor also women
marayed bycause their husbандes payeth; for the value of
their husbандes shal be rekenned as well for that they have
by their wifes as of their owne. And as for clerkes and
men of the church, prelates, abbes, prioress, chanoines,
curates and other, as is before sayde, if they be worthes above
C. li. in revenewes by yere, in benefices of the church, or
patrimony, or the one with the other, to the some of v. M. li.
they shall pay iiiii. li. for the first C. li. and for every C. li.
after, tyll ye come to the some of v. M. li. xl. s. nor they
shall pay nothyng for that they may spende above v. M. li.
nor for their movables, and the value of their benefyces shal
SYR JOHN FROISSART

be esteemed after the rate of their dymes, whan that is payable, without any exception or privyledge. And as for noble men and men of the good townes, that may spende above the some of C. li. in revenewes, shall paye tyll they come to the some of v. M. li. for every C. xl. s. bysye diii. li. of the first C. li. and the men of the gode townes in semblable manner tyll they come to M. li. of revenues; and as for the movables of the noble men that have nat C. li. of revenewes, their movables shall be esteemed and rekenyd to the value of M. li. and no farther: and other men that have nat iii. C. li. of revenewes, their goodes shall be rekenyd tyll they come to iii. M. li. that is to say, C. li. of movables for x. li. of revenues, and after that rate to pay. And if a noble man have nat in revenues, but all onely C. li. and in movables nat past M. li. or that a noble man hath nat in revenues nat past iii. C. li. nor in movables past iii. M. and if it be part in movables, and part in revenewes, they must be estemyd togyder to the some of M. li. for the noble men, and to iii. M. li. to other, and nat above. The Saturday the fyft day of Marche, the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.lvi. there rose a discencyon bytwene the commons of the towne of Arras and the great men of the same: and the commons slewe the same day mo than xvii. of the chefe personages of the towne; and on the Monday after they slewe other four and banished dyvers that were nat as than in the towne, and so the commons was as than chefe maisters in the towne.

CAP. CLVI

How the French kyng toke the kyng of Naver and beheeded the erle of Harcourt and other at Roan.

ALSO the Tuesday the v. day of Aprill about the myddes of Lent, the Frenche kyng departed before day fro Menevell in harness, accompanied with a CC. speares, amonge the which was therle of Anjowe his sonne, and the duke of Orlace his brother, the lorde John de Artoys, erle of Ewe, the lorde Charles his brother, cosyn germanyn to the kyng, the erle of Tankervyll, sir
Arnolde Dandrehen, than marshall of Fraunce, and dyvers other to the nombre above sayd. The kyng and they came streyght to the castell of Rowan by the posterne and came nat in the towne; and there he founde in the hall at dyner with his sonne the dolphyne, Charles the kyng of Naverre, and John erle of Harcourt, and the lorde of Preaux, Gravyll, Cler and dyvers other. Ther the French kyng caused the kyng of Naver to be taken, therle of Harcourt, the lorde of Preaux, of Cler, sir Loys and sir Wylliam of Harcourt, bretherne to the erle, the lorde Frequent of Fryquant,1 the lorde of Tournebe, the lorde Maube of Mamesners, and two sqyers, Olyver Doubles, and Johan Vaubatou and dyvers other. The kyngge put them in prison, in dyverse chambers within the same castell, bycause that syth the nowe reconysliacion made for the deth of the lorde Charles, late constable of Fraunce, the kyng of Naverre had yimagined and treated dyvers thynges, to the damage and dyshonour of the Frenche kyng and of his realme; and therle of Harcourt had spoken injuryous wordes agaynst the kyng in the castell of Ruell, where the assemble was to conclude for the ayde to be gyven to the kyngge, in lettyng to his power the same ayd to be graunted. Than the Frenche kyng dyned there, and after toke his horse and rodde out into a feld behynde the castell, called the feld of pardon, and therde in two cartes was brought therle of Harcourt, the lorde Graville, the lorde Maube, and Olyver Doublis, and there all their heedes were stryken of, and after all four drawn to the gybett of Rowan and there hanged, and their heedes sette on the gybett. The same day and the next day, the Frenche kyngge deleyvered all the other out of prison except thre, that is to say, Charles kyng of Naver, who was caryed to Parys, and put in prison, in the castell of Loure, and after into the chatelette: and certayne of the Frenche kynges counsell were apoynted to kepe hym; also Fryquet and Vaubatou were put into the same prison. And therfore the lorde Phlyppe of Naver helde in his handes dyvers castels pertayning to his brother, the kyng of Naverre, in Normandy: and, for all that the Frenche kyngge sende to hym to deleyver the same castels, yet he refused so to do; and he and the lorde God-
SYR JOHN FROISSART

fray of Harcourt, assembled togyder dyvers enemys of the French kynges, and brought them into the contrey of Constantyne, the which countrie they helde and kept fro the Frenche kyng.

The Wednesaday after Ester, the yere of our Lorde God a M.CCCC.lvi. sir Arnold Dandrehen, than marshall of France went to the towne of Arras, and ther wysely without any besynesse of men of warr, he toke mo than a hundred prisoners of them of the towne, suche as had made the rebellion ther and slayne dyvers of the chiefe burgessses of the towne. And the next day he made xx. of them to be heeded, and the other he kept styll in prison to knowe the kynge pleasure in that behalfe: and so by that meanes the towne was brought into trewe obeysonce to the kyng. In the moneth of June the duke of Lancastre came into Constantyne, and fyll in company with the lorde Philip of Naverr and the lorde Godfray of Harcourt: they were in all aboute a foure thousande fyghtyng men. They rode to Lysex, to Orbec, to Ponthau, and refresshed the castell there, the which had ben besieged more than two monethes; but the lorde Robert of Hotetot, maister of the croesbowes in Fraunce, who had layne there at sieg with dyvers nobles and other departed fro the sieg, whan they knewe of the commynge of the duke of Lancastre, and left behynde them for hast their engynes and artillary and they of the castell toke all. Than the duke of Lancastre, and his company rode forthe, robbyng and pallyng the townes and contrey as they passed toward Bretueil, the which they newly refresshed. And bycause that they knewe and founde the cyte and castell of Evreux to be newly yelded to the Frenche kynge, who had longe kept a sieg there at, and also they sawe howe the cytie was brent and the catherdall churche robbed, as well by the Naveryse whiche yelded up the castell by composcyon, as by the Frenchemen that lay there at the sieg, they left it: and than the duke of Lancastre, and the lorde Philippe of Naverr, went to Verneuil in Perche and toke the towne and castell, and robbed the towne and brent a great parte therof. The Frenche kyng who had made redy his assemble, assoone as he herde tidynge of the duke of Lancastre, he wente after hym with
THE CRONYCLE OF

a great nombre of men of armes and fotemenne, and folowed them to Conde in goyng streyght to the towne of Vernveyll. Thanne the duke and his company went towards the towne of the Egle, and the kynge folowed them tyll he came to Tuebufe, a two leages fro the towne of the Egle, and than there it was shewed to the kynge howe he coulde folowe no farther, for ther were suche forestes that his ennemyes myght take hym whan they lyste, soo that he shulde do but lese his labour to go any farther after them. Than the kynge retourned with all his hoost, and went to the castell of Thilyers, the whiche was in the handes of Navroes: the kynge toke it, and sette men of warr therin. Than the kynge went to the castell of Bretuell, wherin were men of the kynge of Navers; there the kynge lay at siege the space of two monethes, and than the castell was gyven up, and they within went wher they lyst with their goodes and lyves saved.

CAP. CLVII

Of the assemble that the Frenche kynge made to fight with the prince of Wales who rode in Berry.

W HAN the Frenche kynge had made his journey, and reconquered townes and castelles in base Normandy pertayning as than to the kynge of Naverre whom he helde in prisonne, and was gone backe to the cytie of Parys, it was nat long after but that he herde howe the prince of Wales with a good nombre of men of warre was ferre entred into the countrey aprochyng the gode contrey of Berry. Than the kynge sayd and swere that he wolde ryde and fyght with hym wheresoever he founde hym: than the kynge made a speciall assemble of all nobles and suche as helde of hym: his comauandement was that all maner of excuses layde a parte his letters ones sene, that every man, on payne of his dyspleasur shulde drawe and mete with hym in the marches of Bloyes and Torayne, for the entent to fyght with thenglyssmen. And the kynge to make the more hast, departed fro Parys and rode to Chartres, to here the better of suretie what thenglyssmen dyd. There
Syr John Froissart

He rested, and dayly men of warre resorted thysber fro all partes, as of Auvergne, Berrey, Burgoyne, Lorayne, Heynault, of the Vermandoyse, Picardy, Bretayne, and Normandy; and ever as they came they were set forarde and made their musters, and lodged in the country, by the assignement of the marshalles, the lorde Johan of Cleremont, and the lorde Arnold of Dandrehe. The kyng sende also great provision to all his fortresses and garysons in Anjowe, Poyctou, Dumayne, and Torayne, and into all the fortresses wher he thought thenglyshmen shulde passe, to the entent to close the passages from them and to kepe them fro vitayls, that they shulde fynde no forage for them nor their horses. Howe be it for all that, the prince and his company who were to the nombre of two M. men of armes and six M. archers, rode at their ease and had vitayls ynoogh, for they founde the contre of Auverne right plentyfull; but they wolde nat tary ther, but went forthe to make warre on their enemys. They brest and exyled the contre asmoch as they might, for whan they were entred into a towne and founde it well replenysshed of all thynges, they taryed ther a two or three dayes to refresshe them; whan they departed they wolde distroy all the resdyue, strike out the heedes of the vessels of wyne, and bren whete, barly and otes, and all other thynges to thytent that their enemys shulde have no ayde therof. And than they rode forthe and ever founde good contres and plentyfull; for in Berry, Torayne, Anjowe, Poyctou, and Mayne is a very plentyfull contre for men of warr. Thenglyshmen rode forthe in this maner tyll they came to the good cytie of Burges, and ther they made a gret skyrmyssh at one of the gates: capitatyns within were, the lorde of Consant, and the lorde Hutyn of Memels, who kept the cyte: ther was many feates of armes done. Thenglyshmen departed without any more doyng, and went to Issoldon a strong castell, the which was feerally assayed, and thysber cam all the hole hoost; howbeit they could nat wyn it, the gentlemyen casted it valyantly. Than they passed farther and toke their way to Vierron, a great towne and a good castell, but it was ywell closed and the peple ther nat suffycient to make defence, therfore it was won perforce; and ther they founde wyne and other vitayls gret
THE CRONYCLE OF

plenty, and taryed there thre dayes to refreshe all their
host; and thyder came tisynges to the prince how the
French kyng was at Charters, with a great assemble of men
of warr, and howe that all the townes and passages
above the ryver of Loyre were closed and kept that
none coude passe the ryver. Than the prince was counselled
to returne and to passe by Torayne and Poyctou and so
that way to Bourdeaux. Than the prince toke that way and
returned: whan they had done with the towne that they
were in their pleasure, and taken the castell and slayne the
moost part that were within, than they rode towarde Re-
morentyne. The French kyng had send into that countrey
thre great barownes to kepe the fronters there; the lorde
of Craon, the lorde Boucequaut, and the hermyte of
Chamont, who with thre C. speres rode into that contrey
in costyng thenglysshmen, and had folowed them a sixe
dayes togyder, and coude never fynde avantage to set on
them, for thenglysshmen rode ever so wysely, that they
coude nat entre on them on any syde to their advaungte.
On a day the Frenchmen putte themselfe in a busshement
nere to Remorentyne, at a marveylous straunge passage by
the whiche the Englysshmen must nedes passe: the same
day ther was departed fro the princes bataile, by leave of
the marshals, the lorde Bartylmew of Breches, the lorde of
Musydent Gascoyne, the lorde Petyton Courton, the lorde
Dalawarr, the lorde Basset, the lorde Danyell Paseler, the
lorde Rycharde of Pontchardon, the lorde Nowell Lorynch,
the yong lorde Spencer, Edarde, and the lorde Dambrey-
courte with two hundred menne of armes to ronne before
Remorentyne. They passed foreby the Frenchmens busshe-
ment and was nat ware of them: assone as they were passed,
the Frenchmen brake out and came after them feersly; thenglysshmen, who were well forwaerde, herde the noyse
of the horses commynge after them, and perceyved how
they were their enemeyes. They tourned and stode styll
and abode the Frenchmen, who came on them with great
randon, their speares in their restes, and so came ronnnyng
to thenglysshmen, who stode styll and suffred them to passe,
and there was nat of them past a fuye or six overthrown at
that first metyng. Than thenglysshmen dasshed forthe their
SYR JOHN FROISSART 1356

horses after the Frenchmen; there was a feere skyrnysshe CAP. CLVII and endured long, and many knightes and squyres beaten of the downe on both partes and dyvers taken and rescued agayn, assemble that so that a long season no man coulde tell who had the better; the Frenche kyng made to fight with so long they fought that the batayle of thenglysshe mar- shalles aproched. And when the Frenchmen sawe them the prince commyng along by a woode syde, they fledde he that might of Wales. best, and toke their wayes to Remorentyne, and the Eng- lyshmen in the chase natte sparyng their horses. There was a harde batayle, and many a man overthrown; howe be it the one halfe of the Frenchmen entred into the cast- tell; the thre lordes saved themselfe, and dyverse other knyghtes and squyers that were well horsed. Howebeit the towne was taken at their first commyng, for the French- men all entred into the castell.

CAP. CLVIII

Howe the Prince of Wales toke the castell of Remorentyne.

THE prince of Wales herde how his fore ryders were a fightyng; than he toke that waye and came into the towne of Remorentyne, wherein was moche of his people studyng howe they myght get the castell. Than the prince commaunded the lord sir John Chandos to go and speke with them of the castell: than sir Johan went to the castell gate and made signe to speke with some person within. They that kept the watche ther demanded what was his name and who dyd sende hym thyder; he shewed them: than sir Boucyquaut and the hermyte of Chamout came to the barryers. Whan sir Johan sawe them he saluted them curtesly, and sayde, Sirs, I am sende hyder to you fro my lorde the prince, who wyll be ryght courtesse unto his enmeyes as me thynketh; he sayeth, that if ye wyll yelde upp this fortresse to hym and yelde your selfe prisoners, he wyll receyve you to mercy and kepe you good company of armes. The lorde Boucyquaut sayde, We ar nat in purpose to putte our selfe in that case; it were great folly, synth we have no need so to do: we thynke to defende
THE CRONYCLE OF

1356

CAP. CLVIII

Howe the Prince of Wales toke the castell of Remorens-
tyme.

1 Bush.

our selve. So they departed, and the prince lodged there, and his men in the towe without at their ease. The next day every man was armed and under his baner, and beganne to assayle the castell right searely; the archers were on the dykes, and shotte so holly togyder that none durste scant spere at their defences. Some swame over the dykes on bordes and other thynge with hokes and pikes in their handes, and myned at the walles; and they within cast downe great stones and potts with lyme: there was slayne on the Englyshe partie a sqyuer called Remond De urge du Lache; he was of the company of the captall of Boffes. This assayt dured all the day without rest; at nyght the Englyshmen drewe to their logynges, and so past the nyght; in the mornynge, whan the sonne was ryseen the marshals of the hoost sowned the trumpettes. Than all such as were ordayned to gyve the assayt were reddy appayrelled, at the whiche assayt the prince was personally, and by reason of his presence greatly encouraged the Englyshmen; and nat ferre fro hym there was a sqyuer, called Bernarde, slayne with a stonne; than the prince swere that he wolde nat depart thens tyll he had the castell and all them within at his pleasure. Than the assayt enforced on every part: finally they sawe that by assaytes they coulde nat wyn the castell, wherfore they ordayned engins to caste in wylyde fyre into the base court; and so they dyde that all the base court was a fyre, so that the fyre multiplied in such wyse that it toke into the coverynge of a great towe covered with rede. And when they within sawe that they must other yelde to the wyll of the prince or els peryshe by fyre, than all thre lordes came downe and yelde them to the prince, and so the prince toke them with hym as his prisoners and the castell was left voyde.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. CLIX

Of the great hoost that the Frenche kyng brought to the batayle of Poycters.

AFTER the takynge of the castell of Remorentyne and of them that were therin, the prince than and his company rode as they dyde before, distroyeng the countre aprochyng to Anjowe and to Tourayne. The Frenche kyng, who was at Charters, departed and came to Bloyses and ther taryed two dayes, and than to Amboyse and the next day to Loches; and than he herde howe that the prince was at Towrayne and how that he was retournyng by Poyctou: ever the Englysshmen were costed by certayne expert knyghtes of France, who alway made report to the kyng what the Englysshmen dyd. Than the kyng came to the Haye in Towrayne, and his men had passed the ryver of Loyre, some at the bridge of Orleance and some at Meun, at Saulmure, at Bloys, and at Towrs and wher as they might; they were in number a xx. thousande men of armes besyde other; ther were a xxvi. dukes and erles and mo than sixscore baners, and the foure sonnes of the kyng, who were but yonge, the duke Charles of Normandy, the lorde Loyes, that was fro thensforthe duke of Anjewe, and the lorde Johan duke of Berry, and the lorde Philyppe, who was after duke of Burgoyne. The same season pope Innocent the sixt send the lorde Bertrand, cardynall of Pyergourt and the lorde Nyicholas, cardynall of the Egle, into France, to treat for a peace bytwene the Frenche kyng and all his enemies; first bytwene hym and the kyng of Naver, who was in prison; and these cardynalles often tymes spake to the kyng for his delyverance duryng the sege at Bretuell, but they coude do nothyng in that behalfe. Than the cardynall of Pyergourt went to Tours, and ther he herde howe the Frenche kyng hasted sore to fynde the Englysshmen; than he rode to Poycters, for he herde howe bothe the hoostes drewe thyderward. The Frenche kyng herde howe the prince hasted greatly to retourne, and the kyng feared that he shulde escape hym and so departed fro Hay in Tourayne, and all his ZZ
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLIX company, and rode to Chauvyngny, wher he taryed that Thursday in the towne and without along by the ryver of Creuse; and the next day the kyng passed the ryver at the bridge there, wenyng that the Englyshemen had ben before hym, but they were nat. Howe be it they pursued after and passed the bridge that day mo than threscore thousand horses, and dyvers other passed at Chastelerault, and ever as they passed they tooke theyr way to Poicters. On the other syde the prince wzyst nat truely where the Frenchmen were, but they supposed that they were nat farre of, for they coude nat fynde no more forage, wherby they had gret faut in their hoost of vitayle, and some of them repented that they had destroyed so moch as they had done before whan they were in Berry, Anjowe and Torayne, and in that they had made no better provision. The same Friday the great lorde of France, the lorde of Craon, the lorde Raoul of Coucy and therle of Joigny, taryed all day in the towne of Chauvyngny, and part of ther companyes; the Saturday they passed the bridge and folowed the kyng, who was than a thre leages before, and tooke the waye amonge busses without a wode syde to go to Poicters. The same Saturdaye the prince and his company dysloged fro a lytell vyllage therby, and sent before hym certayne currours to se if they myght fynde any adventure to and to here where the Frenchmen were; they were in nombre a threscore men of armes well horsed, and with them was the lorde Eustace Dambreticourt, and the lorde John of Guystelles: and by adventure the Englyshmen and Frenchmen mette togyder by the forsyde wode syde. The Frenchmen knewe anone howe they were their enemys; than in hast they dyd on their helmyttes and displayed their baners and came a great passe towards thenglyshmen; they were in nombre a two hundred men of armes. Whan the Englyshmen sawe them, and that they were so great a nombre, than they determined to fyle and let the Frenchmen chase them, for they knewe well the prince with his hoost was nat farre behynde; than they turned their horses and toke the corner of the wood, and the Frenchmen after theym cryenge their cryes and made great noyse. And as they chased, they came on the princes batayle or they

362
SYR JOHN FROISSART

were ware therof themselfe: the prince taryed ther to have worde agayne fro them that he send forthe: the lorde Raoll of Coucy with his baner went so farre forward that he was under the princes baner; ther was a sore batayle and the knyght fought valiantly. Howe be it he was there takenne; and the erle of Wynguy; the vycount of Bruce, the lorde of Chavygni and all the other takene or slayne, but a fewe that scaped. And by the prisoners the prince knewe howe the French kynge folowed hym in suche wyse that he coude nat eschue the batayle; than he assembled togryder all his men and commaunded that no man shulde go before the marshals baners. Thus the prince rode that Saturday fro the mornynge till it was agaynst night, so that he came within two lytell leages of Poycters: than the captall de Buz, sir Aymenon of Punyers, the lorde Bartyuwew of Brunes and the lorde Eustace Dambretycourt, all these the prince sende forthe to se yf they myght knowe what the Frenchmen dyd. These knyghtes departed with two hundred men of armes well horsed; they roode so farre that they sawe the great batayle of the kynges; they sawe all the feldes covered with men of armes. These Englyssmen could nat forbere, but sette on the tayle of the Frenche howst and cast cowne many to the yerth and toke dyvers prisoners, so that the hooste begunne to styre, and tidynes therof came to the Frenche kynge as he was entryng into the cytte of Poycters. Than he retourned agayne and made all his hoost do the same, so that Saturday it was very late or he was lodged in the feld. Thenglish currous retourned agayne to the prince and shewed hym all that they sawe and knewe, and said howe the Frenche hoost was a great nombre of people. Well, sayde the prince, in the name of God lette us now study howe we shall fyght with them at our advantage. That night the Englysshmen lodged in a strong place amonyg hedges, vynes and bussbes, and their hoost well watched, and so was the Frenche hoost.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLX

Of the order of the Frenchemen before the batayle of Poysters.

On the Sundae in the mornynge the Frenche kyng, who hadde great desyre to fight with the Englyshemen, herd his masse in his pavilyon, and was houseled and his foure sonnes with hym. After masse ther came to hym the duke of Orleasunche, the duke of Burbon, thelve of Pontheu, the lorde Jaques of Burbone, the duke of Athenes, constable of France, the erle of Tankervylle, the erle of Salebruce,¹ the erle of Dammartynye, the erle of Vantador, and dyvers other great barownes of France and of other neibourhoude holdynge of Fraunce, as the lorde Cleremont, the lorde Arnolde Dandrehe, marshall of France, the lorde of saynt Venont, the lorde John of Landas, the lorde Eustace Ribamont, the lorde Fyennes, the lorde Geffray of Chargny, the lord Chatellon, the lorde of Suly, the lorde of Neill, sir Robert Duras and dyvers other; all these with the kyng went to counsell. Than finall hit was ordayned that all maner of men shulde drawe into the felde, and every lorde to display his baner and to set forth in the name of God and saynt Denice; than trumpets blew up through the hoost and every man mounted on horsebacke and went into the felde, wher they sawe the kynges baner wave with the wynge. There myght a been sene great nobles of fayre harnesse and riche armory of baners and penons: for there was all the flowre of France; ther was none durst abyde at home without he wolde be shamed for ever. Than it was ordayned by the advyse of the constable and marshals to be made thre batayls, and in ech warde xvi. M. men of armes all mustred and past for men of armes. The first batayle the duke of Orleasunche to govern, with xxxvi. baners and twyse as many penons: the seconde, the duke of Normandy and his two bretherne the lorde Loys and the lorde John; the thirde, the kyng hymselfe: and whyle that these batayls were settyng in aray, the kyng called to hym the lorde Eustace Rybamont,
Syr John Froissart

the lorde John of Landas and the lorde Richarde of Beawyeu, and sayd to them, Sirs, ryde on before to se the dealyng of thenglyshmen, and avyse well what nombre they be and by what meane we may fight with theym, other afote or a horsebacke. These thre knyghtes rode forth and the kynge was on a wyght courser and sayde a high to his men, Sirs, among you whan ye be at Parys, at Chartres, at Roan, or at Orlaunce, than ye do thret thenglyshmen, and desire to be in armes out agaynst theym; nowe ye become therto: I shall nowe shewe you them; nowe shewe forthe your yvell wyll that ye bere them and reveng your dyspleasurs and damages that they have done you, for without doute we shall fyght with them. Suche as herde hym sayd, Sir, a Gods-name so be it, that wolde we se gladly. Therwith the thre knyghtes retourned agayne to the kynge, who demaunded of them tidynge; than sir Eustace of Rybamont answered for all (and sayde) Sir, we have sene the Englyshmen: by estymacion they be two thousande men of armes and four thousand archers and a fyftene hundred of other. Howebeit they be in a stronge place, and as farre as we can imagyne they ar in one batayle; howbeit they be wysely ordred, and alongethe way they have fortiffyed strongely the hedges and busses; one part of their archers are along by the hedge, so that none can go nor ryde that way, but must pass by them, and that way must ye go and ye purpose to fyght with them. In this hedge there is but one entre and one yssue by likelyhode that four horsemen may ryde a front; at thende of this hedge, where as no man can go nor ryde, there be men of armes afote and archers afore them in maner of a herse, so that they woll nat be lightely disconfyfted. Well, sayd the kynge, what woll ye than comassyle us to do. Sir Eustace sayde, Sir, lette us all be a fote, except thre hundred men of armes, well horsed, of the best in your hoost and moost hardyest, to the entent they somwhat to breke and to opyn the archers, and thane your batayls to folowe on quickely afote and so to fight with their men of armes hand to hande. This is the best advyce that I canne gyue you; if any other thinke any other waye better, let hym speke. The kynge sayd, Thus shall it be done: than the two marshalles rode frot batayle
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLX
Of the order of the Frenche men before the batayle of Poycters.

1 Nassau.

2 Foulency.
3 Arnold of Corvoles.

to batayle and chose out a thre C. knyghtes and squyers of the moost expert men of armes of all the hooste, every man well armed and horesed. Also it was ordyned that the bataylles of Almayns shulde abyde styll on horsebacke to confort the marshalles, if nede were, wherof the earle of Salesbruce, the erle of Neydo, and the erle of Nosco were capitynys. Kynge Johan of France was ther armed, and xx. other in his apayrell; and he dyd put the gyding of his eldest sonne to the lorde of saynt Venant, the lorde of Landas, and the lorde Thybault of Bodenay: and the lorde Reynolde of Quennoll, called the archepreest, was armed in the armoure of the yong erle of Alanson.

CAP. CLXI

Howe the cardynall of Pyergourt treated to make agrement bytwene the Frenche kyng and the prince before the batell of Poycters.

WHAN the Frenche kynges batayls was ordred and every lorde under his banner among their owne men, than it was commanded that every man shulde cutte their speres to a fyte fote long and every man to put of their spurre. Thus as they were redy to aproche, the cardinall of Piergort came in great hast to the king; he came the same mornynge from Poycters; he kneeled downe to the kyng and helde up his handes and desyred hym for Goddessake a lytell to absteyne settynge forarde tyll he had spoken with hym; than he sayde, Sir, ye have here all the floyre of your realme agaynst a handfull of Englysshmen, as to regarde your company: and sir, if ye may have them acorded to you without batayle, it shal be more profitable and honourable to have theym by that maner rather than to adventure so noble chivalry as ye have here present: sir, I requyre you in the name of God and humlyte, that I may ryde to the prince, and shewe hym what danger ye have hym in. The kynge sayd, It pleaseth me well, but retourne agayne shortly. The cardynall departed and diyligently he rode to the prince, who was among his men afofe: than the cardynall alighted and came to the prince, who receyved
Syr John Froissart

hym curtesly. Than the cardynall, after his salutacyon made, he sayde, Certaynly, sayre son, if you and your counsayle advise justely the puissaunce of the Frenche kynge, ye wol sufere me to treat to make a peace bytwene you and I may. The prince, who was yong and lusty, said, Sir, the honour of me and of my people saved, I wolde gladly fall to any reasonable way. Than the cardynall sayd, Sir, ye say well, and I shall acorde you and I can; for if shulde be great pytie yf so many noble men and other as be here on bothe partes shulde come togider by batayle. Than the cardynall rode agayne to the kynge (and sayd) Sir, ye nede nat to make any great haste to fyght with your enemyes, for they canne nat flye fro you though they wolde, they be in suche a ground; wherfore, sir, I requyre you forbere for this dayyll to morowe the son rysinge. The kynge was lothe to agree therto, for some of his counsayle wolde nat consent to it; but finally the cardynall shewed such reasons, that the kyng acorded that respyte: and in the same place there was pyght up a pavilyon of reed sylke fresshe and rych, and gave leave for that day every man to drawe to their lodgynges, except the constables and marshalles batayls. That Sonday all the day the cardynall traveyled in ridynge fro the one hoost to the other gladly to agree them; but the Frenche kyng wolde nat agree without he myght have foure of the princypallest of the Englysshmen at his pleasure, and the prince and all the other to yelde themselfe simply; howe be it ther were many great offers made. The prince offred to rendre into the kynges handes all that ever he had wonne in that voyage, townes and castels, and to quyte all prisoners that he or any of his men had taken in that season, and also to swere nat to be armed agaynst the Frenche kyng in seyn yere after; but the kyng and his counsayle wolde none thereof: the uttermaist that he wolde do was, that the prince and a C. of his knyghtes shulde yelde themselfe into the kynges prison, otherwise he wolde nat; the whiche the prince wolde in no wyse agre unto. In the seane season that the cardynall rode thus bytwene the hoostes in trust to do some good, certayn knyghtes of France and of Engelonde bothe rode forthe the same Sonday, bycause it was truse
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXI

for that day, to cost the hoostes and to beholde the dealyng of their enemies. So it fortunated that the lorde John Chandos rode the same day coostynge the French host, and in like maner the lorde of Cleremont, one of the Frenche marshalles, had ryden forthe and aviewed the state of the Englysshe hoost; and as these two knyghtes retourned towards their hoostes they mette togyder; eche of theym bare one maner of devye, a blewe lady enbraudred in a sone beame above on their apayrell. Than the lorde Cleremont sayd, Chandos, howe long have ye taken on you to bere my devye? Nay, ye bere myne, sayd Chandos, for it is as well myne as yours. I deny that, sayd Cleremont, but and it were nat for the truse this day bytwene us, I shulde make it good on you incontynent that ye have no right to bere my devye. A sir, sayd Chandos, ye shall fynde me to morowe redy to defend you and to prove by feate of armes that it is as well myne as yours. Than Cleremont sayd, Chandos, these be well the wordes of you Englysshmen, for ye can devye nothyng of newe, but all that ye se is good and payre. So they departed without any more doyng, and eche of them returned to their hoost. The cardynall of Pyergort coude in no wyse that Sonday make any agrement bytwene the parties, and when it was nere nyght he returned to Poicters. That night the Frenchmen toke their case: they had provision ynowh, and the Englysshmen had great defaut; they coude get no forage, nor they coude nat depart thense without danger of their enemies. That Sonday thenglissmen made great dykes and hedges about their archers to be the more stronger; and on the Monday in the mornynge the prince and his company were redy apayrelled as they were before, and about the sonne rysing in lyke maner were the Frenchmen. The same morning be tymes the cardynall came agayne to the Frenche hoost and thought by his preachyng to pacify the parties; but than the Frenchmen sayd to hym, Retourne whyder ye wol; bring hyder no mo wordes of treaty nor peace; and ye love yourselfe depart shortly. When the cardynall sawe that he traveyled in vayne, he toke leave of the kyng and than he went to the prince and sayd, Sir, do what ye canne, their is no remedy but
to abyde the batayle, for I can fynde none acorde in the Frenche kyng. Than the prince sayd, The same is our extent and all our people; God helpe the right. So the cardynall retourned to Poycters. In his company there were certayne knyghtes and squyers, men of armes, who were more favourabylle to the Frenche kyng than to the prince; and when they sawe that the partes shulde fight, they stole fro their maisters and went to the Frenche hoost, and they made their captayne the catelayne of Ampostre, who was as than ther with the cardynall, who knewe nothyng therof tyll he was come to Poycters. The certentie of the order of the Englysshmen was shewed to the Frenche kyng, except they had ordayne thre hundred men a horsebacke, and as many archers a horsebacke, to coost under covert of the mountayne and to strike into the batayle of the duke of Normandy, who was under the mountayne afote. This ordynaunce they had made of newe, that the Frenchmen knewe nat of; the prince was with his batayle downe amonge the vynes, and had closed in the wekyst parte with their carriages. Nowe wyll I name some of the princypall lordeles and knyghtes that were ther with the prince: the erle of Warwyke, therle of Suffolke, the erle of Salisbury, therle of Stafford, the lorde John Chandos, the lorde Richard Stafford, the lorde Reynold Cobham, the lorde Spencer, the lorde James Audeley, the lorde Peter his brother, the lorde Berkley, the lorde Bassett, the lord Waren, the lorde Dalawar, the lorde Maulyne, the lorde Wyly, the lorde Bartylmewe de Brunnes, the lord of Felton, the lorde Rychard of Pembruge, the lorde Stephyne of Constrayon, the lorde Brasfet, and other Englysshmen: and of Gascon, there was the lorde of Prunes, the lorde of Burger, the captall of Buz, the lorde Johan of Chamont, the lorde Delaspare, the lorde of Rosen, the lorde of Consue, the lorde of Montferant, the lorde of Landuras, the lorde Soulech of Lestraie, and other that I can nat name: and of Heynowers, the lorde Eustace Dambretycourt, the lorde John of Guystels, and two other strangers, the lorde Danyell Phasell, and the lorde Denyce of Moerberche. All the princes company past nat an viii. M. men one and other, and the Frenchmen were a lx. M. fightyng men, wherof ther were mo than thre thousande knyghtes.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXII

Of the batell of Poycters bytwene the prince of Wales and the Frenche kyng.

WHANNE the prince sawe that he shuld have batell and that the cardynall was gone without any peace or trewe makynge, and sawe that the Frenche kyng dyd sette but lytell store by hym, he said than to his men, Now sirs, though we be but a small company as in regarde to the puysance of our enemynes, let us nat be abashed therfore: for the vctorie lyeth nat in the multitude of people, but wher as God wyll sende it. Yf it fortune that the journey be ours, we shal be the moost honoured people of all the worlde; and if we dye in our right quarell, I have the kyng my father and bretherne, and also ye have good frendes and kynsmen; these shal revenge us: therfor sirs, for Goddessake, I requyre you do your devoyers this day; for if God be pleased and saynt George, this day ye shal se me a good knyght. These wordeus and suche other that the prince spake conforted all his people. The lorde sir John Chandos that day never went fro the prince, nor also the lorde James Audeley of a great season: but whane he sawe that they shulde nedes fight, he sayd to the prince, Sir, I have served alwayes truely my lorde your father and you also, and shal do as long as I lyve; I say this because I made ones a vowe that the first batayle that other the kynge your father or any of his chyldeyn shulde be at, howe that I wolde be one of the first setters on, or els to dye in the payne; therfore I requyre your grace, as in reward for any servyce that ever I dyde to the king your father or to you, that you woll gyve me lyncence to depart fro you and to sette my selfe there as I may acomplysshe my vowe. The prince acorded to his desyre and sayde, Sir James, God gyve you this day that grace to be the best knyght of all other; and so toke hym by the hande. Than the knyght departed fro the prince, and went to the formast front of all the batayles, all onely acompanied with foure squyers, who promysed nat to fayle.
SYR JOHN FROISSART

hym. This lorde James was a right sage and a valiant knyght, and by him was moche of the boost ordanyned and of the batal governed the day before. Thus sir James was in the front of the batayle redy to fight with the batayle of the marshalles of Fraunce. In lykeweys the lorde Eustace Dambreycourt dyd his payne to be one of the formast to sette on; whan sir James Audeley began to sette forwarde to his ennemyes, it fortuned to sir Eustace Dambreycourt as ye shall here after. Ye have herde before howe the Almayns in the French host were apoynted to be styll a horsebacke. Sir Eustace beyng a horsebacke layed his spear in the rest and ran into the Frenche batayle; and than a knyght of Almaygne, called the lorde Loyes of Coucoubraes, who bare a sheilde sylver, fuye rosses goules; and sir Eustace bare ernys, two hamedes of goules. Whan this Almayne sawe the lorde Eustace come fro his company, he rode agaynst hym and they mete so rudely, that bothe knyghtes fell to the yerth. The Almayne was hurt in the shoulder, therfore he rose nat so quickly as dyde sir Eustace, who whan he was up and had taken his breth, he came to the other knyght as he lay on the grounde: but thane fuye other knyghtes of Almayne came on hym all at ones and bare hym to the yerth; and so perforce there he was taken prisoner and brought to the erle of Nosco, who as than toke no hede of hym; and I can nat say wheter they swere him prisoner or no, but they tyed hym to a chare and therette hym stande. Than the batayle began on all partes, and the batayls of the marshals of Fraunce aproched, and they set forthe that were apoynted to breke the ray of the archers. They entred a horsebacke into the way where the great hedges were on bothe sydes sette full of archers; assone as the men of armes entred, the archers began to shote on bothe sydes and dyd slee and hurt horses and knyghtes, so that the horses whan they felt the sharpe arowes they wolde in no wyse go forward, but drewe abacke and flang and toke on so feerly, that many of them fell on their maisters, so that for presace they coude nat ryse agayne; in so moche that the marshals batayle coude never come at the prince: certayne knyghtes and squyers that were wel horsed passed through tharchers and thought to aproche to the prince,
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXII
Of the batell of Poycters bytwene the prince of Wales and the Frenche kyng.

but they coude nat. The lorde James Audeley, with his four squyers was in the front of that batell and there dyd marvels in armes; and by great prowes he came and fought with sir Arnold Dandrehen under his owne baner, and ther they fought longe togyder, and sir Arnolde was there sore handled. The batayle of the marshals began to dysorder by reason of the shot of the archers with the ayde of the men of armes, who came in among them and slew of them and dyd what they lyst; and ther was the lorde Arnold Dandrehen taken prisoner by other men than by sir James Audeley or by his four squiers, for that day he never toke prisoner, but always fought and went on his enemies. Also on the French partie, the lorde Johan Cleremont fought under his owne baner as long as he coude endure, but ther he was beten downe and coude nat be relyved nor ransomed, but was slayne without mercy; some sayde it was bcause of the wordes that he had the day before to sir John Chandos. So within a short space the marshals batayls were disconftyled, for they fell one upon another and coude nat go forth; and the Frenchmen that were behynde and coude nat get forwaerdly reculed backe and came on the batayle of the duke of Normandy, the which was great and thicke and were afote: but anon they began to opyn behynde: for whan they knewe that the marshals batayle was dysconfited, they toke their horses and departed. Also they sawe a rowt of Englysshmen commynge downe a lytell mountayne a horsebacke, and many archers with them, who brake in on the syde of the dukes batayle. Trewe to say, the archers dyd their company that day great advantaige, for they shottte so thicke that the Frenchmen wyst nat on what syde to take hede; and lytell and lytell the Englysshmen wanne grounde on theirmy. And whan the men of armes of Englond sawe that the marshals batayle was dysconfited and that the dukes batayle begane to dysorder and opyn, they lept than on their horses, the whiche they had redy by them; than they assembled togyder and cryed Saynt George, Gyen: and the lorde Chandos sayd to the prince, Sir, take your horse and ryde forth, this journey is yours: God is this day in your handes: gette us to the French kynges batayle, for ther lyeth all the
sore of the mater; I thynke verily by his valyantnesse he woll nat fyl: I trust we shall have hym by the grace of God of the batell and saynt George, so he be well fought withall; and sir, I herde you say that this day I shulde se you a good knyght. The prince sayde, Lette us go forthe, ye shall nat se me this day retourne backe, and sayd, Ayvaunce baner, in the name of God of saynt George. The knyght that bare it dyde his comm- kyng.

maundement: there was than a sore batayle and a perylous, and many a man overthrown, and he that was ones downe coud nat be relyved agayne without great socoure and ayde. As the prince rode and entred in amonge his enemyes, he sawe on his ryght hande, in a lytell busshe lyeng deed the lorde Robert of Duras and his baner by hym, and a ten or twelwe of his men about hym. Than the prince sayd to two of his squyers and to thre archers, Sirs, take the body of this knyght on a targe and bere hym to Poycters, and present him fro me to the cardynall of Pyergourt, and say howe I salute hym by that token; and this was done. The prince was enformed that the cardynalles men were on the felde agaynst hym, the which was nat pertayning to the right order of armes, for men of the churche that cometh and goeth for treaty of peace ought nat by reason to her harnes nor to fyght for nerther of the parties: they ought to be indyfferent: and bycause these men had done so, the prince was dyspleased with the cardynall, and therfore he sende unto hym his nephe the lorde Robert of Duras deed. And the cardynall of Ampostre was taken, and the prince wolde have had his heed styken of, bycause he was pertayninge to the cardynall, but than the lorde Chandos sayd, Sir, sustre for a season; entende to a gretter mater, and par-advarture the cardynall wyll make suche excuse that ye shal be content. Than the prince and his company dressed them on the batayle of the duke of Athenes, constable of France: there was many a manne slayne and cast to the yerth. As the Frenchmen fought in companies, they cryed Mountjoy saynt Denyce, and the Englysshmen Saynt George, Gyen. Anone the prince with his company met with the batayle of Almayngnes, wherof the erle of Salesbruce, the erle Nosco, and therle Neydo were capiayns, but in a short space they were put to flyght: the archers shotte so holly togyder that
none durst come in their dangers; they slew many a man
that could not come to no ransom; these three earls was
their slaye, and dyers other knyghe & squyers of their
company: and ther was the lorde Dambretycourt rescued by
his owne men and sette on horsebacke, and after he dyde
that day many feates of armes and toke gode prisoners.
When the duke of Normandyes bataye sawe the prince
aproche, they thought to save themselfe, and so the duke
and the kynges children, the erle of Poycters, and the erle
of Tourayne, who were ryght yong, byleveld their govern-
nours and so departed fro the field, and with them mo than
eyght hundred speares, that strake no stroke that day.
Howbeit the lorde Guysshard Dangle, and the lorde John
of Saytrue, who were with the erle of Poihters, wolde nat
flie, but entred into the thickest presse of the bataye.
The kynges thre sonnes toke the way to Chamigny: and the
lorde John of Landas, and the lorde Thybault of Woodney;1
who were sette to awayt on the duke of Normandy, when
they had brought the duke a long lease fro the bataye,
than they tooke leave of the duke and desyred the lorde of
saynt Venant, that he shulde nat leave the duke, but to
bring hym in saverarde, wherby he shulde wyn more thanke
of the kyng than to abyde styll in the felse; than they
met also the duke of Oriauence and a great company with
hym, who were also departed fro the felse with clere
handes: ther were many good knyghe & squyers, though
that their maisters departed fro the felse, yet they hadde
rather a dyed, than to have had any reproche. Than the
kynges bataye came on the Englysshmen; there was a sore
fyght and many a great stroke gyven and receyved. The
kyng and his yongest sonne mette with the bataye of
thenglyshhe marshalle, therle of Warwyke and therle of
Suffolke, and with them the Gascons, the captall of Buz,
the lorde of Pomyers, the lorde Amery of Charre,2 the lorde
of Mucydent, the lorde of Languran, and the lorde de la
Strade.3 To the Frenche partie there came tyme ynough,
the lorde Johan of Landas, and the lorde of Woodney:
they alyghted afote and wente into the kynges bataye; and
a lyttel bysyde fought the duke of Athenes, constable of
France, and a lyttel above hym the duke of Burbone, and

1 Voulesay.
2 Tastes.
3 De Latru.
many good knyghtes of Burbonoyse, and of Picardy with CAP. CLXII
hym; and a lytell on the one syde ther were the Poyteyns, Of the batell
the lorde de Pons, the lorde of Partney, the lorde of Damp-
mare, the lorde of Montabotan the lorde of Suggeres, the
lorde Johan Sayntre, the lorde Guyssharde Dangle, the
lorde Argenton, the lorde of Lymyers, the lorde of Mount-
andre, and dyverse other, also the Vycount of Rochevart,3
kyng.
and the erle of Daunoy :4 and of Burgone, the lorde James
of Beautyeu, the lorde de la Castell Vilayn, and other: in
another parte, there was the erle of Vantadoure, and of
Mounpenser, the lorde James of Burbone, the lorde Johan
Darthyoes, and also the lorde James his brother, the lorde
Arnolde of Cervolle, called the Arche preest, armed for the
yonge erle of Alansonne: and of Auvergne, there was the
lorde of Marcuell,4 the lorde de la Towre, the lorde of
Chalenton, the lorde of Montague, the lorde of Rochfort,
the lorde de la Chayre,6 the lorde Dachone; and of Lymo-
syn, there was the lorde Delmall,4 the lorde of Norwell,7 the
lorde of Pers Buffier: and of Pycardie, there was the lorde
Wylliam of Nerle, the lorde Arnolde of Renewall, the lorde
Geffray of saynt Dygier, the lorde of Chamy, the lorde of
Heley, the lorde of Mounsaut, the lorde of Hangyes and
dyvers other: and also in the kynges batayle ther was
therle Duglas of Scotland, who fought a season right
valyantly, but whan he sawe the dysconfyture, he departed
and saved hymselfe, for in no wyse he wolde be takenne of
the Englysshe parte the lorde James Aweley with the ayde
of his foure squyers fought alwayes in the chyfe of the
batayle: he was soore hurt in the body and in the vysage:
as longe as his breth served hym he fought; at laste at the
ende of the batayle his foure squyers tooke and brought
hym oute of the felde, and layed hym under a hedge syde for
to refresse hym, and they unarmed hym, and bounte up
his woundes as well as they coulde. On the Frenche partie
kynge Johan was that day a full right good knyght; if the
fourth part of his menne hadde done their devoyres as well
as he dydde, the journey hadde ben his by all lykelyhode.
 Howebeit they were all slayne and takenne that were there,
excepte a fewe that saved themselfe that were with the

2. Rochechouart.
3. Aunay.
4. Moroer.
5. d'Apchier.
6. de Meval.
7. Moreul.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXII kyng. There was slayn the duke Peter of Burbon, the
lorde Guyssharde of Beaueu, the lorde of Landas, and the
duke of Athenes, constable of Fraunce, the bysshoppes of
Chalons in Champayne, the lorde Wylyam of Neell, the
lorde Eustace of Bybmont, the lorde de la Towre, the
lorde Wylyam of Montagu, sir Guyuenton of Chambley, sir
Baudrin de la house, and many other, as they fought by com-
panyes: and ther were taken prisoners the lorde of Wodney,
the lorde of Pompador, and the archpreest, sore hurte, the erle
of Vandas, the erle of Mons, the erle of Genvyl, the erle of
Vandone, sir Loyes of Melwall, the lorde Pyers Buffyer, and
the lorde of Senerache; ther were at that brunt slayn and
taken mo than two hundred knyghtes.

CAP. CLXIII

Of two Frenchmen that fledde fro the batayle of
Poicters, and two Englysshmen that folowed them.

A MONG the batayls, recountederynges, chases and pur-
suets that were made that day in the felde, it
fortuned so to sir Edwarde of Roucy, that when he
departed fro the felde bycause he sawe the felde was lost
without recovery, he thought nat to abyde the danger of
the Englysshmen: wherfore he fledde all alone and was
gone out of the felde a leage, and an Englysshe knyght
pursued hym and ever cryed to hym, and sayde, Retourne
agayn sir knyght, it is a shame to fyle away thus. Than
the knight tourned, and thenglysshe knight thought to have
striken hym with his speare in the targe, but he fayled, for
sir Edwarde swarved asyde fro the stroke; but he fayled nat
the Englysshe knyght, for he strake hym suche a stroke on
the helme with his swerde, that he was astonyed and fell
fro his horse to the yerth and lay styll; than sir Edward
alighted and came to him or he coude ryse, and sayd, Yeld
you, rescue or no rescue, or els I shall see you; the
Englysshman yelded and went with hym, and afterwarde
was raunsomed. Also it fortuned, that another squer of
Picardy, called Johan de Hellenes, was fledde fro the batayle,
and mette with his page, who delyverd hym a newe freshe
horse, wheron he rode away alone. The same season there was in the felde the lorde Berche of Englande, a yong lusty knyght, who the same day had reryd his baner; and he all alone pursued the sayd Johan of Helene, and whane he had followed the space of a leage, the sayde John tourned agayne and layed his swerde in the rest instede of a speare, and so came ronyng toward the lorde Berche, who lyft up his swerde to have stryken the squer: but whan he sawe the stroke come, he tourned fro it, so that the Englyshman lost his stroke and Johan strake hym as he past on the arme, that the lorde Berchees swerde fell into the felde. Whan he sawe his swerde done, he lyghted sodaynly of his horse and came to the place wher his swerd lay, and as he stouped done to take up his swerd, the Frenche squer dyd pycke his swerde at hym, and by happe strake hym through both the thyes, so that the knyght fell to the yerth, and coude nat helpe hymselfe. And Johan algyhted of his horse and toke the knyghtes swerde that lay on the grounde, and came to hym and demaunded if he wolde yelde hym or nat. The knyght than demaunded his name: Sir, sayde he, I hyght Johan of Helene, but what is your name: Certenly, sayde the knyght, my name is Thomas, and am lorde of Berche, a sayre castell on the ryver of Severn in the marches of Wales. Well sir, quoth the squer, than ye shall be my prisoner, and I shall bring you in sauegarde and I shall se that you shall be healed of your hurt. Well sayde the knyght, I am content to be your prisoner, for ye have by lawe of armes wonne me. Ther he swar to be his prisoner, rescue or no rescue. Than the squer drewe forthe the swerde out of the knyghtes thyse and the wounde was opyn; thane he wrapped and bounde the wounde and sette hym on his horse and so brought hym fayre and easely to Chaterelant, and there taryed more than fyftene dayes for his sake, and dyde gette hym remedy for his hurt: and whan he was somewhat amend, than he gate hym a lytter and so brought hym at his ease to his house in Picardy. There he was more than a yere tyll he was perfetly hole; and whan he departed he payed for his raumse sixe thousande nobuls, and so this squer was made a knyght by reason of the profette that he had of the lorde Bercey.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXIII

Howe kyng John was taken prisoner at the batayle of Poycters.

OFTEN tymes the adventures of amours and of war are more fortunate and marvelous than any man canne thinke or wyssse; truly this batayle, the which was nere to Poycters in the feldes of Beaumont and Malpertuis, was right great and peryllous, and many dedes of armes there was done which all came nat to knowlege. The fghters on bothe partes endured moche payne; kyng John with his owne handes dyd that day marvells in armes; he had an axe in his handes wherwith he defended hymselfe and fought in the brekyng of the prease. Nere to the kyng there was taken the erle of Tankervyll, sir Jaques of Burbon, erle of Ponthieu, and the lorde Johan of Arthoyes, erle of Ewe; and a lytell above that under the baner of the captall of Buz was taken sir Charles of Arthoyes and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers. The chase endured to the gates of Poiters: ther were many slayne and beatten downe, horse and man, for they of Poycters closed their gates and wolde suffre none to entre; wherfore in the strete before the gate was horrible murdre, men hurt and beaten downe. The Frenchemen yelded themselfe as farre of as they might know an Englysshman; ther were dyvers Englyssh archers that had iii. v. or vi. prisoners: the lorde of Pons, a gret baron of Poitou, was ther slayne, and many other knyghtes and squyers: and ther was taken therle of Rochuart, the lorde of Dannauement, the lorde of Pertney; and of Xaynton, the lorde of Montendre, and the lorde John of Saynltre, but he was so sore hurt that he had never helth after; he was reputed for one of the best knightes in France. And ther was left for deed among other deed men, the lorde Rychard Dangle, who fough that day by the kyng right valyantly, and so dyd the lorde of Charny, on whom was great prease, bycause he bare the soverayn baner of the kynges: his owne baner was also in the felde, the which was of goules, thre schochyns sylver. So many Englysshmen
SYR JOHN FROISSART

and Gascons came to that part, that perforce they opyned
the kynges batell, so that the Frenchmen were so mengled
amonge their enemyes that somtyme there was sye men
upon one gentylman. Ther was taken the lord of Pompa-
dour, and the lorde Bartylmewe de Brunes, and ther was
slayne sir Geffray of Charny with the kynges baner in his
handes; also the lorde Reynold Cobham slewe therle of
Dammartyn: than ther was a great prease to take the
kyng, and such as knewe hym cryed Sir, yeilde you, or els
ye ar but deed. Ther was a knyght of saynt Omers,
retayned in wages with the kyng of England, called sir
Denyce Morbecke, who had served the Englysshmen v. yere
before, bycause in his youth he had forfayted the realme
of France, for a murde that he dyd at saynt Omers. It
happenyd so well for hym, that he was next to the kyng
when they were about to take hym; he stepte forthe into the
prease, and by strengthe of his body and armes, he came to
the Frenche kyng, and sayd in gode Frenche, Sir, yeilde
you. The kyng behelde the knyght and sayde, To whom
shall I yeilde me; where is my cosyn the prince of Wales,
yf I myght se hym, I wolde speke with hym. Denyce
answered and sayd, Sir, he is nat here, but yeilde you
to me and I shall bringe you to hym. Who be you, quoth
the kyng. Sir, quoth he, I am Denyce of Morbecke, a
knyght of Arthoys, but I serve the kyng of Englannde
bycause I am banysshed the realme of Fraunce and I
have forfaytedede all that I had there. Than the kyng
gave hym his ryght gauntlet, sayeng, I yeilde me to
you. There was a great prease about the kyng, for every
man enforshed hym to say, I have taken him, so that the
kyng coude nat go forarde with his yonge sonne the
lorde Philyppe with hym bycause of the prease. The prince
of Wales, who was coragious and cruel as a lyon, toke that
day great pleasure to fight and to chase his enemyes. The
lorde John Chandos, who was with hym, of all that day
never left hym nor never toke hede of takynge of any
prisoner: than at the ende of the batayle, he sayde to the
prince Sir, it were good that you restet her and sette
your baner a high in this bushe, that your people may
drawe hyther, for thay be sore spredde abrode, nor I can se
THE CRONYCLE OF

no mo baneres nor penons of the Frenche partie: wherfore sir, rest and refresche you, for ye be sore chafed. Than the princes baner was sette uppe a hygh on a bussehe, and trumpettes and clarions began to sowe. Than the prince dyd of his basenet, and the knyghtes for his body and they of his chambr were reedy aboute hym, and a reed pavilyon pyght uppe, and than drinke was brought forthe to the prince and for suche lorde as were aboute hym, the whiche styll encresse as they came fro the chasse: ther they taryed and their prisoners with them. And whan the two marshalles were come to the prince, he demaunded of them if they knewse any ticynges of the Frenche kyng. They answered and sayde, Sir, we here none of certenty, but we thinke verily he is other deed or taken, for he is nat gone out of the botels. Than the prince sayd to therle of Warwyke and to sir Reynolde Cobham, Sirs, I reuyre you goo forthe and se what ye can knowe, that at yoor retourne ye may shewe me the trouth. These two lorde toke their horses and departed fro the prince, and rode up a lytell hyll to loke about them; than they perceyved a flocke of men of armes commynge togyder righwerely; there was the Frenche kyng afofe in great parell, for Englyshmen and Gascoyns were his maisters, they had taken hym fro sir Denyce Morbecke perfors; and suche as were moost of force sayd, I have taken hym; Nay, quoth another, I have taken hym: so they strave which shulde have him. Than the French kyng, to esche胡 thay peryll, sayd, Sirs, stryve nat, lede me courteusly, and my sonne, to my cosyn the prince, and stryve nat for my takynge, for I am so great a lorde to make you all riche. The kynges wordes somwhat aperesse them; howebeit ever as they went they made royt and brauled for the takynge of the kyng. Whan the two foresayd lorde sawe and herde that noys and stryfe among them, they came to them and sayd, Sirs, what is the mater that ye stryve for. Sirs, sayd one of them, it is for the Frenche kyng, who is here taken prisoner, and there be mo than x. knyghtes and squyres that chalengeth the takynge of hym and of his sonne. Than the two lorde entred into the prease and caused every man to draue absacke, and commandde them in the princes name on peyne of their heedes to make no
SYR JOHN FROISSART

more noise nor to aproche the kyng no nerer, without they were commaundd: thane every man gave rowme to the lorde, and they alyghted and dyd their reverence to the kyng, and so brought hym and his son in peace and rest to the prince of Wales.

CAP. CLXV

Of the gyft that the prince gave to the lorde Audeley after the batell of Poycters.

ASSONE as therle of Warwyke and the lorde Cobham were departed fro the prince, as ye have herde before, than the prince demaunded of the knyghtes that were aboute hym for the lorde Audeley, yt any knewe any thyng of hym. Some knyghtes that were ther answerd and sayd, Sir, he is sore hurt and lyeth in a lytter her besyde. By my faith, sayde the prince, of his hurtes I am right sorie: go and knowe yt he may be brought hyder, or els I wolle go and se hym there as he is. Thane two knyghtes came to the lorde Awdeley, and sayde, Sir, the prince de-syreth greatly to se you, uther ye must go to hym or els he wolle come to you. A sir, sayde the knyght, thanke the prince, whan he thynketh on so poore a knyght as I am. Than he called euyght of his servantes and causd theym to bere hym in his lytter to the place wereas the prince was: than the prince tooke hym in his armes, and kyst hym, and made hym great chere, and sayd, Sir James, I ought gretly to honour you, for by your valyance ye have this day achiyved the grace and renome of us all, and ye ar reputed for the moost valyant of all other. A sir, sayde the knyght, ye say as it pleaseth you: I wolde it were so, and if I have this day any thynge avauenced myselfe to serve you and to acomplyshe the vowe that I made, it ought nat to be reputed to me any prowes. Sir James, sayde the prince, I and all ours take you in this journey for the best doar in armes; and to thynent to furnyshe you the better to pursue the warres, I retayne you for ever to be my knight, with fuye hundred markes of yerely revenewes, the which I shall assigne you on myne herytage in Englane. Sir, sayde the
knyght, God graunte me to deserve the great goodnesse that ye shewe me; and so he toke his leve of the prince, for he was right feble, and so his servauntes brought hym to his lodgyng. And assone as he was gone, the erle of Warwyke and the lorde Combham retorne to the prince and presented to hym the Frenche kyng: the prince made lowly reverence to the kyng and caused wyne and spyces to be brought forthe, and hymself served the kyng in signe of great love.

CAP. CLXVI

Howe the Englysshmen wan gretly at the batayle of Poyaers.

THUS this batayle was dyscomfyted, as ye have herd, the which was in the feldes of Malpertuesse, a two leages fro Poyaers, the xxii. day of Septembre the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.lvii. It began in the mornyng and endyd at noon, but as than all the Englysshmen wer nat retorne fro the chase, therfore the princes baner stode on a busshe to drawe all his men togyder, but it was ny night or all came fro the chase. And as it was re-reported, there was slayne all the flour of Fraunce, and there was taken with the kyng and the lorde Philippe his sonne a seyntene erles, besyde barones, knyghtes and snyyers, and slayne a fyve or sixe thousande of one and other. Whan every man was come fro the chase, they had twyse as many prisoners as they were in nombre in all; than it was counsayled among them bycause of the great charge and dout to kepe so many, that they shulde put many of them to raunsum incontynent in the feld, and so they dyd; and the prisoners profounde the Englysshenes and Gascoyns right courtesse; ther wer many that day putte to raunsum and lette go, all onely on their promys of faythe and truth to retourne agayn seyntene that and Christmass to Burdeux with their raunsumes. Than that nyght they lay in the feld bysye where as the batayle had been; some unarmed theym, but nat all, and unarmed all their prisoners, and every man made good chere to his prisoner: for that day who soever toke any prisoner, he was clere his, and myght
SYR JOHN FROISSART

quyte or raunsome hym at his pleasure. All suche as CAP. CLXVI were there with the prince were all made ryche with Honour and goodes, as well by ransomyng of prisoners as wynnyng of golde, sylver, plate, jewelles, that was there founde; there was no man that dyd set any thyng by riche harness, wherof there was great plentie, for the Frenchmen came thyser richely besene, wyntyng to have had the journey for them.

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the lorde James Audley gave to his foure squyres the v. C. markes of renewes that the prince had gyven hym.

W

HAN sir James Audeley was brought to his lognyng, than he send for sir Peter Audeley his brother and for the lorde Bartylymewe of Brunes, the lorde Stephane of Gouseton, the lorde of Wyly, and the lorde Raffe Ferres: all these were of his lynyng; and than he called before them his foure squyres, that had served hym that day well and trewly. Then he sayd to the sayd lordes, Sirs, it hath pleased my lorde the prince to gyve me fyve hundred markes of reweenues by yere in herytage, for the whiche I have done hym but small servyce with my body; sirs, beholde here these foure squyres, who hath alwayes served me truely, and specially this day; that honour that I have is by their valyantnesse. Wherfore I woll rewarde them: I gyve and resigne into their handes the gyft that my lorde the prince hath gyven me of fyve hundred markes of yereley reweenues, to them and to their heyres for ever, in lyke maner as it was gyven me; I clerely disherete me therof and inherete them without any rebell or condycyon. The lordes and other that were ther, every man beheld other and sayde among themselfe, It commeth of a great noblenes to gyve this gyft. They answered hym with one voyce, Sir, be it as Godde wyll, we shall bere wyntesse in this behalfe wher soever we be come. Thane they departed fro hym, and some of them went to the
prince, who the same nyght wolde make a supper to th
Frenche kyng and to the other prisoners, for they ha
than ynoth to do withall of that the Frenchmen brough
with them, for the Englyshmen wanted vitayle before, fo
some in thre dayes hadde no brede before.

CAP. CLXVIII

Howe the prince made a supper to the French kyng the same day of the batayle.

T
HE same day of the batayle at night the prince
made a supper in his lodgyng to the Frenche kyng
and to the moost parte of the great lorde that
were prisoners. The prince made the kyng and his son,
the lorde James of Burbone, the lorde John Darboys, the
erle of Tankervyll, therle of Stampes, therle Dampmartyne,
the erle of Grayvyl, and the lorde of Pertenay to syt all at
one borde, and other lorde, knyghtes and squiers at other
tables; and alwayes the prince served before the king as
humbly as he coude, and wolde nat syt at the kynges borde
for any desyre that the kyng coude make: but he syad he
was nat suuffcients to syt at the table with so great a prince
as the kyng was. But than he syad to the kyng, Sir, for
Goddessake make non yvell nor hevy chere, though God this
day dye ynat consent to folowre your wyl: for sir, surely
the kyng my father shall bare you as moche honour and
amyte as he may do, and shall aconde with you so reason-
ably that ye shall ever be frendes toguyder after; and sir,
methynke ye ought to rejoyse, though the journey be nat
as ye wolde have had it, for this day ye have wonne the
hygh renome of prowes and have past this day in valyant-
nesse all other of your partie: sir, I say natte this to mocke
you, for all that be on our partie that sawe every mannes
dedes, ar playnly acorded by true sentence to gyve you the
price and chapelette.

Therwith the Frenchmen began to murmure and sayde
among themeselwe howe the prince had spoken nobly, and
that by all estimacion he shulde prove a noble man, if God
sende hym lyfe, and to perceyver in suche good fortune.

384
SYR JOHN FROISSART

CAP. CLXIX

Howe the prince retourned to Burdeux after the batayle of Poycters.

WHAN supper was done, every man wente to his lodgyng with their prisoners; the same nyght they putte many to raunsome and belyved them on their faythes and trouthes, and raunsomod them but easely, for they sayd they wolde sette no knyghtes raunsome so hygh, but that he myght pay at his ease and maynteyne styll his degree. The nexte day whan they had herde masse and taken some repast, and that every thynge was trussed and redy, than they toke their horses and rode towards Poycters. The same nyght ther was come to Poycters the lorde of Roy with a hundred spers: he was nat at the batayle, but he mette the duke of Normandy nere to Chauvigny, and the duke sende hym to Poycters to kepe the towne tyll they herde other tidynge. Whan the lorde of Roy knewe that thenglysshmen were so nere commynge to the cytie, he caused every man to be armed, and every man to go to his defence to the wallis, towers, and gates; and thenglysshmen paste by without any aprochynge, for they were so laded with golde, sylver and prisoners, that in their retourynge they assaulted no fortess: they thought it a gret dede if they might bringe the Frenche kynge, with their other prisoners and riches that they had won, in savage day to Burdeaux. They rode but small journeys bycause of their prisoners and great cargayges that they had; they rode in a day no more but foure or fuye leages and loged ever betymes, and rode close togyder in good array, saynyng the marshailles batayls, who rode ever before with fuye C. men of armes to opyn the passages as the prince shulde passe, but they founde no encounterers, for all the countre was so frayed that every man drue to the fortresses. As the prince rode, it was shewed hym howe the lorde Audeley had gyven to his four squyers the gyft of the fuye hundred markes that he hadde gyven unto hym. Than the prince sende for hym, and he was brought in his lytter to the prince, who receyved hym curtesly, and sayde, Sir James,
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXIX we have knoledge that the revenewes that we gave you,
assone as ye came to your lodgyng, you gave the same to foure squyers: we wolde knowe why ye dyd so, and whyder
the gyft was agraebale to you or nat. Sir, sayd the knyght,
it is of trouth I have gyven it to them, and I shall shewe
you why I dyde so. These foure squyers that be here present
have a longe season served me well and truely in many
great besynesses; and sir, at this last batayle they served
me in suche wyse that and they had never done nothynge
els, I was bounde to rewarde them, and before the same
day they had never nothing of me in rewarde; sir, I am but
a man alone: but by the ayde and confort of them I take
on me to acomplyshe my vowe long before made: I had
ben deed in the batayle and they had nat ben, wherfore sir,
whan I consydred the love that they bare unto me, I had
nat ben curtesse if I wolde nat a rewarded them; I thanke
God I have had and shall have ynoth as long as I lyve,
I wyll never be abashed for lacke of good; sir, if I have
done this without your pleasure, I requyre you to pardon
me, for sir, both I and my squyers shall serve you as well
as ever we dyd. Than the prince sayd, Sir James, for any
thing that ye have done I can nat blame you, but can you
gode thanke therfore, and for the valyantnes of these squyers
whom ye preyse so moche, I acorde to them your gyft, and
I woll render agayne to you vi. C. markes in lyke maner as
ye had the other. Thus the prince and his company dyd so
moche that they past through Poyctou and Xaynton with-
out damage and came to Blay, and there passed the ryver of
Geron and arvued in the good cytie of Burdeaux. It canne nat
be recorded the gret feest and chere that they of the cytie
with the cleryge made to the prince, and howe honourably
they were ther receyved. The prince brought the French
kyng into the abbey of saynt Andrewes, and there they lodged
bothe, the kyng in one part and the prince in the other.
The prince bought of the lordes, knyghtes, and squyers of
Gasconye, the moost parte of the erles of the realme of
Fraunce, suche as wer prisoners, and payed redy money for
them. Ther was dyvers questyons and chalenges made
bytwene the knyghtes and squyers of Gascoyne for takyng
of the Fresche kyng; howebeit Denyce Morbecke by ryght
SYR JOHN FROISSART

of armes, and by true tokens that he shewed, chalenged hym CAP. CLXIX
for his prisoner. Another squyer of Gascon called Bernarde Howe the
of Troutes sayde howe he had ryght to hym; there was ro-
moche ado and many worde before the prince and other
lordes that were there: and bycause these two chalenged
eche other to fight in that quarell, the prince caused the
mater to rest tyll they came in Englane, and that no
declaracyon shulde be made but afore the kyng of Englane
his father; but bycause the Frenche kyng hymselfe ayded
to sustayne the chaleng of Denyce Morbecke, for he enclyned
more to hym than to any other, the prince therfore privately
causd to be delyverd to the sayd sir Denyce ii. M. nobuls
to mayntene with all his estate. Anone, after the prince
came to Burdeux, the cardynall of Piergort came thyder,
who was send fro the pope in legacyon, as it was sayd: he
was there more thane xvi. dayes or the prince wolde speke
with hym bycause of the chateleyne of Campost and his
men, who were ayaynst hym in the batayle of Poycters. The
prince belyved that the cardynall send them thyder, but
the cardynall dyd so moch by the meanes of the lorde of
Chamont, the lorde of Monferant, and the captall of Buz,
who were his cosyns, they shwoed so good reasons to the
prince, that he was content to here him speke. And whan
he was before the prince, he excusd hymselfe so sagely that
the prince and his counsayle helde him excusd, and so he
daygne into the prince's love and redeemed out his men
by reasonable raunsons; and the catherlayne was sette to his
ransome of x. M. frankes, the which he payed after: than
the cardynall began to treat on the delveryance of the
Frenche kyng, but I passe it breffely bycause nothyng was
done. Thus the prince, the Gascons and Englishmen
taryed styll at Burdeux tyll it was Lent in great myrth and
revell, and spende folyssably the golde and sylver that they
had won. In Englane also there was great joye whane
they harde tidynes of the batayle of Poycters, of the dys-
confityng of the Frenchmen, and takyn of the kyng; great
solemnites were made in all churches and great fyers and
wakes throughout all Englane: the knyghtes and squyers,
suche as were com home fro that journey, were moche made
of and praysed more than other.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXX

How the thre estates of France assembled to-gyder at Parys after the batayle of Poycters.

The same seson that the batayle of Poycters was, the duke of Lancastre was in the countie of Evreux, and on the marches of Constantynge, and with hym the lorde Philippe of Naver, and the lorde Godfray of Harcourt. They made war in Normandy and had done all that season in the tytell of the kyng of Naver, whom the French kyng helde in prison; these lorde dide that they might have ben at the journey of Poycters with the prince, but they coude nat, for all the passages on the river of Loyre were so well kept that they myght nat passe; but when they herd howe the prince had taken the French kyng at the batayle of Poycters, they were gladde and brake up their journey, bycause the duke of Lancastre and sir Phyllyppe of Naver wolde go into Englelde: and so they dyd; and they sende sir Godfray of Harcourt to saynt Savyours le Vycom to kepe ther fronter warre.

Nowe let us speke of the Frenche kynges thre sonnes, Charles, Loys, and John, who were returned fro the besynes at Poycters; they were right yong of age and of counsell; in them was but small recovery, nor ther was none of them that wolde take on hym the governance of the realme of France: also the lorde, knyghtes and squyers, such as fledde fro the batayle, were so hated and blamed of the commons of the realme, that scant they durst abyde in any good towne. Than all the prelates of holy church beyng in France, bysshoppes, abbottes, and all other noble lorde and knyghtes, and the provost of the marchantes, the burgesses of Paris, and the counsellors of other gode towne, they all assembled at Parys; and there they wolde ordayne howe the realme shulde be governed till the kyngye were delievered out of prison. Also they wold knowe fardermore what was become of the great treasure that had ben leyved in the realme by deames, maltotes, subsidies, forgynge of moneys, and in all other extorceyons, wherby the people hath ben
Syr John Froissart

overlayd and troubled, and the soudyours yvell payed, and the realme yvell kept and defendedde; but of all this there were none that could gyve accomp. Than they agreed that the prelates shuld chose out twelue persone amonge theym, who shulde have power by theym and by all the clergy to ordayne and to advye all thynges covenable to be done; and the lorde and knyghtes to chuse other twelue among them of their most sargent and discrete persone, to determinyne all causes; and the burgesses to chose other twelue for the commons; the whiche sixe and thrytie persons shulde oftentymes mete at Parys and ther to common and to ordayne for all causes of the realme, and every matter to be brought to theym; and to these thre estates all other prelates, lorde and commons shulde obey. So these persone were chosen out, but in the begynninge there were dyverse in this electyon that the duke of Normandy was nat content withall, nor his counsayle.

Firste, these thre estates defended evermore forgynege of money; also they requyred the duke of Normandy that he wolde aryst the chaunceler of the kyng his father, the lorde Robert of Lorreyes, and the lorde Robert of Bucy, and dyvers other maisters of the countes, and other counsaylours of the kynges, to the entent that they might make a trewe account of that they had taken and leyed in the realme and by their counsaylles. When these maisters and counsaylours herde of this mater, they departed out of the realme into other countreis, to abyde there tyll they herde other tidynes.

CAP. CLXXI

Howe the thre estates sende men of warre agaynst the lorde Godfray of Harecourt.

These thre estates ordayned and stablyshed in their names, receyvers of all male totes, deames, subsidyes and other rightes pertayning to the kyng and to the realme; and they made newe money to be forges of fyne golde, called moutons; also they wolde gladly that the kyng of Naver had ben delyverd out of prison, whereas he was at...
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXXI

the castell of Crouvence, in Cambresis. It was thought by
many of the three estates, that the realm of France should
be the more stronger and the better defended. If he would
be true to the realm: for they saw well there were then
but fewe nobles to maintain the realm: for they were
not all taken and slaine at the batell of Pouyten.
Therne they required the duke of Normandy to deliver his
son out of prison, for they said howe they thought he
had great wrong to be kept prisoner for they wisseth why.
The duke answered, and saide, howe he durst not take on
him his deliverance, for the kyng his father putte hym in
prison he coude not tell for what cause. The same season
there came tidynes to the duke and to the three estates
that the lorde Godfray of Harcourt made sure warre in
Normandy, and oversaw the countre two or three tymes in
a weke, somtyme to the subbarbes of Cambre, of saynt Louise,
Evreux, and Constances. Than the duke and the three
estates ordyned a company of men of armes, of thre
countrey, and fives hundredes of other, and made
four capitans, the lorde of Ravenall, the lorde of Kenney,
the lorde of Ryvell, and the lorde of Frisnyll. These men
of warre departed fro Parys and went to Howan, and there
they assembled all partes; there were dyvers knyghtes
of Arthoys and of Vermandoys, as the lorde of Kennekey,
the lorde Loyes of Hanefkell, the lorde Edward of Rouay,
the lorde John Penes, the lorde Ingram of Hedyn and
dyer others: and also of Normandy ther were many expert
men of armes; and these lorde ride to Constances and
there made ther garyson.

CAP. CLXXII

Of the batell of Constances bytwene the lorde
Godfray of Harcourt and the lorde Loyes
of Ravenall.

WHAN the lord Godfray of Harcourt, who was a
right hardy knyght and a couragious, knewe
that the Frenchmen were come to the cyte of
Constances he assembled togyder as many men of warr as
he coude gett, archers and other, and sayd, howe he wolde ryde and lyke on the Frenchmen, and so departed fro saynt Savoyr le Vycont; he had about a seyvn hundred men one and other. The same day the Frenchmen also rode forth and sende before them their curroures, who brought them worde agayne that they had sene the Naveroyse; also sir Godfray had sende his currous, who had also well aviewed the Frenchmen and sawe their baners and penons and what nombre they were, and retourned and shewed it to sir Godfray, who sayd, Synth we se our enemies we wolle fight with theym; than he sette his archers before and sette his company in good order. And whan sir Loys of Ravenall sawe their demeanour, he caused his company to alyght afoye and to paves them with their targes agaynst the archers, and commaundde that none shulde go forwarde without he commaunded. The archers began to aproch and shote feerly: the Frenchmen who were well armed and payvysshed suffred their shotte, it dyd theym no great hurt: so the Frenchmen stode styll tyll the archers had spent all their arowes; than they cast away their bowes and resorted backe to their men of armes who were aranged alonge by a hedge and sir Godfray with his baner before them. Than the Frenche archers began to shote and gathered up the arrowes that had ben shot at them before, and also their men of armes began feerly to aproche; there was a sore fyght whan they mette hande to hande, and sir Godfrayes fotemen kepte none array but were soone dis-conffyted. Than sir Godfray sagely withdrue hymselfe downe into a wyng closed with hedges: whan the Frenchmen sawe that, they all alyghted afoye and devysed which way they might entre; they went all about to fynde a way and sir Godfray was redy ever to defende; ther were many hurt and slayne of the Frenchmen or they coulde entre at their pleasure; finally they entred and than there was a sore fyght and many a man overthrown: and sir Godfrayes men kepte no good array nor dyd nat as they had promysed; moost part of theym fledde. Whan sir Godfray sawe that, he sayd to himselfe howe he had rather there be slayne than to be taken by the Frenchmen: than he toke his axe in his handes and set fast the one legge before thother to stonde
the more surely, for his one legge was a lytell croked, but he was strong in the armes; ther he fought valiantly and long, non durst well abyde his strokes: than two Frenchmen mounted on their horses and ranne bothe with their speares at ones at hym, and so bare hym to the yerth; than other that were afote, came with their swerdes and strake hym into the body under his harneys so that ther he was slayne; and all suche as were with hym were nygh all slayne and taken, and such as scaped retournd to saynt Savoyur the Vycount. This was about the feest of saynt Martyne, in wynter, the yere of our lorde M.CCC.Ivi.

CAP. CLXXIII

Howe the prince conveyed the Frenche kyng fro Burdeux into Englande.

AFTER the deth of this knight, sir Godfray of Harcourt, the Frenchmen retournd to Constances with their prisoners and pillage, and anone after they went into France to the duke of Normandy, who as than was called regent of France, and to the thre estates, who receyved them right honourably. So fro thensforth saynt Savoyur le Vycont was Englyshe and all the landes\(^1\) pertayning to sir Godfray of Harcourt, for he had solde it to the kyng of England after his dyscease and disheryed the lorde Loys of Harcourt his nephue, bycause he wolde nat take his part. Assone as the kyng of Englynde herde tidynes of the deth of the lorde Godfray of Harcourt, he was sorie therof; than he sent incontynent men of armes, knyghtes, squyres and archers, mo than CCC. by see to go and take possessyon for hym of saynt Savoyur le Vycont, the which was worth xxx. M. frankes by yere, and made captayne of those landes the lorde Johan Lyle. The thre estates all that season studied on the ordinance of the realme of France, and it was all governed by them. The same wynter the prince of Wales and suche of Englynde as were with hym at Burdeux ordayned for shyppes, to convey the Frenche kyng and his sonne and all other prisoners into Englande; and whan the tyme of his departure aproched, than he commaundeth
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the lorde Dalbert, the lorde of Musydent, the lorde de Laspere, the lorde of Punyres, and the lorde of Rosen to kepe the contra there, tyll his retourne agayn. Than he toke the see, and certayne lorde of Gascoyne with hym; the Frenche kyng was in a vessell by hymself, to be the more at his ease, accompaned by two hundred men of armes and two thousand archers: for it was shewed the prince that the there estates by whom the realme of France was governed had layed in Normandy and Crotoy two great armyes, to the entent to mete with hym and to gette the Frenche kyng out of his handes, if they might; but ther were no suche that apered, and yet thei were on the see xi. dayes, and on the xii. day they aryved at Sandwych. Than they yssued out of their shyppe and lay there all that night, and taryed there two dayes to refreshe them; and on the thirde day they rode to Canterbury. When the kyng of Engelande knewe of their commynge, he commaunded them of London to prepare them and their cyte to receyve suche a man as the Frenche kyng was. Than they of London arrayed themselfe by companyes and the chiefe maisters clothynge dyfferent fro the other; at saynt Thomas of Caunterbury the Frenche kyng and the prince made their offerynges and there taryed a day, and than rode to Rochester and taryed there that day, and the nexte day to Dartforde and the fourth day to London, wher they were honourably receyved, and so they were in every good towne as they passed. The Frenche kyng rode through London on a whyte courser, well aperelled, and the prince on a lytell blacke hobby by hym: thus he was conveyed along the cyte tyll he came to the Savoy, the which house pertayned to the herytage of the duke of Lancastre; there the Frenche kyng kept his house a long season, and thyder came to se hym the kyng and the quene often tymes and made hym gret feest and chere. Anone after by the commaundement of pope Innocent the sixt there came into Engelande the lorde Taylleran, cardynall of Pyergort, and the lorde Nyhcholas, cardynall of Dargell; they treated for a peace bytwene the two kynges, but they coude bring nothyng to effect, but at last by good meanes they procured a truse bytwene the two kynges and
THE CRONYCLE OF

all their servaunters, to endure till the fest of saynt Johan Baptyst in the yere of our Lorde God MCCC.lix. and at this tyme was excepted the lorde Phillype of Navere and his alyes, the countesse of Mountfort and the daughter of Brezayme. Anone after, the French kynge was removed to the Savoy to the castell of Wynmore, and all his householde and went a huntynge and a haukyng ther about at the kynge's pleasure, and the lorde Phillyp his son with hym: and the other prisoners abode stilly at Londres, and went to visit the kynge at their pleasure, and were receyved all omely at their luythes.

CAP. CLXXIII

Howe the kynge of Scottes was delyvered out of prison.

Ye have herde here before, howe kynge Davyd of Scotlnde was taken and was prisoner in Englande more than ix. yere; and anone after the truse was concluded bytwene Englannde and Fraunce, the two foresayd cardynals with the bysshoppes of saynt Andrews in Scotlnde fell in truyty for the delyverance of the kynge of Scotettes. The truyty was in suche maner that the kynge of Scotettes shulde never after arme hymselfe agaynst the kynge of Englannde in his realme, nor counsayle nor consent to any of his subjetes to arm them, nor to greve nor make warre agaynst Englannde; and also the kynge of Scotettes after his retourne into his realme shulde put to all his payne and diligence that his men shulde age that the realme of Scotlnde shuld holde in fee, and do hommage to the kynge of Englannde; and if the realme wolde nat agree thereto, yet the kynge of Scotettes to swere solomnyly to kepe good peace with the kynge of Englannde and to bynde hymselfe and his realme to pay within x. yere after, fyve hundred thousands nobuls; and at the somonyng of the kynge of Englannde to sende gode pleages and hostages, as the erle of Duglas, therselues of Moret, the erle of Marc, the erle of Surlant, the erle of Fye, the baron of Versey, and sir Wylyam of Caumoysse, and all these to abyde in Englannde as prisoner and hostagers for the kynge their lorde unto the tyme that the sayd
Syr John Froissart

Payment of money be full content and payed. Of this
ordynance and bondes there were made instrumentes pub-
lykes and letters patentes sayled by bothe kynges: and
than the kyng of Scottes departed and went into his realme,
and his wyfe quene Isabell, suster to the kyng of Englande
with hym; and he was honourably recyved in his realme,
and he went and lay at saynt Johns towne, on the ryver of
Tay tyll his castell of Edenborough was newe prepared.

CAP. CLXXV

Howe the duke of Lancastre layed siege
to Reynes.

Aboute the myddes of May in the yere of our Lorde
God M.CCC.Ixii. the duke of Lancastre made
in Breten a great army of Englysshmen and of
Bretons in the ayde of the countesse of Montfort and of
her yonge sonne: they were in nombre a thousande men of
armes well apparell, and v. hundred of other with archers.
And they departed on a day fro Hanybont, and went forthe
brennyng and exilyng the contrey of Bretayne, and so came
before the good cyte of Reynes and layed siege therto and
made many assautes and lytell good dyde: for within was
the Vycount of Rowan, the lorde de la Wall,1 sir Charles of
Digen,2 and dyvers other; and also there was a yonge
bachelar called Bertrande of Glesquyne, who duryng the
siege fought with an Englysshman called sir Nycholas
Dagorne;3 and that batayle was takene thre courses with
a speare, thre strokes with an axe, and thre with a dagger:
and ech of these kynghtes bare themselfe so valyantly that
they departed fro the felde without any damage, and they
were well regarded bothe of theym within and they with-
out. The same season the lorde Charles de Bloyes was in
the countrey and pursewed sore the regent of Fraunce
desyring hym to sende men of warr to reysye the siege at
Reynes, but the regent had suche busynes with the maters
of the realme that he dydde nothynge in that cause: so the
siege lay styll before Reynes.

395
How a knyght of the county of Evreuse called si Wyllyam of Granvyll wan the cytie and castel of Evreux the which as than was French, for the Frenche kyng had won it fro the Naveroy; as ye have herde before.

A KNIGHT named the lorde of Granvyll pertayning to the kyng of Naver, bothe by fayth and other gretly it displeased hym the prisonment of the kyng of Naverre, and also it was right dyspleasant to some of the burgesses of Evreux, but they coude nat amende it bycause the castell was their enemy: this lorde dwelt a two leages fro the cyte, and often tymes he resorted to the cite to a burgese house that in tyme before ever loved well the kyng of Naver. When this lorde came to this burgesse house he wolde eate and drinke with hym, and speke and commen of many maters and specially of the kyng of Naver, and of his takyng, wherwith they wer nothing content: and on a tyme this lorde sayd to the burges, If ye woll agree with me I shal on a day wyn agayne this cyte, bourge and castell to the behofe of the kyng of Naver. Howe may that be, sayd the burges, for the captayn of the castell is so gode a Frenchman that he woll never agre therto; and without the castell ye can do nothyng for the castell over maistreth the cytie. Wel, quoth the lorde Wyllyam, I shall shewe you; first, it behoveth that ye gette of your acorde thre or foure other burgesses, and provyde redy in your houses certayne men well armed, and I shall warrant you on my peryll that ye shall entre into the castell without danger by a subtylitie that I wyll compase. This burgesse dyde so moche in a briefe tymbe that he dyd gette a hundred burgesses of his opinyon: this lorde of Granvyll came in and out into the cyte at his pleasure without any suspectomy, for he was never in harnes with sir Philyp of Naverre in no journey that he made, bycause his lande lay nere to the cytie of Evreux. And also the Frenche kyng whan he wan the
Syr John Froissart

cytie, he caused all the landes there aboute to be bounde
to hym els he wolde have taken them to his owne use; so
the Frenche kyng had the country but the herites of the
people were still Naveroys. Also if kyng John had ben in
Fraunce as he was in Engelande he durst not have done as
he dyd: but he thought the maters of France were in sore
trouble, and also perceyved howe the thre estates wer well
mynded to the delyverance of the kyng of Naver: and whan
he saw all his mater redy and well forward, and that the
burgesses of his opynyon were well advised what they shulde
do, he armed hymselfe with secrete armour, and dyd on a
sloppe above and a cloke above that, and under his arme he
bore a short batell axe, and with hym went a variet who
was privy to his mynd. And so he came walkyng before the
castell gate as he had often tymes done before: he walked
up and downe so often that at last the capitayne came
downe and opyned the wycket as he was wont to do, and
stode and loked about hym; and whan sir Wylyam sawe
hym he went by lytell and lytell to hym and saluted hym
courtesly: the capitayne stode still and saluted hym agayne,
and whan they came nere togyder they began to speke of
dyverse maters, and sir Wylyam demaunded of hym if he
had herde any newe tidyngez oute of Fraunce. The capi-
tayne who was desyrous to here newes, sayd, Sir, I herze
none, I pray you, if you have herde any lette me here some
parte of them; With a right good wyll, quoth the lorde
Wylyam; sir, it is sayd in Fraunce that the kyng of
Denmarke and the kyng of Irelande ar alyed togyder and
hath sworne to go forth to togyder, and nat to retourne
agayne into their countrys theyl they have distrroyed all
England, and have brought agayne the Frenche kyng to
Parys for they ar on the see mo than a C. M. men; and the
Englyssmen be in suche doute of them that they wot nat
what to do, for ther is an olde sayeng among them that
the Danes shulde distrroy them. The capitayne demaunded
howe he knewe those tidynges; Sir, sayde he, a knyght of
Flaunders dyd write this to me for certayne, and he sent me
with the letter the goodlyest chesse men than ever I sawe;
he found out that mocke bycause he knewe well that the
capitayne loved well the game of the chesse. Than the
THE CRONYCLE OF

capitayne sayde, Sir, I pray you lette me se theym. I shall sende for them, sayd sir Wylyam, on the condycion that ye wull play a game with me for the wyne; and than he say to his varlette, Go thy way and fetch me the chessem and bring them hyther to the gate. The varlet departe and the capitayne and sir Wylyam entred into the first gate; than the capitayne closed the wycket after them with a bolt and locked it nat; thanne sir Wylyam sayde, Opy the seconde gate, ye may well ynowh without any dange. The capitayne opyned the wycket and dyd suffre sir Wylyam to entre to se the castell, and he entred with hym. Than the varlet then went streyght to the burgesses, who had me redy in harnes in their houses, and he caused them to come harde to the castell gate, and than he sowned a lytell horn as it was devisd before that he shulde do; whane the lord Wylyam herde the horne, he sayde to the capitayne, Let us go out of the seconde gate for my varlet is commynge. Than sir Wylyam passed the wycket and stode stilly without and the capitayne that wolde a passed out after hym sett out his fote and stouped downe and put out his heed than the lorde Wyliam toke the axe that he had under his arme and strake the capitayne suche a stroke, that he clave his heed, and so fyll downe deed on the groundysyll; than the lorde Wylyam went to the first gate and opyned his Whane the watcheman of the castell herde the horne he had great marveyle, for ther was a commandement gyven in the towne, that on payne of dethe none shulde sowne any horne; than he loked and sawe men in harnes come ronne nyng towards the castell gate; than he cryd Treason. Than they within the castell came to the gate and were sore abashed when they sawe it opyn and the capitayne deed overthwart the gate, and the lorde Willyam with his axe in his handes to defende the entre. Than incoyntent ther came suche as were apoynted to ayde the lord Wylyam, and entred in at the first gate and so after the seconde gate, and drove backe the soudyers and dyvers were taken and slaye and so entred into the castell. Thus by this maner was the strong castell of Evreux wro ayagne; and than incoyntent the cytie yelded up and put out all the Frenchmen, and than they send for the lord
SYR JOHN FROISSART

Philyp of Naver, who was as than newly come out of Englende, and thryder he came and made ther his soverayne garyson to make war aygynst the good countrey of Normandy; and with hym was sir Robert Canoll,1 sir James Physen, sir Fryquet of Friquant, the bascle of Marnell, the lorde Jouell, sir Fondrigas and other, who dyd after moche myschief in France as ye shall here herafter.

CAP. CLXXVII

Of the companions wherof the archpreest was chiefe, and howe he was honoured in Avygon.

In the same season ther was a knyght called sir Arnold Cervoll,2 and most comonely named archpreest, he as-3 Canoll P. sembled togyder a great company of men of war of dyvers contrees suche as lacked wages in other places: after the takyng of the Frenche kyngye, they wyse nat where than to wynne any thynge in Fraunce: so first they went towards Providence and toke byforce many stronge townes and castelles, and robbed all the countrey to Avygonne, and they had none other capitayne but this knyght the archpreest: the pope Innocent the sixt, and the cardynalles beynge at Avygon had of that company great dout, and kep there men day and nyght in harnesse, and made good watche. Whan this archpreest and his company had robbed all the countre, the pope and the clergy fell in treaty with them, and so on a sure aropyntment they came to Avygonne and they were as honourably receyved as thoghe there had ben a kynges sonne; and often tymes this knyght dyneyd with the pope and with the cardynals, and they had pardon of all their synnes, and at their departyng they had in rewarde xl. thousande crownes for hym and his company; so some of his company departed, but styll the archpreest kept his company togyder.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXXVIII

Of another sort of companyons wherof Ruffy a Walsshman was capitayne.

Also in the same season there rose another company of men of warr of all contreys gathered togydes and they kept bytwene the ryver of Lyr and the ryver of Sayne, wherfore none durste go nor ryde bytwene Parys and Orleunce, nor bytwene Parys and Montargis every man fledde to Parys and the poore men of the countrie fled to Orleance. These companyons made among them a capitayne, called Ruffyn; they made hym knight, and by meanes of robbery and pyllage, he was marveylous rich. Some day they wolde ryde nere to Parys, another day to Orlyaunce, another tyme to Chartres; there was no towne nor forteesse, savynge suche as were stronge and well kept, but was by them robbed and overron, as saynt Arnolde, Gallardon, Broumalk, Aloes, Estampes, Chastres, Montlecher, Plouyyers, Ingastynoes, Myly, Larchant, Chastellon, Montarges, Isyeres, and dyvers other great townes that it was marveyll to reherse them; they rode in and out about in the contre by xx. by xxx. and by xl. and they founde no let. Also in Normandy by the see syde there was a gretter company of robbers, Englysshe and Naveroys, and sir Robert Canoll was chefe of them, and by suche meanes he wanne townes, castels and fortresses, without any resistence: this sir Robert Canoll had longe used lyke maner, he was well worthless a hundred thousand crownes and kept ever with hym many soudyours at his wages; they pylled and robbed so well that many were gladde to folowe hym.
Syr John Froissart

Cap. CLXXIX

Howe the provost of the marchantes of Parys slewe thre knyghtes in the regentes chambre.

In this season that the thre estates thus ruled, there rose in dyvers countreys certayne manere of people callying themselfe companions, and they made warr to every man. The noble men of the realme of France and the prelates of holy Churche began to waxe wery of the rule and ordynance of the thre estates, and so gave up their rule and suffred the provost of the marchantes to medylyl with some of the burgesses of Parys, bycause they medied farther thane they were pleased withall. So on a day the regent of Fraunce was in the palays of Parys with many noble men and prelates with hym: the provost than assembled a great nombre of commons of Parys, suche as were of his opinion, and all they ware hattes of one colour, to thentent to be knowen. The provost came to the palays with his men about hym and entred into the dukes chambre, and ther eagerly he desyred hym that he wolde take on hym the medyling of the bussyngesse of the realme of France, that the realme, the which pertayned to hym by enherytance, might be better kept, and that suche companions as goeth about the realme wastyng, roblyng and pyllyng the same myght be subdued. The duke answered howe he wolde gladly entende therto, yf he had wherwith, and said They that receyve the profet and the rightes pertayning to the realme ought to do it; yf it be done or nat I report me. So they multiplyed suche wordes bytwene them that thre of the greatest of the dukes counsayle were ther slayne so nere hym, that his clothes were all blody with their blode and he himselfe in great peryll: but there was sette one of their hattes on his heed and he was fayne there to pardon the deth of his thre knyghtes, two of armes and the thyrd of the lawe, the one called the lorde Robert of Clermont, a ryght noble man, another the lorde of Conflans, and the knyght of the lawe, the lorde Symonde of Bucy.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXXX

Howe the kyng of Navere came out of prison.

AFTER this forsaed aventure, certayne knyghtes, the lorde John of Pequigny and other, under the comfort of the provost of Parys and of other counsaylours of the good towne, came to the stronge castel of Alleres in Payleull, in Picardy, where the kyng of Navere was in prison under the kepynge of the lorde Trystrane Boyse. They brought to theym that kept the castell sure tokens that they had the king of Navere delyvered into their handes, for the captayn was not as than there; and they brought hym with great joye into the cytie of Amyens, where he was well receyved, and lyghted at a chanons house who loved hym entierly, called Guy Kyrrecte; and the kyng taryed there a fyftene dayes tyl he had so provyded hymselfe that he was assured of the duke of Normandy than regent of France: for the provost of the marchantes of Parys hadde gette hym peace of the duke and of the kyng of Parys. And than the kyng of Navere was brought to Parys by the lorde John of Pequigny and by other burgesses of Amyens, wher as every man was gladd to se hym and the duke made hym great feest and chere, for it behoved hym so to do, for the provost and his sect exhorted hym therfor the duke dissembled for the pleasur of the provost and other of Parys.

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe the kyng of Naverre preched solemly in Parys.

WHAN the kyng of Navere had bene a certayn tyme in Parys, on a day he assembled togyder prelates, knyghtes and clerkes of the univeritie, and ther he shewed openly among them in Latyn in the presence of the duke of Normandy his complaynt an
SYR JOHN FROISSART

greffe, and yvolence done to hym wrongfully without right
or reason, and sayde howe there was none that ought to
dout in hym, but that he wolde lyve and dye in the defence
of the realme of Fraunce and the crowne therof, as he was
bounde to do: for he was extraght of father and mother
of the right lygne of Fraunce, and sayde, if he wolde chalenge
the realme and crowne of Fraunce, he coulde shewe by rytght
howe he was more nerer therto than the kynge of Engelande.
His sermon and langage was so pleasant that he was greatly
prayed, and so lytell and lytell he entred into the favoure
of them of Parys, so that he was better beloved there than
the regent the duke of Normandy, and also with dyvers
other cites in the realme of France; but whatsoever semblant
the provost and they of Parys made to the kynge of Naver,
for all that the lorde Phylippe of Naver wolde never trust
them, nor wolde nat come to Parys, for he alwayes sayd
that in a comynalte, ther was never no certentie, but finallly
shame, rebuke, and dyshonour.

CAP. CLXXXII

Of the beginnyng of the rysing of the commons
called Jaquere in Beauvosyn.

A NONE after the delyveraunce of the kynge of Naver,
ther began a meravelouse trybulacon in the realme
of France, as in Beauvosyn, in Bry, on the ryver of
Marne in Lemoys; and about Seossers; for certayne people of the common vyllages, without any heed or rulre assembled togyder in Beauvosyn. In the beginnyng they past nat a hundred in nombre: they sayd howe the noble men of the realme of Fraunce, knyghtes and squyers, shamed the realme, and that it shulde be a great wylth to dystroy them all, and ech of them sayd it was true, and sayd all with one voyce, Shame have he that dothe nat his power to distroy all the gentylmen of the realme. Thus they gathered togyder without any other counsayle, and without any armure, savyn with staves and knyves, and so went to the house of a knyght dwellynge therby, and brake up his house and slewe the knyght and the lady and all his chyldren, great
and small, and brent his house. And than they went to
another castel, and toke the knight therof and bounde hym
fast to a stake, and than vyolated his wyfe and his daughter
before his face and than slewe the lady and his daughter
and all his other children, and than slewe the knyght by
great tourment and brent and beate downe the castell. And
so they dyd to dyvers other castelles and good houses; and
they multiplied so that they were a six thousand, and ever
as they went forwarde they encreased, for suche lyke as they
were fell ever to them, so that every gentylman fledde fro
them and tooke their wyves and children with them, and
fledde x. or xx. leages of to be in suretie, and left their
houses voyde and their goodes therin.

These myschevous peple thus assembled without capi-
tayne or armour, robbed, brent and slewe all gentylmen
that they coude lay handes on, and forced and ravysshed
ladies and damosels, and dyd suche shamefull dedes that no
humayne creature ought to thynke on any suche, and be
that dyd most myschife was most prased with them
and greatest maister. I dare nat write the horryble dedes
that they dyd to ladyes and damoselles; amongst other they
slewe a knight and after dyd put hym on a broche, and
rosted hym at the fyre in the syght of the lady his wyfe and
his children; and after that the lady had ben enforced and
ravished with a x. or xii. thei made her perforce to eate
of her husband, and after made her to dy an yvell deth and
all her children. They made among them a kynge, one of
Cleremont in Beauvoysyn; they chose hym that was most
ungracyoust of all other and they called hym kynge Jaques
Goodman, and so therby they were called companyons of
the Jaquery. They destroyed and brent in the countrey
of Beauvoysyn, about Corby, Amyense, and Montyddier, mo
than threscore good houses and strong castelles. In lyke
maner these unhappy people were in Bry and Arthoyes, so
that all the ladyes, knyghtes and squyers of that contrey
were fayne to flye away to Meaulx in Bry, as well the duches
of Normandy and the duches of Orlyauce as dyvers other
ladyes and damosels, or els they had ben vyolated and after
murdered. Also ther were a certayne of the same ungracyous
peple bytwene Parys and Noyon and bytwene Parys and
Syr John Froissart

Soyssons, and all about in the lande of Coucy, in the countie of Valois, bytwene Brieche and Loan, Noyon and Soyssons. There were brent and distroyed mo than a hundred castelles and good houses of knyghtes and squyers in that country.

CAP. CLXXXIII

Howe the provost of the marchantes of Parys caused walles to be made about the cytie of Parys.

Than the gentylmen of Beauvosyn, of Corboys, of Vermandoys and of other landes, whereas these myschevous peple were conversant, sawe the woodnesse amongst them, they sent for socours to their frendes into Flanders, to Brabant, to Heynault, and to Behayne; so ther came fro all parties; and so all these gentylmen strangers with them of the countrey assembled togyder and dyde sette on these people wher they might fynde them, and slewe and hanged them upon trees by heapes. The kynge of Naver on a day slewe of them mo than thre thousande bysyde Cleremount in Beauvosyn. It was tyme to take them up, for and they hadde ben all togyder assembled they were mo than a hundred thousande; and whan they were demaunded why they dyd so yvell dedes, they wolde answere and say they coude nat tell, but that they dyd as they sawe other do, thynkyng therby to have distroyed all the nobles and gentylmen of the worlde. In the same season the duke of Normandy departed fro Parys, and was in dout of the kynge of Naver and of the provost of the marchauntes and of his sect, for they were all of one acorde. He rode to the brige of Charenton on the ryver of Marne, and ther he made a great sommons of gentylmen, and than defyed the provost of the marchauntes and all his ayders. Than the provost was in dout of hym, that he wolde in the nyght tyme come and overron the cytie of Parys, the which as than was nat closed. Than he sette workemen a worke as many as he coude gette, and made great dykes all about Parys and began walles and gates; he had the space of one
THE CRONYCLE OF

hole yere a thre hundred workmen contynually working.
It was a gret dede to furnyshe an arme and to close with
defence suche a cytie as Parys; surely it was the best dede
that ever any provost dyd ther, for els it had ben after
dyers tymes overron and robbed by dyvers occasyons.

C A P. C L X X X I I I

Of the batayle at Meaulx in Bry, where the companyons of the Jaquery were disconfyted by therle of Foix and the captall of Buz.

"N the season whyle these ungracious people raygned,
there came out of Pruce the erle of Foyx and the captall of Buz his cosyn; and in ther way they herde, as they shulde have entred into Fraunce of the great myschefe that fell among the noblemen by these unhappy people: and in the cytie of Meaulx was the duches of Normandy and the duches of Orleunce, and a thre hundred other ladyes and damosels, and the duke of Orleance also. Than the two sayd knyghtes agreed to go and se these ladyes and to confort them to their powers; howbeit the captall was Englysshe, but as than it was truse bytwene the two kynges:
they had in their company a threscore speares. And when they were come to Meaulx in Bry, they were welcome to the ladyes and damosels ther: and when those of the Jaquery understode that ther was at Meaulx suche a nombre of ladyes, yong damoselles and noble chyldren, than they assembled togyder and with them they of Valoys, and so came to Meaulx. And also certayne of Parys that herd therof went to them, so that they were in all a nyne thousand and
daly mo resorted to them: so they came to the gates of the towne of Meaulx and the peple of the towne opyned the gates and suffred them to entre, so that all the streates were full of them to the market place, whereas these noble ladyes were lodged in a stronge place closed about with the ryver of Marne: there came such a nombre agaynst them that the ladyes were sore afayred. Than these two knyghtes and their company came to the gate of the markette place and yssued out and sette on those vilayns, who were but
Syr John Froissart

Yvell armed, therel of Foys baner and the duke of Orleance, and the capitale penon: and whan these vilayns saw these men of warr well appareled yssued out to defende the place, the formast of them began to recule backe, and the gentylmen pursued them with their speares and swerdes; and whan the felde the great strokes, they reculed all at ones and fell for hast ech on other. Than all the noble men yssued out of the baryers and anone wan the place, and entred in among their ennemyes and beate them downe by heapes and slewe them lyke beestes and chased them all out of the towne, and slewe so many that thei were wery, and made many of them by heapes to fly into the ryver. Briefely, that day they slewe of them mo than seyvn thousand, and none had scaped if they wolde a folowed the chase any farther. And whan these men of armes returned agayne to the towne, they sette fyre thereon and brende it clene and all the vilayns of the towne that they coude close therin, bycause they tooke part with the Jaquery. After this disconfyture thus done at Meaulx they never assembled agayne togyder after, for the yong Ingram, lord of Coucy had about hym certayne men of warre, and they ever slewe theym as they myght mete with theym without any mercy.

Cap. CLXXXV

Howe Parys was besieged by the duke of Normandy, regent of Fraunce.

A none after this adventyre, the duke of Normandy assembled all the noble men togyder that he coude gette as well of the realm as of the empyrue for his wages; so that he had a thre thousande speares, and so went and layed siege to Parys towarde saynt Antoyne along by the ryver of Sayne, and was lodgde hymselfe at saynt More and his men ther about, and every day they ran skirmysshing to the walles of Parys. And somtyme the duke lay at Charenton and another season at saynt More so that nothyng came to Parys on that syde nother by lande nor by water, for the duke caused bothe the ryvers of Sayne and Marne to be surely kept and brende all the villages about Parys.
THE CRONYCLE OF
suche as were nat closed, the better therby to chase theym of Parys; and if Parys had nat than ben fortifed with walles and dykes it had bene destroyd: none durst go into Parys nor go out for feare of the dukes men rode on bothe sydes the ryver of Sayne at his pleasure; and were none to resyst them. The provost kept styll in the kyng of Naverr and toke hym counsayle; and commons day and nyght dyd worke on the defence of cytie and kept a great nombre of men of warre, Naverr and Englyshe archers and other companions. There in the cytie certayne well disposed persons, as Jo. Mayllart and Symonde his brother and dyverse of the lynage, that were sore displeased of the duke of Normandy yvell wyll; but the provost had so drawn to his opyn all maner of men, that none durst say contrary to him without he were slayne without mercy. The kyng of Nav er seyng the varyunce bytwene them of Parys and the duke of Normandy thought and supposed that the mater could nat long endure in that state and he had no great tray to the commontie of Parys, and so he departed himself curtesly as he myght and went to saynt Denyece, and thos he kepte with hym a good nombre of soudyers at the wyse of them of Parys. The duke thus lay a sixe wekes at Charenton, and the kyng of Naverre at saynt Denyece; the pilled and este up the countre on every syde: bytwene these parties entreated for a peace, the archbyshoppe Senus, the byshoppe of Ausser, the byshoppe of Beaumo the lorde of Momorency, the lorde of Fynes, and the lorde of saynt Venant; and so often they went bytwene the part and so sagely demeaned their busynessee, that the kyng Naverre with his owne good wyll without constreynt went to Charenton to the duke of Normandy and excused his selfe of that he was had in suspecte; first, of the deth of the two knightes and of maister Symonde Bucy, and of the dispyte that the provost had done to hym in the paleys of Parys. And ther he sware that it was unknowne to him and there promyed the duke to stycke with hym in go and yvell, and there peace was made bytwene them: a the kyng of Navere sayde howe he wolde cause them Parys to make amends for that they had done. The du
SYR JOHN FROISSART

was content that the commons of Parys shulde have peace
soo that he myght have the provost and xii. other burgesses,
suche as he wolde chose within Parys to correct theym at
his pleasure. All these thynges agreed, the kyng of Naver
retourned to saynt Denyce and the duke went to Meaulx in
Bry and gave leave to all his men of warre to depart. Cer-
tayne burgesses of Parys suche as hadde holpen to make the
sayd treaty desyred the duke to come to Parys, sayeng howe
they shulde do hym all the honoure they myght. The duke
answered and sayd he wolde kepe the peace mad and that
he had sworne unto without any brekyng of his part; but to
entre into Parys surely (he sayd) he wolde never tyll he had
satisfactyon of theym that had dyspleased hym. The provost
of the marchantes and his sect often tymes visityd the kyng
of Naverre at saynt Denyce, and shewed hym howe they were
in the indygnacon of the duke of Normandy for his sake,
bycause they delyvered hym out of prison and brought hym
to Parys; theryfore they sayd to hym, Sir, for Goddessake have
no great truste in the duke nor in his consayle. The kyng
sayd, Certaynly frendes ye shall have none yvell, but my part
shal be therin, and seyng ye have as nowe the governaunce
of Parys, I wolde consayle you to provyde yourselfe of golde
and sylver, so that if ye have nede by that ye may ever
helpe yourselfe, and hardely sende it hyder to saynt Denyce,
on the trust of me, and I shall kepe hit well, and shall al-
ways entetayne men of warre secretly, that if ye have nede
shall make warre agaynst your enemys. So thus after this
the provost two tymes a weke sende ever to saynte Denyce
two somers charged with floreyns to the kyng of Naver,
who receyved the money with gladd e cheere.

CAP. CLXXXVI

Of the Parisyens that were slayne at saynt Clude
by thenglyshmen that had bene sodyers in Paris.

ALL this season there were in Parys a great nombre of
men of warre, Englyshe and Naveroyse, retayned in
wages by the provost and by the commons of the
cytie to ayde them agaynst the duke of Normandy, who
THE CRONYCLE OF

bare themselfe right well the warr duryng; but whan peace was made bytwene the Parisyens and the duke, the soudyres departed fro Parys and set abode there styll; suche as departed went to the kynge Naver who receyved them into wages; ther abode styll Parys a thre hundred; they sported them and spent mereely their money. On a day a stryfe fell bytwene themen and they of Parys and ther were slayne of them a threescore, wherof the provost blamed greatly them of the cy Hoyewbe to apease the commons he trowe mo than a hundred and fyltie and put theym in prison in thre gate and sayd to the commons howe they shulde all be slayne and corrected acording to their trespaces; wherby the commons were apeased. But whan nyght came the provost caused them to be delveryed out of prison, and put them out of the towe of their lybertie; and so they went saynt Denyce to the kyng of Naver and he receyved a thre hundred and thre from them. In the next mornynge, when they Parys knewe the delveryraunce of the Englyssemen out of prison, they were greatly displeased with the provost; but he lyke a wyse man dysassembled the mater tyll it was forgotten. These Englysse and Naveroyse soudyres, when they were toguyder at saynt Denyce, they were mo than a thre hundred: they determynd to be revenged of them Parys for the dispyte done to them: than they defyed themen of Parys, and made eger warre agaynst theym, and to all maner of people of Parys that yssued out, so that they durst nat go out of their gates. Than they of the cytty desyred the provost that he wolde cause parte of the commons to be armee, and to yssue out into the field to fyght with the Englyssemen. The provost agree thereto and sayd howe he wolde go with them hymselfe; so on a day he caused to be armee a xii. hundred and yssued out; and than they herde howe the Englyssemen that made them warre were about saynt Clude: than they departed them into two companyes to the entent that the ennemyes shulde nat sappe them, and poyned to meet toguyder at a certayne place byside saynt Clude; so they went by two wayes: the one partie went all daye about Mount Marter, and coude nat fynde their ennemyes; and
SYR JOHN FROISSART

the provost who had the lesse part about noone returned
and entred into Parys at the gate saynt Martyne and had
done nothyng. The other company who knewe nat of the
provostes returnyng taryed styll in the feldes tyll it was
towards night; thane they retourned homewarde without
array or good order, for they thought than to have no
trouble and so they went weryly by heapes; some bare his
salette in his hande, some on his backe, some drewe their
swerdes after them naked and some in the shethes. They
toke their way to entre into Parys by the gate saynt
Honoure and sodenly as they went they founde thenglyssh-
men in a lowe way; they were a foure hundred well
apoynted. Whan they saw the Frenchmen, they sette on
them and at the first metlyng they bete downe mo than two
hundred; than the Frenchmen fledde and were beate downe
lyke beestes. Ther were slayne in that chase mo than sise
hundred and they were pursuied to the barryers of Parys.
Of this adventure the provost was greatly blamed of the
commons; they sayd howe he had betrayed them. The
next day in the mornynge, the frendes of them that were
slayne yssued out of Parys to seek the deed bodyes to
bury them, and the Englysshmen hadde made a busshement,
and there agayne they slewe and hurt mo than sixscore.
Thus in this myschfe and trouble were they of Parys; they
wyst nat of whom to beware; they were night and day in
great feare: also the kyng of Naverre began to waxe colde
in aydinge of them bycause of the peace that he had sworne
to the duke of Normandy, and also for the out rage that they
of Paris had done to thenglysshe soudyers, wherfore he well
consentted that they shulde be chastysed; also the duke of
Normandy dyd suffre it, bycause the provost of the mar-
chantes had the governyng of the cytie. The provost and
his sect were natte all in suretie, for the commons spake
shamefully of them as they were enfourmed.
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXXXVII

Of the dethe of the provost of the marchauntes of Parys.

THE provost and his sect had among themself dyvers counsaylles secretly, to know howe they shulde mayntene themselfe, for they coude fynde by no meanes any mercy in the duke of Normandy; for he sende worde generally to all the commens of Parys that he wolde kepe with them no lenger peace, without he had deuyverd into his handes xii. of Parys, suche as he wolde chose, to do with them his pleasure; the which thyng gretyly abasshed the provost and his company. Finally, they sawe well that it were better for them to save their lyves, goodes and frendes, ratherr than to be distroyed, and that it were better for theym to slee thane to be slayne. Than secretecly they treated with thenglysshmen, such as made warre agaynst Parys; and they agreed bytwene them that the provost and his sect shulde be at the gate saynt Honoure and at the gate saynt Anthoyne at the houre of mydnight and to lette in the Englysshmen and Naveroyse provyded redy to overcomne the cytie and to dystroy and robbe it clene, excep suche houses as hadde certayne signes lymyted among them, and in all other houses without suche tokens to ake menne, womenne, and chyldren. The same nyght that this shulde have been done, God enspyed certayne burgesses of the cytie, suche as alwayes were of the dukes partie; as Johanne Mayllart and Symonde his brother and dyvers other, who by dyvyne inspyracion, as hit ought to be supposedde, were enformed that Parys shulde be that nyght distroyed. They incontynent armed them and shewel the mater in other places to have more ayde; and a lytell before mydnight they came to the gate saint Anthoyne and there they fouunde the provost of the marchauntes with the kayes of the gates in his handes. Thanne John Mayllart sayde to the provost, callynge hym by his name, Stephyne, what do you here at this houre. The provost answered and sayd, Johanne, what wolde ye; I am here to
SYR JOHN FROISSART

take hede to the town, wherof I have the governynge. By God, sayde John, ye shall natte go so: ye are nat here at
this houre for any good, and that may be sene by the kayes of the deathe of the gates that ye have in your handes; I thynke it be to
betray the towne. Quod the provost, Johanne, ye lyse falsely.
Nay, sayd Johann, Stephyn, thou lyest falsely lyke a traitour;
and therwith strake at hym, and sayd to his company, Slee
the traitours. Thane every man strake at them; the
provost wolde a fledde, but John Mayllart gave him with
an axe on the heed that he fyll downe to the yerthe, and yet
he was his gossyppe, and lefte nat tyll he was slayne and
sise of theym that were there with hym, and the other taken
and putte in prison. Thane people began to styrre in the
stretes, and John Mayllart and they of his acorde went to
the gate saynnt Honoure, and there they founde certayne of
the provostes secte, and there they layde treason to them,
but their excuses avayled nothyng. There were dyvers taken
and send into dyvers places to prison, and suche as wolde
nat be taken were slayn without mercy. The same night
they went and toke dyvers in their beddes, suche as were
culpable of the treason by the confessyon of suche as were
taken. The next day John Mayllart assembled the moost
parte of the commons in the markette hall, and there he
mounted on a stage and shewed generally the cause why
he hadde slayne the provoste of the marchaunte; and ther,
by the counsayle of all the wysmen, all suche as were of the
sect of the provost were juged to the dethe, and so they
were executed by dyvers tourmentes of dethe. Thus done,
John Mayllart, who was thane greatly in the grace of
the commons of Parys and other of his adherentes, sende
Symonde Mayllart and two maisters of the parlayment, sir
Johann Alphons and maister John Pastorell, to the duke of
Normandy, beyng at Charenton. They shewed the duke
all the mater, and desyred hym to come to Parys to aye
do and to counsayle them of the cytie fro thenforth, sayeng,
that all his adversaries were deed. The duke sayde With
ryght a good wyll; and so he came to Parys, and with hym
sir Arnolde Dandrehem, the lorde of Roy and other knyghtes,
and he lodged at Lour.

418
THE CRONYCLE OF

CAP. CLXXXVIII

How the kyng of Navier defied the realme of France, the kyng beyng prisoner in England.

WHAN the kyng of Navier knewe the traueth of the dethe of the provost, his great frende, and another of his sect, he was sore displeased because the provost had ben ever to hym righ favorable and by cause the brunt went that he was chiefe heed of the provostes treason; so all thynge consydered and by the counsell of the lorde Phylip of Naver his brother who was ther with hym at saint Denice they determyned to make warr to the realm of France. Than incontynt he sent his defaynce to the duke of Normandy, to the Parisyenoe, and to the hole body of the realme of Fraunce; and than he departed fro saynt Denyce, and his men overranne the towne at his departyng and robbed it; and also Melynne on the ryver of Sayne where as quene Blanche his sustre was, somtyme wyfe to kyng Phylippe, the whiche lady receyved hym joyfully, and dyde putte all that she had to his pleasure; and the kyng of Naver made of that towne and castell his principall garson, and retayned men of warr, Almayynes, Brabantes, Heynowers, Behaignenoyes, and fro every place where he myght gette them. Men were gladd to serve hym, for he payed larly; he hadde ynothwer with suche money as he had gette by the ayde of the provost of the marchantes of them of Parys and of other townes there aboute. The lorde Phylippe of Naverre went to Maunt, and to Meulencle on the ryver of Sayne and there he made his garsons: every day the kyng of Navers company encreesed. Thus the kyng of Naverre and his men beganne to make warr to the realme of Fraunce and specially to the noble cytie of Parys. They were maisters of the ryvers of Sayne, Marne, and Doyse; these Naveroyse multiplied in suche wyse that they toke perforce the strong towne of Craell, wherby they were maisters of the ryver of Doyse; and also they wanne the strong castell of Hereel, a thre leages fro Amyense; and after they wanne Mau-
consell. These thre fortresses dyde after great disturbaunce to the realme of France; there were a fyftene hundred that overranne all the countrie without any resystence: and anone after they wanne the castell of saynt Valery where they made a strong garsony; and ther they made sir Wyllyam of Bonnemare and John of Segures capitayns, with fyve hundred men, and they over ran the countrye to Depe, to Abbevyle, and to the portes of Crotoy, of Roy, and of Mutterell. Whane the Naveroyse harde of a castell or towne though it were right stronge they made no doutes to get it. Often tymes they wold ryde in a night thrytie leages and come into a countrye wher they had no doute. Thus they stole and wan castells and fortresses in the realme of Fraunce and somtyme toke knyghtes and ladyes in their beddes, and some raunsomed, and fro some toke all that they had and than putte them out of their owne houses. They made capitayne of the towne of Craell the lorde Fondregas of Naver; he gave and graunted save conductes to them that wolde passe to Parys, to Noyon, or fro Noyon to Companyne, or fro thens to Soyssons or to laon and to other places. These save conductes were well worthe to hym whyle he lay at Craell, a hundred thousande frankes: and at the castell of Hereell lay the lorde John of Piqueyny Pycarde, who was a good Naveroyse; his men constrayned sore them of Mountledyer, of Arras, of Peronne and of Amyens and all the countrye of Picardy along the ryver of Some. In the castell of Mauconsell ther were three hundred men of warre and Rabenoyes of Durychars, Franquelyn and Hannekyyn were chiefe capitayns. They overranne the countrye aboute Noyon; all the great townees of the countrye that were nat closed aboute Noyon wer raunsomed to pay every weke a certayne somme of floreyns; and also the abeyes were fayne to do the same or els they had been brende and distroyed they were so cruel on their ennemys. So by these maner of people the landes were voyde and nat laboured, wherby a great darthe rose in the realme of Fraunce.

END OF VOLUME I.
EDINBURGH
T. & A. CONSTABLE
Printers to Her Majesty
1900